

A modern model that unites science and the Bible

We were looking for something complicated while it was simple...

Book number 11 of the work:
The Holy Spirit is a real manifestation in you; without it, no Heaven!

Free reading and more than 120 audiovisual links are available at:
<https://www.dominicpsimon.com>

Dominic P. Simon, {God's child}

12 manifestations of the Holy Spirit for this work
In accordance with the Christian Bible
In accordance with modern sciences

Book #		Here are the titles of the available books
1	Included	Christian baptism is an initiation, it does not open the gates of Heaven
2	Included	Yes, God really exists, proofs by sciences, miracles and healings
3	Included	To go to Heaven, a Christian must take charge of his own life
4	Included	The Holy Spirit is received by the Breath of God's Life through your nostrils
5	Included	Here is how to ask for a healing or a miracle
6	Included	Satan; Lucifer; Gehenna; Sheol; devil; hell; death
7	Included	Concrete explanations of the Bible for all Christians
8	Included	An essential Christian resourcing to find God
9	Included	The Last Judgment is during your human life on earth
10	Included	Resurrection; spiritual body; we must be born again on earth
11	Included	A modern model that unites science and the Bible
12	Not included	Earth is God's garden of culture in order to get his children

You have the right to know the Truth, it is your life after all...

***A modern model that unites
science and the Bible***

We were looking for something complicated while it was simple...

Book number 11 of the work:

The Holy Spirit is a real manifestation in you; without it, no Heaven!

Dominic P. Simon, {God's child}

For more information

To read the complete work for free in digital format.

For up-to-date information.

In order to have access to more than 120 audiovisual Internet links (images and videos) for free.

Please visit the following website:

<https://www.dominicpsimon.com>

Digital repository: Bibliothèque et Archives nationales du Québec (English/French) website ISBN: 978-2-924881-46-0 Publication date: 04-04-2018 Format of this digital book: PDF Availability: consultation of this book is free



This digital book is licensed under the Creative Commons Attribution - NonCommercial – NoDerivatives 4.0 International (CC BY-NC-ND 4.0).

You may not: modify this book in any way or use it for commercial purposes.

However, you can:

- | |
|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none">1) Download this digital book for free and read it;2) Print the pages of this book for your own personal use;3) Share this book by specifying to the recipient, the author's name and website. |
|--|

Table of contents of the book number 11

Foreword	5
0 Structure	5
Introduction.....	11
1 Why is it important to read this book?.....	11
2 Two resource people for this book.....	15
3 The heart of this book	17
4 The truth!.....	25
Search for the Creator	29
5 Is it possible to prove that our Creator (God) exists?.....	29
6 Confirmation of the presence of God.....	41
Christianity.....	51
7 Introduction to Christianity	51
8 To acquire a Christian base.....	55
9 To follow the Way of Christ, is it necessary to be accompanied by a Christian movement?.....	65
10 God and {God's children}.....	77
11 Several kinds of baptisms	97
Testimonials.....	103
12 My steps to get my {birth of the Spirit}.....	103
13 Testimony of my Manifestations and their biblical explanations	113
14 Testimonials of other people.....	133
15 To be born again	135
Psychology notions.....	143
16 Some useful notions of psychology	143
17 To get a healing or a miracle	157
Satan and the devil	161
18 Yes, it is the devil who has mixed us all up!	161
Introduction to the Scriptures	175
19 The Bible	175
Explanation of the Scriptures	185
20 Properly interpret the Scriptures	185
Explanations of the most important texts of the Bible	193
21 The Old Testament, some important texts of Genesis.....	193
22 The Old Testament, some important texts of the prophets	201
23 The New Testament, the Gospel of St-John	211
24 The New Testament, the Gospel of St-Matthew.....	225
Resourcing	243

25 Celebration of the Word	243
26 Prayer	249
27 Additional topics	261
28 The same message of Jesus since 2,000 years	269
The end of time.....	275
29 The Judgments.....	275
A modern model	283
30 The Resurrection.....	283
31 To unite science and the Bible.....	305
32 The modern model	307

Foreword

|0| Structure

|0-A| Take a good start...

A) A complete work.

The name of the work is:

The Holy Spirit is a real manifestation in you; without it, no Heaven!

This work is considerable, it contains 12 major topics and provides tangible and precise answers (to over 48 important Christian questions). Of course, not all readers want to get that much. In order to make the work affordable (**in paper format**) and to meet specific needs of people, there are 12 books available, see the chart in article |0-B|.

The purpose of this work is to seek and find the **Truth**. Where do we come from? What are we doing on earth? Where are we going after our life here?

B) The way the work is built.

In order to achieve the goal, I used a powerful research method (the detective's method). It will be introduced and explained step by step from book # 2, chapter |5|. Subsequently, although the method is still used in the background, I do not demonstrate it. By this method, our preconceived ideas are erased and the truth finally appears! It will scare some people who will close this book very quickly. It will make the others say, "It was so simple!" See article |1-D|.

The work has been written progressively such as a discovery. At first, I give you some well-known information. Subsequently, from chapter to chapter, I purge the information to extract the concepts. Unlike what most people believe, the more we want to reach the basic concepts, bigger the work is.

We all know that science is captivating. I have studied it for a long time, but what I bring you here is far beyond.

C) Each chapter contains articles.

Chapters are numbered. Example: see chapter |2|.

Chapters are made of articles that each having a letter. Example: see article |2-A|.

D) In order to make the reading easy.

In each chapter, articles are in order from the simplest to the most complex. When the essential is reached, there is an indication like the lower one. This indicates that you are ready for the next chapter. However, nothing prevents you to finish the chapter before moving on to the next one.

Here is the indication:

↑ (Essential articles)	They are necessary for understanding the next chapter.
↓ (Optional articles)	They give additional information.

|0-B| A lot of choice for readers

A work but 12 books available according to your needs...

<i>The Holy Spirit is a real manifestation in you; without it, no Heaven!</i>			<i>Chapters</i>
Book number	Title of each book and its 4 main topics		
1	Content →	Christian baptism is an initiation, it does not open the gates of Heaven 1) Do not miss Heaven by ignorance... 2) Here is what every Christian must absolutely know 3) The {birth of the Spirit} is a real manifestation in you. 4) The {memorial of the communion with Christ} is a real manifestation in you.	1 to 4
2	Content of the book 1 More →	Yes, God really exists, proofs by sciences, miracles and healings 1) Why is God hard to find? 2) Look for reality. 3) Put your efforts into proven beliefs. 4) Research and confirmation of the existence of God.	1 to 6
3	Contents of books 1 & 2 More →	To go to Heaven, a Christian must take charge of his own life 1) Knowing the right things on Christianity. 2) The Holy Spirit is not in the hands of religious people but in those of God. 3) How to follow the Way of Christ today? 4) How to acquire a Christian base in a pleasant way?	1 to 11
4	Contents of books 1 to 3 More →	The Holy Spirit is received by the Breath of God's Life through your nostrils 1) What you need to know: baptism; outpouring; birth of the Spirit 2) Here is how the {birth of the Spirit} is done. 3) Here is how the {memorial of the communion with Christ} is done. 4) Who is the Holy Spirit and what does it mean to be born again?	1 to 15
5	Contents of books 1 to 4 More →	Here is how to ask for a healing or a miracle 1) The Lord does wonders to increase our faith. 2) The Lord is always by our side. 3) The Lord can really help you. 4) Better understand oneself in order to live better.	1 to 17
6	Contents of books 1 to 5 More →	Satan; Lucifer; Gehenna; Sheol; devil; hell; death 1) Jews and Greeks did not have the same beliefs. 2) How to differentiate reality from superstitions? 3) Is exorcism something real? 4) Nobody is punished for his choices of life without God, he dies in the ground.	1 to 18
7	Contents of books 1 to 6 More →	Concrete explanations of the Bible for all Christians 1) Symbols and keys to interpret correctly the Bible. 2) Impossible to find logic in the Bible without the help of the Holy Spirit. 3) The essentials of the Old Testament simply explained. 4) The essentials of the New Testament simply explained.	1 to 24
8	Contents of books 1 to 7 More →	An essential Christian resourcing to find God 1) Why does the Blessed Virgin Mary make Apparitions to us? 2) How to pray in order to get what we really need? 3) How to understand the celebration of the Word (the mass)? 4) What is the work of God, Christian movements and Christians?	1 to 28
9	Contents of books 1 to 8 More →	The Last Judgment is during your human life on earth 1) What is the Last Judgment and the Heavenly Court? 2) What does the end of time mean? 3) Who wrote the book of Revelations (Apocalypse)? 4) Christ is the Judge who gives the Holy Spirit or not; it was so simple!	1 to 29
10	Contents of books 1 to 9 More →	Resurrection; spiritual body; we must be born again on earth 1) Yes, there are witnesses of the Resurrection of Christ... 2) What is Heaven or the Kingdom of God?	1 to 30

		3) What is the resurrection and the spiritual body? 4) What does "to be born again" mean?	
11	Contents of books 1 to 10 More →	A modern model that unites science and the Bible 1) What would a modern model show us? 2) Find logic in the Bible. 3) Discoveries of science in the Bible. 4) We were looking for something complicated while it was simple...	1 to 32
12	Contents of books 1 to 11 More →	Earth is God's garden of culture in order to get his children 1) Why did God Create Heaven and Earth? 2) Why are we on Earth? 3) Who are angels? 4) How to explain the title of Immaculate Conception of the Blessed Virgin Mary?	1 to 35

|O-C| Warning, do not burn the steps!

This work has a lot of content, and the texts are synthesized. **So, I recommend you to take your time and to read slowly to assimilate the content.**

If you bought this work for a particular topic, I always suggest you start with chapter |1| and gradually go to the desired topic. **This work is structured like the floors of a building.** You cannot reach the highest chapter without starting with the lowest one. The proper understanding of a chapter depends on the reading of the others.

For those who cannot wait to know more, there is nothing to stop you from taking a quick look at an advanced chapter now and then coming back at the beginning. However, if the information found does not suit you, that does not mean it is not true at all. **This work is built on the truth and not on what the reader wants to see.**

|O-D| This work is born from a need and a discovery that I made at 45 years old

In 2015, I was doing a training (AEC) for buildings to open my small business in the energy efficiency field. I knew that starting a business would be very difficult. Many new companies do not survive more than 2 years.

In order to succeed, I needed help. So, because the only one who always knows what to do is God, I started to look for him.

Then, I found him! To go further in this narrative, see article |12-B|.

This work is the result of this discovery, a gift for all of us!

|O-E| I suggest you a simple way of reading this book

Whether you are a Christian or not and regardless of your level of knowledge, I suggest you start reading without taking it seriously, just for the pleasure of seeing what it brings you.

Then ask yourself if the plan of our Creator could be so simple. Does this book explain all the facts like the assembling of the pieces of a puzzle?

Finally, make the decision to go further or not. I can tell you that the 2 main obstacles for your research will be:

- 1) How did such a simple explanation escape us so easily?
- 2) Although it is written in the Bible. In the course of history, how can some Christian movements have been able to forget that the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is always a real Manifestation in a person and not poetry?

|O-F| Presentation of this book

God created our world. He gave it to us generously and did not ask for anything in return.

Our world is so free that God seems to be absent from it as not to influence us in our choice of life on earth.

This is not to prove the existence of God which represents an insurmountable issue! The real barrier comes from ourselves, our control, our lifestyle, our freedom, and our selfishness. We do not want God to help us. We want to live within his graces on earth, but we do not want his presence. Yet God has given us life and He is Life. Why are we so scared? What could go wrong with him by our side? What could we lose except for our little human misery? Do we want to lose his Life plan for so little?

For us, the supernatural side of God is, of course, madness, I admit it! But what do you risk if you do not take stock of this possibility?

1) If God does not exist, you would continue your path without regrets.

2) On the other hand, if he really exists, you can then choose to live with or without him. The Lord always leaves us free and does not punish anyone for his choice of life.

Notes:

Whatever your beliefs are, I have good news for you. You are at the right place with this book. Christ is here beside you and is reaching out to you.

For those who want something real in their life, I encourage you to take a look at chapters | 6, 13 and 14 |.

Do you know that Christianity is more **a conversion of the heart and a relationship** between a beloved child (you) and his loving Parent (God the Father) than a religion? It is a way of life. It is a family whose big brother (Jesus) came to announce how to live in harmony on earth and the place that he will book for you in the Kingdom of the Father if you follow his Way. The Lord wants children of light, not the ones of darkness. I encourage you to take a look at articles | 7-A and 9-A |.

| 0-G | List of abbreviations and simplified words

OT	The Old Testament of the Bible. It brings together the Scriptures of Judaism. These are the Scriptures before the coming of Jesus Christ on earth. The Old Testament is important because Judaism is the root of Christianity.
NT	The New Testament of the Bible. It brings together the Scriptures of Christianity.
Spirit	The Holy Spirit . This is the Wind or the Breath of Life of God.
Lord	A simple name we use for God.
St-, Ste-	For a saint. St- for a man. Ste- for a woman. In this book, I use the abbreviation St- rather than St. to make reading more visual for you. For example: it is easier to read <u>St-Peter</u> in one word than <u>St. Peter</u> in two words.

| 0-H | References

Note that all excerpts reported here are as they are, no corrections (orthographic, grammatical, and typographical) have been made.

A) The Bible.

It must be known that every good Bible is a translation of one great source which is Hebrew. See article | 3-D |. So, whatever your Christian movement is (Catholic, Orthodox, Anglican, Protestant or other), it does not change the deep meaning. So, you can follow this book with the Bible of your choice. It is intended for everyone and not for any particular Christian movement. **Remember that the 2nd Covenant is between God and human.**

In addition, whatever Bible you are using, chapters and verses are all referenced with the same numbers. It is therefore possible to go from one Bible to another without any problem and to compare what is written.

I give you an example of comparison:

Excerpts*	Bible (New American Standard)	Bible (King James 1611)	Bible (Darby)
St-John 3,5	Jesus answered, "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born of water and the Spirit he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.	Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.	Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except any one be born of water and of Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.
Acts 10,44	While Peter was still speaking these words, the Holy Spirit fell upon all those who were listening to the message.	While Peter yet spake these words, the Holy Ghost fell on all them which heard the word.	While Peter was yet speaking these words the Holy Spirit fell upon all those who were hearing the word.

(*) We can see that the meaning of the verses is preserved even if a few words differ.

The original version of this work was written in French, the excerpts come from the Bible (Jérusalem, 1973 des Éditions du Cerf) of: <http://www.lexilogos.com/bible.htm>

Now for this English version, the excerpts come from the Bible (**New American Standard**) of:

<https://www.biblestudytools.com/nas/>

Or

http://www.lexilogos.com/bible_multilingue.htm

B) References in the Bible.

(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)

(1) One of the two parts of the Bible. Example:

OT	Indicates the Old Testament .
NT	Indicates the New Testament .

(2) One of the books of the Bible. Example:

St-John	Indicates the Gospel of Saint John.

(3) Chapter and verse(s). Example:

5,2	Indicates chapter 5, then verse 2.
5,2-7	Indicates chapter 5, then verses 2 to 7.

(4) The excerpt reported. It can be **complete or not** depending on what is important to read.

|0-I| Suggested audiovisual resources

A) Audiovisual resources (images and videos).

The Internet will be a good tool. You can use Google, YouTube or another search engine. Throughout this book, I provide you with **keywords** to help you find useful resources on the Internet. If you do not have the Internet, just ask for help from a relative or a friend who has it at home.

Internet Keywords	(1)

(1) These are suggested keywords.

B) The website of this work can help you.

As mentioned before, you can do your own research using the keywords suggested.

You can also use the audiovisual resources of the website. There are more than 120 direct **links**.

These resources are not part of the purchase of this book. They are a useful help that I offer for free.

1) Go to: <u>https://www.dominicpsimon.com</u>
2) At the top, click on The resources .
3) There is a file (PDF) to download. Click on it and save it on your computer.
4) The file (PDF) contains a chart with a list of Internet links . Locate the article number of the book, example: 2-B . Click on the Internet link in the chart. The website suggested should open automatically.
Remember that any website belongs to its author and may disappear at any time.

|0-J| To write in the easiest way

For the sole purpose of lightening the writing, the masculine form was used.

In God's eyes, we are all equal: men or women, adults or children, rich or poor.

For the Lord, the important thing is the heart!

Enjoy your reading!

Introduction

| 1 | Why is it important to read this book?

| 1-A | The event

I was baptized Catholic Christian at 3 months old. I had my first communion at 7 years old. I was confirmed at 11 years old. I had my solemn communion at 17 years old.

On the other hand...

A) I had the {**gift of the Holy Spirit**} or my {**birth of the Spirit**} spontaneously at 45 years old.

This happened only when the Lord has judged me ready to receive it.

Here is what St-John writes:

NT	St-John	3,5	Jesus answered, "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born of water (1) and the Spirit (2) he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.

(1) This is the baptism of water. It is also called the baptism of repentance of John the Baptist. It is to renounce evil and take the firm resolve to follow the teachings of Jesus Christ in his life. This is our human responsibility.

(2) Spirit (in Greek language) means: "Breath of God (in English)." Here, it is the Breath of Life of God that gives birth to a human being as a {God's child}. No Christian movement gives it. It is a truly concrete Manifestation that Jesus Christ alone gives when a person is ready to receive it and not before. You just have to work on yourself to get it.

NT	St-John	14,21	"He who has My commandments and keeps them is the one who loves Me; and he who loves Me will be loved by My Father, and I will love him and will disclose Myself to him. " (1)

(1) By the {gift of the Holy Spirit} or the {birth of the Spirit}.

In 2017, I formally confirm that these passages of St-John are accurate!

B) Here is how the {birth of the Spirit} or the {**gift of the Holy Spirit**} occurs concretely into us.

See article | 10-I |:

It always happens by: " <u>the Breath of the Presence of God which is really long in your nostrils.</u> " This Breath is really long because it is the Breath of the Eternal (God). This Breath is wonderful because God shows you his Glory. This Breath completely fills the inside of your body. Afterwards, it gives you the feeling that your chest is dilating a bit because the Breath of Life has filled your heart and you are now a temple of God. This Breath brings you to a new life.			
The 3 Persons of God are in this "Breath that gives the birth from above." To go further, see article 30-G . It is the Glorious Breath of the Eternal . 1) The Eternal is the Father. 2) The Breath is the Holy Spirit. 3) The Glorious is the Son.			

(*) It lasts about 20 minutes. See my testimony in article | 13-D |.

This Breath of Life is in the image of the narrative of the birth of Adam in the book of Genesis.

OT	Genesis	2,7	Then the LORD God formed man of dust from the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living being.

C) The {gift of the Holy Spirit} or the {birth of the Spirit} is mentioned in different ways in the New Testament.

Here is what St-Peter writes:

NT	1st Epistle of St-Peter	1,3	Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who according to His great mercy has caused us to be born again to a living hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead,

(*) Here, it is God (the Spirit) who gives birth to a person again. It is simply saying "to be born of the Spirit" or "to be born from above" like St-John. When St-Peter speaks, he says that his {birth of the Spirit} is already done.

The apostles themselves did not give the {gift of the Holy Spirit} to Christian baptism.

NT	Acts of the Apostles	10,44-47	While Peter was still speaking these words, the Holy Spirit fell upon all those who were listening to the message... Then Peter answered, "Surely no one can refuse the water for these to be baptized who have received the Holy Spirit just as we <i>did</i> , can he?"

(*) Even St-Peter (the leader of all Christian movements) did not have the ability to give the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. At that time, the apostles administered a ritual of water baptism in the name of Jesus. Therefore, even now no Christian movement can do more than that.

Important note:

Anyone who has had a Christian catechesis knows that without the {gift of the Holy Spirit} in him, there is no Heaven at the end of his days! The difficulty is that the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is a real physical Manifestation and not poetry...			

D) 3 months after this event, I had 2 concrete Manifestations of the {memorial of the communion with Christ}.

NT	St-Luke	22,19	And when He had taken <i>some</i> bread <i>and</i> given thanks, He broke it and gave it to them, saying, "This is My body which is given for you; do this in remembrance of Me."
NT	1st Epistle of St-Paul to the Corinthians	11,24-25	and when He had given thanks, He broke it and said, "This is My body, which is for you; do this in remembrance of Me." In the same way <i>He took</i> the cup also after supper, saying, "This cup is the new covenant in My blood; do this, as often as you drink <i>it</i> , in remembrance of Me."

E) Here is how the {memorial of the communion with Christ} occurs.

In short:

The Manifestation begins when the Eucharistic bread is put in our mouth. There is a "special feeling," similar to a fluid (water or air) that starts from our mouth and spreads in our chest and fills with "butterflies."			

(*) It lasts about 3 hours. This feeling is difficult to describe. It is not a feeling of happiness. It does not hurt either. This gives the feeling of a sweet suffering. It is like a mixture of 2 feelings. Jesus **suffered** for **love** for us. See my testimony in article |13-G|.

This Manifestation is not obligatory, it is a "**memorial**" of the sacrifice of Christ on the cross. See also article |3-C|.

<i>So you understand why it is important to read this book!</i>			
This book on Truth is the effort of about 3,000 hours. Unfortunately, I know that people are not ready to read it or even believe it. In any case, the message of the Lord is done! When Jesus spoke of generosity... you have a good example in your hands (this book).			

| 1-B | Right after this event...

Before my {birth of the Spirit} on March 14, 2016, I felt safe. It was simple: all baptized Christians go to the Kingdom of God after their death. You had to be a very bad person not to go there.

After my {birth of the Spirit}, I started to be scared! I had just got what St-John stipulates as a requirement in order to go to the Kingdom of God. I had received the Breath of God right in the nostrils that completely had filled me up. It was the Breath of God (the Life of God) while I was alive (biologically) on earth. All the Gospels concurred. The Epistles of St-Paul concurred. In addition, even the Scriptures of the prophet Ezekiel concurred. All the personal steps I went through to have my {birth of the Spirit} were, without knowing it, in the Gospels! In fact, all the important Scriptures of the Bible matched! What to do? Who would I say that to? Who would believe me? I found the message very heavy to bear. What would I do, a little human being of nothing at all, with such knowledge? **On the other hand, it must be said, a knowledge that is already written in the Bible.** I wondered if Christians really wanted to see it or not. Otherwise, I could not do anything!

| 1-C | What is important

A) The objectives of this book.

1) To testify to the truth even if it will not please everyone.

If a reader does not believe this book, it is because he does not believe in the Gospels either!

2) To take away mysteries and superstitions to better discover Jesus Christ.

3) To help the reader who really wants to get his {birth of the Spirit}. On the other hand, this will require your sincere efforts. You have all your life.

4) To return to the Gospels that are the source of Christianity founded by Jesus and his apostles 2,000 years ago. It is a necessary return to obtain your {birth of the Spirit}.

5) To use our basic knowledge in science (physics, biology, psychology, etc.) to discover the most modern and logical image of the Plan that God has made for us.

On the other hand:

It is not intended to redefine the words and expressions of the many current Christian movements because they are surrounded by many mysteries. These terms belong to them.

It is not intended to change the (way of doing) of any Christian movements or even to invent another one.

B) A gift for all of us.

For the readers who are very disturbed by this book, know that it bothered me well before you. See article |15-F|. On the other hand, you have a "golden chance" because you are alive and you now know the reality. It is up to you to decide what you will do with this message (this book). Nobody is obliged to do anything!

My job is to write and transmit the message of the Lord (this book) and not that you believe me!

| 1-D | This book would be so simple!

In fact, if I only had to summarize it, I think it would not exceed 50 pages. But the real difficulty is not there. The difficulty is: how to pass on a message when we care so much about our little beliefs buried in our head since childhood?

Personally, after my {birth of the Spirit}, it took me at least 4 months of work to clean this all up. Imagine! And I personally experienced the Manifestations. So, I can understand that the reader has trouble taking the news! The

problem is: the more you do not want to see anything, and the more time goes by, but the reality remains there anyway.

Now, to understand the Scriptures effectively, you need a reference. This reference comes from God because it is his Scriptures and not ours. The reference is made by the {gift of the Holy Spirit}.

NT	St-John	14,26	"But the Helper (the Paraclete), the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in My name, He will teach you all things, and bring to your remembrance all that I said to you.

So, in this book, to try to get the message across, I have to unravel all the "human spaghetti" by justifying just about everything I write. It is a colossal job!

We all know that it is easier to fill an empty vase than a full one. At the time, Jesus knew it very well. It is for this reason that he did not try to change religious people of Judaism, but that he taught to simple workers (the 12 apostles).

| 1-E | Forgiveness is necessary

We know that some Christian movements have made their mark in history, but not always in a very pretty way. You only have to look a little bit on the Internet. One of the worst stories is the famous witch hunt of the 1500s. Still not far off, there have been religious communities cloistered for life to forge saints. There was even the absurd idea that if a person gets closer to God than the devil will come at the same time!

What happened so that Christ, who is only goodness, is so badly represented and misunderstood?

Subsequently, in the 1970s, people had to forget everything. Yes, society had moved on. Yes, people forgot the bad stories and forgot the Lord at the same time, who nevertheless died on the cross to allow us to have access to the Life. We went from one extreme to the other. We went from the most rigidity to a total looseness. In Quebec, for most people, only naive people talk about God. Many Christians do not go to mass anymore. Currently, we have reached a Christianity so poor that it is enough to be baptized and not to do too much evil to have access to Heaven.

During the writing of this book, I asked the Lord several times in prayer, "What do I have to do for the Christian movements?" Do you know what his answer was? Nothing at all! Even the Lord does not know what to do with us!

I honestly admit that writing this book has been very difficult. How to tell the truth without offending a bit anyone? How to talk about the Way of conversion without referring a bit to the misinterpretations that some have made of the Epistles of St-Paul? See article | 20-E |. How to give the reader the desire to discover Christ without carrying the burden of the sad stories of the past?

So, I tell you, "We must not forget, we must learn from our mistakes and forgive everyone." Yes, I know it is not human, but it is what the Lord is asking of us.

For all these reasons, the reader must take care of himself. Being part of a Christian movement is very good and I encourage you... However, the most important thing is to stay close to the Lord and his Word (the Gospels).

So in this book I do not refer to any particular Christian movement, but of Christianity as a whole. In order to do this, in article | 3-A |, I distinguish 2 crucial things:

- 1) The Actions that depend only on the Will of God.
- 2) What Christ asks of the movements that claim to represent him.

In this book, the easiest way is to tell you the truth! Then, it is up to you!

|2| Two resource people for this book

|2-A| The contribution of each one

A) Who am I to help anyone?

To reach a goal more easily, you need someone who has reached it himself.

B) Quickly, what are my diplomas?

I have 3 diplomas in science: DEC in mechanical manufacturing; BAC in mechanical engineering; AEC in building.

I have a general education in physics, chemistry, biology and psychology.

I did a Bible study during the writing of this book.

C) What is my experience with God?

I had a dozen Holy Spirit Manifestations: four before this work and eight during its writing.

D) What is my contribution?

I realized that all the general information that I gathered during my Manifestations is already in the Bible. In fact, I did not bring any new general information. I only got the ability to understand the Bible.

On the other hand, I know details that are not in the Bible. Examples: how is done the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, see article |13-D|; what is the original sin, see article |12-C|; how does the communion with the Body and Blood of Christ occur, see article |13-G|; etc.

Finally, my multiple knowledge in science allowed me to take away superstitions and to structure all the information in a logical way in order to obtain this modern book for you.

E) What is the Lord's contribution?

Before my {birth of the Spirit}, I really had no idea of writing anything.

My plan was not to write this book at all, but to open my small business for energy efficiency of buildings.

So, it is obvious to say that the {inspiration} does not come from me.

|2-B| Why would the Lord have inspired me this book?

The Lord chooses who he wants.

On several occasions in my prayer, I asked the Lord to make me a sign if anything in **his book** was wrong. Well, he always responded with a little Manifestation in a very short period of time. That reveals how he wanted that to be in his own way. See articles |4-A| and |13-Q|.

Why was this book not written before? Christian movements have been far too rigid and hermetic until 1960. **So, even if this book had been written before, it would never have reached you!** Do you really believe that I am the only one whose Holy Spirit has come to visit for 2,000 years? See chapter |14|.

I truly believe that the Lord wanted a modern book (logical and clear) adapted to the needs of the 2000s for all of us!

In short, the Lord asks all Christians to return to the foundations of the Gospels. Throughout the centuries, **there has been too much human power play** and we have moved away from what Jesus and his apostles taught us at the beginning (in the early Christianity).

A) Below, here are some Internet keywords to demonstrate the full extent.

Internet Keywords	1) History of Christianity. 2) Branches of Christianity.

B) You can also go to the website of this book for the suggested resources. **See article | 0-1 |**.

This book contains a non-mysterious and understandable summary of the message that the Lord has been addressing to us for 2,000 years!

| 3 | The heart of this book

| 3-A | The problem

In Christianity, one of the major difficulties resides in the expression: "**to receive a sacrament.**"

I have received several of them and I have never felt anything!

So, until I was 45, I thought I could receive "something from God" without feeling it in my body.

Unfortunately, I was wrong! See article | 1-A |.

We must know that God gives us absolutely nothing without a tangible Manifestation that we can really feel in our body.

A) Here is the pure truth.

What Christians call the "reception of the Holy Spirit" or the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is not poetry, but a **real and concrete Manifestation** in a person. If a person did not feel anything, it was because he did not receive a thing.

The Holy Spirit is the 3rd Person of the Holy Trinity of God. In reality, we do not receive the Holy Spirit, but "**the Holy Spirit comes to Visit us**" for a short period of time and he leaves. During his short Visit, he can make different gifts or messages. The greatest gift is that of the {birth of the Spirit} which makes born a person as a {God's child}.

When I talk about feeling the presence of the Holy Spirit, I am not talking about a little something that we do not really remember afterwards.

The {birth of the Spirit} lasts about 20 minutes, but its intense effect lasts 3 days and it is only once in a lifetime. See article | 13-D |.

The {memorial of the communion with Christ} lasts 3 hours. I have received two of them: once for the {communion with the Body of Christ} and once for the {communion with the Blood of Christ}. This happened about three months after my {birth of the Spirit}. See article | 13-G |.

These are sensations apart from what a human is used to feel...

So, we remember it for life!

B) In this book, I have no choice but to distinguish 2 things of great importance.

1) Here are some Actions that depend only on the Will of God (no ritual can do anything about it)
Through the Holy Spirit, God gives the tangible Manifestation of the {birth of the Spirit}. The person becomes a {God's child} really. This is done spontaneously to the Will of God alone. See article 13-D .
Through the Holy Spirit, God gives the tangible Manifestation of the {memorial of the communion with Christ}. I got it about 3 months after my {birth of the Spirit}. See articles 1-A, 3-C and 13-G .
Through the Holy Spirit, God makes different tangible actions adapted to the human condition on earth. Whether it is psychological help, gifts, healings, miracles, etc. See article 10-N .

It is important to understand that no Christian movement is more important than another in the eyes of its leader, Christ.

2) Here is what Christ asks of each movement that claims to represent him
It must put its interests aside in order to serve Christ.
It must announce the texts of the Bible as faithfully as possible.
It must manage its organization in order to offer a support service in respect of its followers.
Like the apostles of Jesus, it must give a Christian baptism of initiation.
It must practice the values of Christ and set an example: kindness, forgiveness, charity, humility, etc.
It must not pretend to hold power over the Actions of God, because it would be abusing the followers and it would be a risk of misguidance away from the Christ's Way.
It must make its followers understand the difference between a ritual and an action of God. A ritual is a necessary human ceremony to prepare someone to be ready internally for the day of the Coming of the Holy Spirit. This Visit will be done only when a follower is ready and at the moment when God has decided it. Each follower therefore has sincere efforts to make on the Way of Christ to receive this precious Visit.

| 3-B | Rituals and sacraments

Christians often take their desires for realities of God. But God also has a say in it! He always does it with a tangible Manifestation. If God does not say yes, then it is not accepted. Is there anything complicated to understand in this?

I give you a comparison:

1) If 2 people get involved in a marriage, it concerns them both. So, they must each express their approval with a **firm yes**.

2) If someone and God get involved in the 2nd Covenant, this person gives his approval and then fulfills his commitment in front of Him. Subsequently, to seal this commitment, God finally gives his approval. As I said, "It is not yes until God has said yes by a tangible Manifestation."

On the other hand, it is true that you can get a Manifestation of the Holy Spirit during a sacrament. I had 2 during the Eucharist at mass. See article |13-G|. This Manifestation then makes the sacrament really effective, because God Himself approved it. But before obtaining his approval, a Christian is only preparing himself internally by rituals and it is quite legitimate and necessary. A human remains a human. He needs to touch and see in order to understand. Every Christian must take concrete actions in accordance with his faith and then internalize them deep inside. The Lord only reads our heart.

So, in this book, I do not deal with rituals or sacraments administered by Christian movements. The way people prepare themselves belongs to them. In reality, God does and gives what he wants when he wants and not what human wants. When God gives you something, he always Manifests it to you.

| 3-C | A first step in the definition of terms (words and expressions) for this book

As stated in article | 1-C |, this book is not intended to redefine the terms of many current Christian movements, because they are surrounded by many mysteries.

→ On the other hand, considering articles | 3-A and 3-B |, I do not have the choice to define terms only for this book.

A) Here is general terms surrounding Christian movements.

It is important to understand that this book makes no distinction between all Christian movements that exist (Catholic, Orthodox, Anglican, Protestant, other), whatever the importance that each one is giving to itself. It is clearly stated in the New Testament that every Christian must have one leader who is Christ and that is all. Together, they should only form one movement.

What the human does by himself, see article | 3-A | :

Words and expressions	The definition in this book
A Christian movement	An organization or community of Christians with the same doctrine and rituals.
A church	A building or room used by a Christian movement.
A Christian baptism	An initiation ritual to enter the Christian movement. It has the strength of the water baptism of John the Baptist (St-John: 1,26). After the day of Pentecost, the apostles gave a baptism of water in the name of Jesus, so no religious person does better even now.
A Christian	A person who has received a Christian baptism from his movement.
A religious person	A person who has a function in a religious movement.

B) Here is the limit separating the human action and the Action of God.

This limit is indicated by braces { }.

Without braces { }, the terms used have a common sense for people or even currently defined throughout Christianity.

With braces { }, the terms used have a specific meaning related to the {birth of the Spirit}. See **(St-John: 3,5 and 1,33)**.

When you see an expression with braces { }, you must refer only to the definition I give here and nothing else or you will get lost. There is no equivalence elsewhere in another author's book.

C) Here are the specific terms for the Action of God.

What God only does, see article | 3-A | :

Words and expressions	The definition in this book
The {birth of the Spirit}	This is a tangible Manifestation of the Holy Spirit in a person (St-John: 3,5 and 1,33) . This Manifestation is so important that the person will remember it for life. See articles 1-A and 10-I for the general definition. See article 13-D for my testimony. See article 13-O for the confirmation of the Lord.
A {God's child}	A person who has had his {birth of the Spirit}.
The {assembly of God's children}	Its organization is in the hands of God only and not on earth.
The {inspiration}	This is the inspiration of the Holy Spirit for this book.
The {memorial of the communion with Christ}	This is a tangible Manifestation of the Holy Spirit in a person (St-Luke: 22,19) . See articles 1-A and 13-G . <u>It is not obligatory</u> . It is the "memorial" of Christ's sacrifice on the cross. This Manifestation is only available for Christian movements that practice Eucharistic communion.

|3-D| Words in the Bible that pose problems of meaning.

- ° Spirit;
- ° Soul;
- ° Heart.

Generally in the Bible, each of these 3 words is confusing. They have too many different meanings, so that most people end up getting a completely abstract idea of these 3 words. Then, the Bible becomes difficult to read, even incomprehensible.

A) Generally, in the head of today's Christian.

The spirit is (the human thought or the mind). The soul is a ghost floating at the end of our life on earth. The heart is the organ that pumps blood or it refers to the center of our feelings.

B) In reality.

All of this is an inevitable problem of translation and interpretation throughout history. In a simple way, there are 3 levels to the Scriptures. The first level is composed of ancient manuscripts written in Hebrew. Very few people have access to these manuscripts dated 2,000 years and over. Subsequently, the 2nd level is a translation from Hebrew, these are the Greek Bible and the Latin Bible. For example, in the narrative of the Garden of Eden, the apple that Eve ate is a bad translation that comes from the Latin Bible. In reality, Eve did not "eat an apple," but Eve was "delighted with the fruit of evil" or "she loved doing evil." Subsequently, the 3rd level gives Bibles translated into other languages from all that is available, but whose **source is still Hebrew**. It is for this reason that there is no great difference in meaning between several translations of the Bible. See the chart of article |O-H|. There are only a few secondary words that are changing. You can safely use any internationally recognized Bible.

On the other hand, due to the influence of cultures throughout history, we must pay attention to words and expressions.

C) The different senses.

In a very general way, the 3 words (spirit, soul and heart) have the meaning of the "**interior of an individual**."

1) Heart.

The word "heart" is the easiest to understand. For the Jews like Jesus, it was the inside of the human, where his deep feelings reside and where a person shapes his intentions (his good or bad intentions).

2) Soul.

For the Jews like Jesus, the "soul" is the "life principle of the human." It is his breath (of biological life) as **deadly** as his human body. The word "soul" is the translation of the word "**nephesh**."

In the Bible, it can also be a deep feeling in the human. As in this expression: "I am wounded to the bottom of my soul" which means "I am hurt deeply in my feelings."

3) Spirit.

For this word, the most used meaning in the Bible is to "become aware" of something like the expression "open your mind to new ideas." Also, this word often has the sense of the atmosphere of a feeling as in the expression: "we are in the spirit of the holidays."

On the other hand, this word can sometimes refer to God and his form of Life. God is described as a **Spirit** that means Wind or Breath. God usually Presents Himself on earth as a Wind or a Breath. This is because he is qualified as: immaterial, free, alive, invisible and eternal. The word "spirit" is a translation of the word "**pneuma**."

Sometimes in the Bible, there are "unclean spirits" who are actually diseases.

D) In the Bible, what meaning to use?

We must use the complete idea of the chapter and not only the verse to understand its true meaning.

To help you, I give you an explanation of the most important passages of the Bible in chapters | 21 to 24 |.

Anyone can make a simple interpretation of the Scriptures. On the other hand, we need our {birth of the Spirit} to do a precise interpretation. This explains why the Epistles of St-Paul have been so badly used by some Christian movements in the past and whose religious people have suffered so much unnecessarily. See article | 20-E |.

E) Beware of the misconception of the immortal soul...

As I mentioned earlier, for the Jews like Jesus, the "soul" is the "life principle of the human" which is mortal. On the other hand, for the Greeks (the Gentiles), the "soul" was also seen as the "principle of life of the human, but this time they believed immortal and came out of a person after his death as a ghost (**it is a myth**).

F) What animates the human being?

A crucial question: is the principle of life (the support) the body or the soul?

1) The old point of view of the Greeks:

The soul (1)	The human body	At the death...
The psyche or mind (thought). The principle of life or support. Which drives the body.	It is only an envelope .	The soul becomes a ghost that floats everywhere. Everything is possible including reincarnation.

(1) The soul was seen as immortal by the Greeks (it is a myth).

The human body was seen as an envelope. The soul was the "principle of life" enclosed in this envelope. In short, the soul was the support of life that animated the envelope of the human body. The soul was seen immortal.

Although this concept may seem trivial, it has a terrifying impact! There may be ghosts (souls in pain) that float everywhere. The envelope of a human (his body) can be monopolized or possessed by a bad entity (a demon). The soul can even be reincarnated in another body. This way of thinking is still used by many religions today.

2) The old point of view of the Jews:

The soul	The human body	At the death...
The human breath given by God to Adam and Eve. The principle of life or support. Which drives the body.	He is pulled out of the ground and returns there after its death (dust).	The soul falls asleep in the abode of the dead (Sheol).

(1) For the Jews, the soul was seen as **the breath in the nostrils** of a person. This breath was given by God for a maximum of 120 years. After the human life, **the soul fell asleep** in the abode of the dead (Sheol).

(2) The Sheol had 4 depths. Here to simplify, I give only 2 of them.

(3) The Sheol "from above" was the place where bodies decomposed and people were forgotten. We could say that in this place, the person no longer existed, but that he remained a "**remembrance**" for the Eternal (God) having the power to bring him back to life by the resurrection at the Last Judgment (the end of time). The Jews believed that they will resurrect with a perfect human body on earth when God would remove all evil.

(4) The Sheol "the deepest part" was the total abyss where Satan and his demons remain forever. For them there was no possibility of returning to God.

(5) For St-Paul, the resurrection is not with a human body, but with a spiritual body in Heaven.

(6) Since St-Paul taught the Greeks, he often uses the word "psyche" instead of the word "soul."

Moreover, the human body could be possessed by a demon, this explained the diseases of the time.

Note:

This way of thinking gives a good help to understanding the Gospels.
Chapter |35| explains the {birth of the Spirit} using this old point of view of the Jews.

I give you here a small chart summarizing the general concepts defined mainly by St-Paul:

The 2 forms of life		The principle of life	The envelope
1st form of life	The mortal life on earth (An autonomous life, not united to God)	The soul or the psyche (1st breath, mortal)	The human body The psychic body (1)
2nd form of Life	Life in Heaven (A united Life at the Eternal Source, God)	The Spirit (2nd Breath, Eternal)	The Spiritual Body (2) (Unveiled at the end of time)

(1) St-Paul calls "the psychic man or the **natural** man," the person who does not have his {birth of the Spirit}. He only has the first breath.

(2) St-Paul calls "the spiritual man," the person who has had his {birth of the Spirit}. He got the 2nd Breath.

3) A modern point of view (since the 1900s):

Consciousness (1)	The human body (including the brain)	At the death...
The mind	The support of biological life	The consciousness is extinguished with the death of the body.

(1) Consciousness is the fruit of the activity of the body including the brain.

In science, we know that the human body is the support of life. Our consciousness is the result of the brain activity of our brain which is an integral part of our body. If the body dies, consciousness dies too.

Note:

Since this book is modern, **this point of view** will be applied to the Bible in order to explain the most mysteries as possible. We will even make unexpected small discoveries in chapter |30|.

|3-E| A last step in the definition of terms

After the finalization of article |3-D|, we can now finalize the definitions started in article |3-C|.

Words and expressions	The definition in this book
Heart	It is the deep center of human feelings.
Consciousness	It is our thought and what we feel internally.
Human body	Our body is biological and deadly.
Soul	This is the mortal life principle of the human, this is his human breath. **It should be noted that the soul was falsely seen as immortal by the Greeks and that it makes the New Testament difficult to interpret sometimes.
The life (with a tiny letter)	It is the biological and mortal human activity.
The Life (with a capital letter)	Only God can communicate this Life because he is the Eternal.
Holy or Saint	The qualifier of God. He is without any evil.
God Yahweh The LORD	The Creator. He is the Eternal . He is immaterial and timeless. He is revealed in 3 Persons. The Father being the <u>Will</u> . The Son being the <u>Word</u> . The Holy Spirit being the <u>Breath</u> .
The Son; the Word; the Truth.	Names given to Jesus Christ in the Bible and in this book.
The Holy Spirit The Spirit	With a capital letter. It is the Reserved Name of the <u>3rd Person</u> of God. He manifests himself mainly by a Breath or a Wind. He is the Breath of Life of God, see chapter 10 . He is also called the Helper (the Paraclete), this means Intercessor. Sometimes he is called the Spirit of truth.
The {gift of the Holy Spirit}	It is always a real and concrete Manifestation.

	This is the most general term used in the Bible for the promise of God the Father to send the Intercessor (the Helper, the Paraclete) whom we call the Holy Spirit. We see it mainly in the narrative of Pentecost at the beginning of the book of Acts of the Apostles. It is a term very poorly understood in Christianity. It will be analyzed for the first time in article 8-F . In reality, the Holy Spirit is the Person who does Actions, which means giving <u>gifts</u> or <u>messages</u> to the human being. In short, the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is not the 3rd Person of God, but rather an Action of the 3rd Person. It is an anointing as mentioned in (1st Epistle of St-John: 2,27). Here, the following 5 terms are equivalent (synonyms): 1) The {gift of the Holy Spirit}. 2) The reception of the Holy Spirit. 3) The spiritual anointing. 4) The baptism in the Spirit. 5) On the other hand, the term that best describes the (tangible of this Action) is the {birth of the Spirit}.
The {spiritual body}	This advanced term was introduced by St-Paul. This term will only be addressed in chapter 30 .
The Kingdom of God	It is the World that God created by his Absolute Knowledge and where evil does not exist. The beings live there by the Breath of Life of God.
Glorify	This verb means to render God (the Eternal). See chapter 32 .
The Glory of God	It is the unimaginable feeling of joy and happiness of being in the Presence of God. See article 13-D .
Terms with a "capital Letter"	They are in direct connection with God, examples: A name giving the <u>essence</u> of God → the Eternal; the Consciousness; the Absolute Knowledge; etc. The <u>supernatural</u> of God → a Manifestation; an Apparition; a Vision; etc.

Generalities:

Words and expressions	The definition in this book	The definition of excerpts from the Bible
Earth (Scientifically speaking)	Our pretty blue planet.	-----
The earth (Generally speaking)	Our world. The land, the ground.	Our world. The land, the ground.
Heaven	The Kingdom of God.	The Kingdom of God.
The heavens or the heaven	The Kingdom of God. Or... The blue space above our heads forming a vault (sky).	The Kingdom of God. Or... The blue space above our heads forming a vault (sky).
Sky	The blue space above our heads forming a vault.	The blue space above our heads forming a vault. Or... (Very rarely) the Kingdom of God.

|3-F| How to get his {birth of the Spirit}?

This is not done by "snapping fingers," it is a work on yourself.

You must fulfill all the promises of your Christian baptism in your life, unfortunately, which very few Christians do.

Every Christian must read the Gospels and learn them. Subsequently, he must begin a personal conversion in his life. At this point, a simple understanding of the Gospels is satisfactory. Becoming a good, honest person is nothing really mysterious!

The most difficult step to reach is the "gift of truly believing in God." It is only God who offers it to us when we look for Him ardently. The majority of Christians "**think** they believe in God," but in reality they do not believe enough.

To make your life easier, I give you the steps to follow in chapter |12|.

For those who want to understand the mysteries of the Gospels, the major difficulty resides in the vagueness of words. We need our {birth of the Spirit} for a precise interpretation. In short, it is the Holy Spirit who makes the **Word alive**.

This book helps you discover the reality of the Scriptures.

|4| The truth!

In all history of humanity, the truth has always disturbed many people.

So, this book will surely be much criticized although it is {inspired}.

If a reader does not believe this book, it is because he does not believe in the Gospels either!

|4-A| Work for the Truth

A) What warrant this book is true?

As a follow-up to article |2-B|.

I had my {birth of the Spirit} on March 14, 2016, when I did not even know it existed! Then, I had 3 other Manifestations related to my {birth of the Spirit} in the next 3 months. See chapter |13|.

Subsequently, I had 8 additional Holy Spirit Manifestations dedicated solely to the {inspiration} of this book. They always arrived at the right time during the writing. So if the Lord had not wanted me to write for him, he would not have given me anything more.

NT	St-John	16,13	"But when He, the Spirit of truth (1), comes, He will guide you into all the truth; for He will not speak on His own initiative, but whatever He hears, He will speak; and He will disclose to you what is to come.

(1) This is another Name for the Holy Spirit.

I understood the meaning of my Manifestations only by researching answers in the Bible. So, do you know what that entails? The twelve Manifestations inscribed in this work confirm the Scriptures of the Bible of 2,000 years ago! In addition, did you know that the Bible confirms itself? The ancient prophets announce the coming of the new prophets well over a hundred years in advance. For this, we must see in the future (it is a miracle).

Now for skeptics...

You say to yourself, "I wish I had proof of all that." Okay, what do you want? A miracle! So, the Lord gives you your miracle, but you will have to work to see it. It is in front of you: read his book carefully; do your research; study it well and you will see that it is tightly knit like a web; it is referenced from everywhere. The important texts of the Bible are simply explained and united to the foundations of modern science. It is impossible humanly, because we need a reference that we do not naturally have on earth to obtain this result.

NT	St-Mark	16,14	Afterward He appeared to the eleven themselves as they were reclining <i>at the table</i> ; and He reproached them for their unbelief and hardness of heart, because they had not believed those who had seen Him after He had risen.

Finally...

I have always had a clean, settled life and my health is very good.

In any case, I could have written nothing at all, because I already had my {birth of the Spirit}.

B) Why did I write this book?

I wrote it to make a gift to the Lord.

On the other hand, if I had not done so, it would have been irresponsible for me to abandon other Christians without warning them of the reality.

C) Why is the {birth of the Spirit} or the {gift of the Holy Spirit} not really known?

Yet this is very well indicated in the Scriptures and repeatedly if a person pays attention. Here are 2 examples, but there are dozens of them.

NT	St-John	3,5	Jesus answered, "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born of water and the Spirit he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.
		14,21	"He who has My commandments and keeps them is the one who loves Me; and he who loves Me will be loved by My Father, and I will love him and will disclose Myself to him. "

(*) It is the Manifestation of the {gift of the Holy Spirit} or the {birth of the Spirit}.

1) This is mainly because many religious people do not have it and think they believe in God, but their level of belief is not high enough. So the Scriptures are misinterpreted.

I give you a concrete example:

In the winter of 2017, during a mass whose homily was about (St-John: 14,21) above. Here are the facts: 1) The message of the religious person was, "to love God is to adore him and to be in admiration in front of his cross." 2) The following verse, though read, has not been commented, "... and I will love him and will disclose Myself to him." 3) No Christian in the church made the slightest comment. Yet this verse is very clear with words without any mystery. In short, there are 3 things: 1) The one who loves God makes what is written in the Gospels (his Word, his commandments). 2) He who makes his Word, the Son of God loves him and manifests himself to him. 3) How is the manifestation of God done? Yes, the {gift of the Holy Spirit}.			

2) It must surely have a link with the precious "**human power.**"

NT	St-Matthew	18,3	and said, "Truly I say to you, unless you are converted and become like children, you will not enter the kingdom of heaven.

(*) Here, Jesus talks about having faith, kindness and humility.

3) It is probably because very few Christians get it to testify and others do not want to hear.

NT	St-Matthew	7,13-14	"Enter through the narrow gate; for the gate is wide and the way is broad that leads to destruction, and there are many who enter through it. "For the gate is small and the way is narrow that leads to life, and there are few who find it.

In this excerpt, what does it mean, "... there are few who find it?" It is hard to say. I think that in Quebec, today, it should not exceed more than 1 in 1,000 Christians and I am very optimistic...

It must be understood that the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is a very great reward. As I was very badly informed, if I had not been a good person basically and if I had not known misery in my life, I would not have gotten it.

However, you are informed now. So, that will only depend on you. If a person wants to get it, I advise him not to wait!

I even think that Christians, who have little theological knowledge, are better off than religious people.

I give you a concrete example:

In the spring of 2017, during a mass. I saw an 80-year-old religious person who taught Christianity all his life. He does not even know that the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is a real Manifestation! He believes so much that he is in the right direction that he does not want to ask any more questions! Worse, during a mass, he mentioned that his Christian movement has separated from the Gospels in the 300s when Christianity has socialized. I think that a little look back in his Bible would help him, because here is what St-Paul (a great founder) writes:			
NT	St-Paul, Epistle to the Galatians	1,9	As we have said before, so I say again now, if any man is preaching to you a gospel contrary to what you received, he is to be accursed! (1)

(1) It means: worthless, which is **excluded** from Christ.

D) What can explain why we lost this vital information?

During the time of the early Christian communities founded by the apostles, it is obvious that Christians knew it and worked to get it concretely. For this reason, despite the Roman persecution, they have kept their faith. Personally, I can assure you that with my {birth of the Spirit} I am unable to deny God!

I think you already know that the human being is not an "angel." About 30 years after the beginning of Christianity, St-Paul wrote that some Christians were not already serving the interests of Christ.

NT	St-Paul, Epistle to the Philippians	1,18	What then? Only that in every way, whether in pretense (1) or in truth, Christ is proclaimed; and in this I rejoice. Yes, and I will rejoice,

(1) With false motives.

After the legalization of Christianity by the emperor Constantine in 313, the kingship took all the place. I can assure you that without a good dose of humility, it is impossible to receive the Holy Spirit Visit.

Then, Christianity has spread, socialized, and somewhat commercialized. In fact, God requires much more a **conversion of the heart and a relationship** than a religion to do the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. In short, God wants us to be part of his **family** already on earth.

Finally, I do not believe that this vital piece of information is lost because it is written in many places in the Scriptures. The words used are: "I will disclose Myself to him"; "what you see and hear"; "the Spirit fell on them"; "they were filled with the Holy Spirit"; etc. The best explanation I have is that Christians do not believe enough in God to realize that the Scriptures are real and not poetry!

E) But now, why is it so difficult to recognize that the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is essential?

1) Think carefully what this **truth** would imply for all of Christianity!

Of course, silence has always been the best **human solution**...

Here is what St-Paul wrote:

NT	St-Paul, Epistle to the Galatians	1,10	For am I now seeking the favor of men, or of God? Or am I striving to please men? If I were still trying to please men, I would not be a bond-servant of Christ.

(*) Yet another good reason to write this book.

2) Who is not scared to face this reality?

Like me, I got it, so it does not scare me to talk about it. But for a Christian who has not gotten it yet, it can be very disturbing, enough to quickly close this book by denying everything without going further in his research.

3) On the other hand, I have good news for you.

You are lucky to know it now and it is never too late to receive your {birth of the Spirit} before the end of your life. After it will be too late!

|4-B| Here is simply the reality

Our world is so free that God seems to be absent from it as not to influence us in our choice of life on earth. It is up to us to discover him or not. It depends only on our efforts.

Each person has a choice to make:

1) Choose to follow your own personal path.

Then, to finish in the ground with nothing more. There is no punishment, the consciousness is simply extinguished at the human's death and it is over. Did you know that the word "hell" comes from the Latin "infermus" which means "in the ground?" So, you will never know the great joy of living in the Glory (Presence) of God. See article 13-D .

2) Choose God in your life, get your {birth of the Spirit} and go to Heaven after your earthly life.

→ <i>If it is your choice, I offer you help in the next chapters.</i>

Search for the Creator

|5| Is it possible to prove that our Creator (God) exists?

A) An important goal.

I begin this chapter |5| with the search for God. If God does not exist, then why be interested in him? On the other hand, if he exists, and there, we will be able to choose whether to follow him or not. In reality, we always have the choice in front of him and nobody is punished for his choice.

Moreover, I say to you, no one can have his {birth of the Spirit} if he does not firmly believe in God. How much will it be necessary to believe? **As much as you have a nose in your face. Yes, only that!** It is not by simply reading this book quickly that you will believe enough in God. You must make an inner effort. In reality, it is through your effort that God will first believe in your approach. Afterwards, he will allow you to believe in him. This is not a joke! No one can believe in God without his permission. That is why, God is so hard to find. To go further, see article |10-L|.

As I said in article |0-E|, I suggest you start reading this book without taking it seriously. Read it only out of curiosity and have fun. Afterwards, you will decide what you want to do.

B) Basic plan of the research.

- ° We are going to look over a bit of history in article |5-A|;
- ° We will use a powerful method to do our research, the detective's method in article |5-C|;
- ° Finally, we will conclude our research in article |5-P|.

Note:

For readers who are not interested in science at all, skip to article |5-P|. You will only miss the demonstration to reach the conclusion. At the very beginning, it was by working on this demonstration that I began to truly believe in God. So, although it is boring for some, it is very effective.

|5-A| Let's look over a bit of history...

In all eras, humans thought there was one or more gods. Greek mythology had several deities. Ancient Egypt also had several deities. On the other hand, the Hebrew people (of Abraham) had only one divinity. Finally, Christian history has the same divinity as the Hebrew people.

Now, let's take a leap back in time, in the 1900s.

Before 1950, we know that some Christian movements were very powerful. Later, around 1960, people began to be less and less religious and practicing. But what happened? We know that the rapid rise of technology has played a big role. People's lives have changed a lot: from common use of horses (1930s); to televisions (1950s); to personal computers (1980s); and to the Internet (1990s). Today, science and technology are present in our lives. We are in a society where we do not miss anything: health care; social services; employment insurance; and so on. Of course, if a person has everything, then why ask God for things?

Moreover, in the 1800s, the science of physics made a very important hypothesis that was very profitable. I am saying a hypothesis and not something grounded. It made the assumption that every phenomenon has a logical explanation that stems from measurable laws in nature. If we repeat an experiment several times, we will always have the same result. Example: if we throw a ball in the air, it will always end up falling to the ground. We call this the force of gravity and there is a law in mathematical form that gives the value of the force on the ball to the ground. This hypothesis worked so well that scientists were no longer scared to touch anything, even to look at how a human works inside. Superstitions were demolished one by one.

In the years (1900 to 1950), looking into the human head, scientists did not find "a spirit or even a soul" that floats like light or steam. However, they found a brain that looks like gelatin. Currently, we know that our brain is made up

of about 100 billion interconnected neurons as a gigantic communication network. Communication is made mainly through nerve impulses (small electrical currents). Communication is also made chemically by some 50 hormones secreted by glands. We know that hormones circulate in the bloodstream throughout the body to exchange messages. The human body is a pure wonder that greatly exceeds any imagination of modern science.

Also in the 1900s, physicists watched the space carefully with telescopes. They saw that it was huge with billions of stars. All this did not seem to move at all. Then, they thought with confidence that the universe was fixed. So the universe did not move, everything was frozen. The form of the universe remained the same. Even Albert Einstein (physicist) was caught in the idea that the universe was fixed. All of this has had a great impact on people's belief in God. The Bible said that everything was created by God and there, physicists said that the universe was frozen.

Internet Keywords	Einstein's Biggest Blunder

We understand very well the principle that if everything is fixed, there is no beginning so there is no Creation! The universe was then eternal in itself. If there is no beginning, there is no end and therefore there is no time between the two. Physicists even wondered if the time was real or if it was just a human invention.

Finally, we have seen that the search for "spirits or souls" had given nothing and the search for Creation had not given anything either. Then, the conclusion was easy to make, God the Creator did not exist either.

That is it, the science and technology of the early 1900s made God disappear. On the other hand, it was necessary to explain how scientifically life had appeared on Earth. The idea was very simple, by chance or probability! I give you an example: you are in front of a pocket game that is 30 meters (100 feet) away from you. The chance that you throw a pocket in one of the holes at this distance is practically impossible, you might say! On the other hand, if you have millions of pockets and you have eternity to succeed, chances are that one day a pocket will fall into a hole. The scientists' idea was the same. Earth and life on it are so unlikely, but the universe is so big and eternal, so there is a possibility that all this could happen by chance. That is it, it was settled! There is no God at all. We, humans, were the children of chance on a lost planet somewhere in an infinite and eternal universe.

This thought that (God does not exist) was propagated by scientists until the 1980s. This served their causes well and assured them, of course, a lot of work. God the Creator became useless and we, humans, were orphaned and lost. So, we absolutely needed science not to fall into the void.

Without knowing it, science and technology, having the answer to everything, became the new gods of our society!

The first time I had chemistry and physics classes at school, I was 17 years old. My teachers told me that it was impossible to prove that God exists. I was so convinced that even during my studies in science at university (between 1991 and 1995), I did not even think about trying.

Subsequently in 2002, while I was working on a wind turbine project (in Gaspésie), I watched a strange program on television. Two renowned physicists (one from Montreal and one from New York) discussed unexplained phenomena. They said, "Discoveries of the last 5 years force us to say that everything is possible even in the most unlikely ideas!" They said that the global scientific community then decided to shut up so as not to lose their credibility in front of people. All this had intrigued me. However, the information was too imprecise to go further. I did not start research until October 2015.

| 5-B | To look for

While we are looking for God, do you know that he is watching us? In fact, we do not find God, but it is God who wants us to look for him in our lives. I know that for sure. On the other hand, I am sure the reader wants proof and that is fine, so let's continue.

| 5-C | An effective method of finding

I will use the detective's method. It is a simple and effective method that requires only to be sincere. So you absolutely must not burn any of the steps. My job is to guide you in the method. You, your job is to let you drive. On the other hand, I encourage you to check what I am doing by your own research.

Since the majority of readers do not have a multiple background (physics, biology, psychology, theology), I will give the simplest possible information as I go along.

Why do we need a method? It is because a human being is always advancing step by step.

| 5-D | Can we play detective?

Of course, our Creator likes it and is waiting for us. He even wants us to look for him ardently. Is it difficult to find him? Yes, because we are all born blind of God. Humanly, we only see what is on earth, nothing more. We see in a human way. In addition, in a psychological way, we only see what we want to see. This is to ensure that we stay in our personal comfort zone.

Do you know that no one can truly believe in God if he does not allow it? Here is the problem! To truly believe in God is not human at all. It is a gift from God himself.

So, how can we believe that he really exists? The answer is simple. We must work hard to find him so that God can trust us. This approach must be sincere, because God knows our (inner self) more than ourselves. God loves truth and hates falsehood. After your sustained efforts, when God will be convinced, I am sure he will give you his first "gift" which is to truly believe. To show you that it is God who makes this "gift," here is what Jesus says:

NT	St-Matthew	16,16-17	Simon Peter answered, "You are the Christ, the Son of the living God." And Jesus said to him, "Blessed are you, Simon Barjona, because flesh and blood (1) did not reveal <i>this</i> to you, but My Father (2) who is in heaven.

(1) Here, Jesus says that the human being is only biological. This is also what modern science has discovered.

(2) Here, Jesus says that only God the Father allows the gift of truly believing in him.

| 5-E | I am making you a detective.

Here, I am asking you to put on a "detective hat."

You must now take your role very seriously. Repeat that you are a detective several times in a row if that can help you.

Like any good detective, the only way to find the truth is to put your own personal interests aside. **The discovery of the truth is what matters most.**

To make you a detective, I am going to equip you with a formidable search method. This method has proven its worth since the technological thrust around us is obvious and irrefutable.

|5-F| Here are the steps of the detective's method

- 1) As I told you earlier, first of all, you must take away your own interests (your pride) from research. It is easy to understand that if you only see what you want to see, then the search for truth is over before you even start.
- 2) We must observe the real facts that are happening around us. They must be noted.
- 3) We must analyze these facts and extract the main points that are obvious. They must be listed.
- 4) We must find logical explanations. We must go out the different possibilities.
- 5) We must clean up the possibilities. We must reconcile all the facts and evidences to find the only possible solution. **At the very end, there must be only one solution.** This solution must explain everything, and this without any exception.

I reassure you, you will only have to follow me in the method. For those who want to check it out, go ahead, I encourage you.

|5-G| Search for the Creator through science of physics

You do not have a science background! **No problem, your simple logic will be enough.** We will focus only on the obvious, simple and 100% proven evidence elements. This first search is crucial because we will be able to discover the qualities of our Creator.

|5-H| Let's start with the steps 1 and 2 of the method

A) Let's go with the detective's method.

- 1) First step, you should not put your personal interests into your detective work. You must be critical.
- 2) Second step, we must observe the real facts that are happening. They must be noted.

B) Here are the facts:

a) Reality, the universe is not eternal, there was a beginning.

You have probably heard about the Big Bang. The universe started in a single point in a gigantic initial explosion! The echo of this explosion was recorded by the physicist (Robert Woodrow Wilson) in 1964 and it earned him a Nobel Prize in 1978. In 1989, NASA sent the COBE satellite into space to prove this discovery. The results were quickly positive and several other Nobel Prizes were awarded to researchers. In 1992, the well-known physicist Stephan Hawking said, "The Big Bang is the most important discovery of the century." Moreover, it is important to understand that physicists claim that before this beginning (this Big Bang) it was emptiness, nothingness. There was nothing then, neither matter nor time.

Internet Keywords	1) Big Bang. 2) Robert Woodrow Wilson. 3) COBE Satellite (Cosmic Background Explorer). 4) Physicist Stephen William Hawking.

b) Reality, the universe will have an end.

The physicist Max Planck was one of many physicists to prove the irreversibility of all physical phenomena. This is what we call "entropy." In a simple way, there is nothing that works without energy loss. Whether it is a spinning top of a child that you have launched now and that will eventually stop and fall to the side in 4 minutes. Whether it is your car to which you must add fuel so that it does not break down. Whether it is our Sun that shines, burns, and will eventually go out in about 5 billion years. We understand that everything will end sooner or later, it is only a matter of time. Even the activity of the universe will end one day due to its losses. So, the universe cannot be eternal. Even the idea of the universe in eternal recycling is impossible.

Internet Keywords	1) Entropy. 2) Physicist Max Planck. 3) Irreversibility. 4) Our star the Sun.

c) Reality, the universe is not fixed, it increases in complexity because there is life on Earth.

Here, physicists are faced with an impossibility. The universe increases in complexity. Let me explain. The universe comes from an explosion (the Big Bang). Everyone knows that an explosion only scatters the ashes everywhere and does not build anything at all, there is nothing complicated in there! In addition, the universe was formed in a fireball that sterilized everything. So where does our pretty little blue planet come from, Earth and life on it? Where does all this immense knowledge come from to establish life on a sterilized planet that was Earth at the beginning? This is the miracle that thousands of physicists, chemists, biologists and geneticists around the world do not explain even after more than 100 years of research. Some physicists then said that the answer is not here in our universe. So, there is something external to the universe that acts on it and has a plan. You will understand that science had reached the bottom.

Internet Keywords	1) Sterilization. 2) On a cosmic scale, water is rarer than gold. 2) À l'échelle cosmique, l'eau est plus rare que l'or.

Scientifically, these facts are proven.

It is important to understand that for each of these 3 facts, science has reached the limit of what matter could tell it. There is no more and there will never be more. Science cannot study what is outside our universe.

These proven facts then become valid forever.

| 5-| Let's continue with the step 3 (we must analyze these facts and extract the main points...)

A) Of these 3 facts proven and valid forever.

We can say:

1) The universe has a beginning. It is therefore impossible that there is no cause at this beginning.

→ Give him a name: **the Cause**.

2) The universe began in total darkness when matter did not exist and it was nothingness. **The Cause is therefore not material, but immaterial.**

3) All of a sudden, "Big Bang" and the light has popped up. **The Cause is the source of everything.**

4) The heat ball that was then the universe at the beginning expanded and cooled forming matter, stars and planets.

5) The Big Bang was of unimaginable power. **The Cause is therefore of unimaginable power too (infinite).**

6) Physicists say that the speed of expansion of the universe has occurred with great precision. If the speed had been just a little slower, the universe would have closed on itself (contraction). The universe would be dead even before Earth had time to exist. If the speed had been just a little higher, the universe would have dispersed too quickly. Once again, the universe would be dead even before Earth had time to exist. **The Cause is therefore very precise.**

7) Physicists say that the universe by forming itself made appear the perfect laws of physics as well as time. **The Cause is therefore perfect. The Cause is therefore outside time.**

8) The universe has become more complex because Earth is very beautiful. **The Cause has a plan.**

9) The Cause is not subject to matter or even time, because all this did not exist before the Big Bang. **The Cause, besides being immaterial, is also timeless (eternal).**

| 5-J | Step 4 (we have to find logical explanations and get out the different possibilities)

A) Here is what we know by observing the universe:

- ° It is impossible that there is not a Cause that has produced our universe;
- ° The Cause is of unimaginable or infinite power;
- ° The Cause works with great precision;
- ° The Cause is in the image of the laws of physics, perfect;
- ° The Cause has a plan;
- ° The Cause is the source of everything;
- ° The Cause is immaterial;
- ° The Cause is eternal.

What can fully answer this list? Which word can answer this definition?

Do you see a big list?

B) I put here a list of all the possibilities and we will analyze them one by one at the next step:

- ° An extraterrestrial;
- ° A ghost;
- ° A parallel universe;
- ° A divinity.

| 5-K | Step 5 of the method (we must clean up the possibilities)

A) It is now necessary to reconcile all the facts and evidence to find the only possible solution.

At the very end, there must be only one solution. This solution must explain everything, and this without any exception.

1) An extraterrestrial is a being a bit like you and me, but who comes from outside Earth. He has great technological applications. He is a great scientist. He uses instruments and a spacecraft. He uses the material and energy already in place to make something.

Conclusion:

No. He is himself subject to everything around him, like matter and time. It does not work at all because the Cause has produced the universe. The cause is therefore outside of matter and time, and in addition it is immaterial.

2) A ghost is a being who is dead physically, but whose soul floats on earth.

Conclusion:

No. This has nothing to do with our list.

3) A parallel universe is a universe that would be next to ours. We could imagine that, by chance, this universe poured a quantity of itself (energy) through a small hole in our empty space. This gave what it takes to make our Big Bang. A bit like a vase that pours (overflow) into another empty vase. We understand that this original parallel universe must be absolutely eternal and not temporal and mortal like ours. Well, so far, this may possibly hold up. Well, the parallel universe intervenes in the Big Bang pouring a large amount of energy. Now it is done, our universe is launched, perfect! There are still 2 difficulties to qualify this possibility. In the list, the Cause has a plan (our universe becomes more complex after the Big Bang). The best example is Earth and life on it. Earth appeared 10 billion years after the Big Bang. In the list, the Cause works with a very great precision, which means that the Cause has not only deposited energy in our universe like 2 communicating vessels. The Cause has a plan and works with precision. The Cause makes things in an established order in its time. The Cause first makes the Big Bang, then 10 billion years later, it deposits life on Earth. The Cause is therefore intelligent! It is here that we lose our way with the parallel universe. A parallel

universe is a thing. It does not think! It does not make a plan and it is not patient to do a job in its time and later! The parallel universe would simply dump its surplus energy and... "Big Bang" without control, without Intelligence! The spill would be done in a very brutal way and then there would be nothing new. Everything would simply cool down and scatter like an explosion. To persuade us, we only have to watch a video on the Internet of an explosion to convince us that it does not create beautiful plants and beautiful animals. It is the complete opposite, it destroys everything and even life.

Conclusion:

No. This solution does not fit all the facts without any exception.

4) A divinity is not a created being. He can be the source of everything. He can create a world and beings. A divinity can be infinitely powerful. A divinity can have a plan. A divinity can make perfect things so with great precision. A divinity can be immaterial and immortal (eternal).

Conclusion:

Yes. This solution answers all the facts and evidence without exception.

B) In short:

The solution is: a divinity.

From here, it is obvious that science no longer has a say, because the divinity we are looking for is immaterial, eternal and out of our universe!

| 5-L | Let's go further in the search for the Creator

Research by physics has been very rewarding. We now know that there is a **divinity** who created our world.

So far, we have used only observations of the universe and the fact that life on Earth exists since we are walking on it. With these 2 only pieces of information, we have found the existence of a **divinity** and even some of his qualities.

Now, let's see if other sciences can confirm our discovery and if we can learn more.

| 5-M | Let's continue our research by other sciences

A) By biology.

We know that after more than a hundred years of research by several thousand scientists (physicists, chemists, biologists, geneticists, etc.), the explanation of life on Earth is an insurmountable puzzle if we do not involve the existence of a **divinity** as a true reality.

So let's take a little trip back in time just after Earth was formed, just as the first trace of life appeared.

The insurmountable difficulty of the appearance of life on Earth is that the universe began in a nuclear fireball, 13.8 billion years ago. Even, if in the future, scientists would find an explanation other than that of the Big Bang to this ball of fire, the fact remains that the existence of this initial nuclear fireball was proved by the COBE satellite then the Planck satellite.

Internet Keywords	1) First image of the Big Bang. 2) History of the universe.

Let's go back to our research. The important point is that the universe was born in far more than billions of degrees Celsius.

We know that the process of sterilization of food, surgical instruments, etc., is already reached at 200 degrees Celsius. The universe was born sterile from the beginning. There was no life at first. On the other hand, an obvious observation is that there is life on Earth now!

Many have tried to explain the emergence of life by chance or by spontaneous generation. Basically, life just happened by chance and multiplied. The life of plants and animals has appeared and evolved to form other plants and other more and more complex animals. In fact, with genetics (DNA) and cell theory, there are only living cells that can make other living cells. So it takes life to give life, we cannot do otherwise!

Internet Keywords	1) Spontaneous generation. 2) Cell theory.

In genetics, human DNA has about 25,000 genes. Each species has its own DNA code which is, in a way, the living plan or program of its body. Example: dogs can breed between themselves, but not with cats. The human being is alone in his species. A human being can only reproduce with another human being. We know that the Darwin's theory of evolution failed because of genetics. DNA is sufficiently sealed that accidental modification is not possible. This explains why species have never degenerated. It also means that the evolution of species is impossible without the work of the Creator himself.

Currently, there are laboratories that play with genes (DNA) to make genetically modified organisms (GMO). Yes, but all this is not natural! So we have to be careful, we know that genetic modifications make far more cancer than good results.

To date, with all the knowledge of modern science, a laboratory has never been able to produce even a single small gene spontaneously from inert matter (non-living) under ideal and controlled conditions. So, ask yourself this question: what is needed as **intelligence and knowledge** to make and assemble several thousand genes all in the right order to make a single species of animal on a pebble as was Earth in the beginning? Subsequently, to make millions of species of animals and plants, without forgetting, of course, to create the perfect harmony between all these beings that we call the ecosystem. In addition, all this must not degenerate for billions of years. **What more is needed to believe?**

When I say that our planet Earth was a large pebble, I am not exaggerating! In the beginning, there was no loose soil, it is the roots of plants that broke the rock on the surface of Earth to produce it.

As life comes only from life. Then, the **divinity** has **knowledge** and **intelligence** that can create life and maintain it.

B) By computer science.

We know that computer science has made a major breakthrough in modern science since the 1980s.

What can it tell us?

We know that the universe was born sterile. We know that genetics says it takes a lot of knowledge (information) to establish life on Earth. We know that Earth was a rock. So, where does all this knowledge or information come from to make life from nothing?

Recently, computer scientists have done tests with a very powerful computer. The idea, can we generate new information from nothing?

The idea was simple:

- 1) We use a very powerful computer;
- 2) We put a small program inside with some initial data;
- 3) We ask the program to generate random data from the initial data that was inserted at the beginning. The computer works for months at billions of operations per second;
- 4) We analyze the data thus generated to see if after this great work, there would be some new data that was not in the initial data.

The goal was to see if there would be any new information or knowledge that would appear from this random work.

The conclusion was that there is no more information (or knowledge) after this work than there was at the beginning in the initial information.

The conclusion is therefore very simple. More information is needed to create life on Earth from nothing (the big pebble). Chance or randomness does not make any additional information out of nothing.

So, we are not little beings born of chance on Earth! For life to appear on Earth and to be built, it cannot be the result of chance, but the fruit of an intelligence.

Life on Earth is therefore not the random generation of information from our sterile universe, but the addition of continual information that comes from outside our sterile universe.

So there is something, a superior intelligence that has allowed life on Earth and its development!

Internet Keywords	1) Yes, God exists. 1) Oui, Dieu existe. 2) Does God exist? 2) Dieu existe-t-il ?

|5-N| Conclusion of research with other sciences

A) In short:

So, I proposed to you to reinforce the assurance that a **divinity** really exists, **it is done!**

We now know that he has the absolute: knowledge, intelligence, patience and harmony. He is the author of life on Earth.

He deposited life on Earth that has spread by itself since that time through reproduction.

B) Moreover:

We know that the last being on Earth is human. Human is the last modern man. He suddenly appeared about 35,000 years ago. There is no other being who appeared after us. It is obvious to say that the human being is the crowning achievement of his work.

Have you noticed that the human being is the only one on Earth with self-consciousness? He is the only one able to know if his actions can do good or evil.

C) Here are other qualities of the **divinity**:

Intelligence; absolute knowledge; patience; perfect harmony; author of life.

|5-O| Identification, what divinity are we talking about?

Let's take again the detective's method.

1) First of all, you have to take away your own personal interests from the research.

OK, this step is already done.

2) It is necessary to observe the real facts which happen, it is necessary to note them.

OK, this step is already done.

3) We must analyze these facts and extract the main points that are obvious. They must be listed.

Let's replace the word (Cause) of article |5-J| by its name (**a divinity**) and associate it with all the qualities found.

Here is what it gives:

- ° A divinity created our universe;
- ° A divinity of unimaginable or infinite power;
- ° A divinity who works with great precision;
- ° A divinity who is in the image of the laws of physics, perfect;
- ° A divinity who has a plan;
- ° A divinity who is the source of everything;
- ° A divinity who is immaterial;
- ° A divinity who is eternal;
- ° An intelligent and patient divinity;
- ° A divinity with absolute knowledge;
- ° A divinity capable of making perfect harmony;
- ° A divinity who is the author of life.

4) We must find logical explanations. We must get out the different possibilities.

We must now find a religion whose **divinity** responds to all this list within their sacred books.

I will let you search a little by yourself...

Internet Keywords	1) The major religions compared.

5) We must clean up the possibilities.

Now, we have to reconcile all the facts and evidence to find the only possible solution. At the very end, there must be only one solution. This solution must explain everything, and this without any exception.

If we look at different religions, which ones are in agreement with this list?

The answer: the facts only agree with the religions that come from the God of Abraham.

To make sure of this, it is enough to consult the Christian Bible whose God is Abraham's God. The God (Yahweh) who is described throughout the Bible corresponds in every respect to our list.

In addition, the narrative of Creation (in the book of Genesis) fits quite well with all the facts and evidence found in modern science. It must, of course, be taken into account that this narrative was inspired (by God) to people with no scientific knowledge, more than 2,000 years ago. We can see the allusion to nothingness (empty, without matter) before the Big Bang and afterwards the great light. It is even said that animals were created by species as it has been found now by genetics.

Internet Keywords	1) The qualities of God in the Bible. 2) The Bible, the first narrative of Genesis.

|5-P| Conclusion by the detective's method

It is now proved, the God of Abraham really exists!

He is also the God of Christians.

Psychology teaches that the human being has a very incredulous background. So, if right now, you do not believe, well that is normal. However, this does not change the reality of the conclusion of our investigation. God is really here, I assure you, and even beside you now!

As a Christian, remember what I told you at the beginning. Only God can make the "gift of believing in him really." To have this "gift," we have to show him that we are really determined to find him.

|5-Q| The God of Abraham

We know that the religions that have the God of Abraham as their Divinity are **monotheistic**. This means that there is only one Divinity. In the list of article |5-O|, we have: "a Divinity that is in the image of the laws of physics, perfect." This perfection of the laws of physics **confirms** to us that there is only one Author (one Divinity). If there were several Authors, there would be a divergence in the laws, no they are perfectly homogeneous.

In the religions of Abraham, God is without any evil (he is Holy). His adversary (the evil one) is not a divinity, but the leader of one of his (fallen creatures) called Satan (or the devil). We will discuss this subject in chapters |16| and |18|.

|5-R| Why did I choose Christianity to continue the research?

1) Because there are several tangible Christian miracles to prove it.

2) Because to write this book, I had a dozen Manifestations of the Holy Spirit.

Ask yourself this question. If you were God, how would you introduce yourself to humans so that they might recognize you? I am giving you clues about God. He is: not material as what is transparent; free as much as air; everywhere around us; life in the image of everything that breathes; pure good; humility. So what form would you take to make yourself known? A little effort please! Yes, in the form of a blessed Wind or Breath. **As simple as that!** "Spirit" means Breath in the Greek language. "Holy" means good only, this is only proper to God alone. Then the Holy Spirit is the "Breath of God's Goodness."

|5-S| Are you still skeptical?

If you have not had the following inspiration yet: "Yes, God really exists," do not worry! We will continue our search. Readers with a background in science have benefited so far. For other readers, I will soon use a different way to make you discover him.

Here we have proved by an effective method of investigation that the God of Christians really exists.

From now on, even if you have not yet received the "gift of truly believing in God," you know that he is there really.

I can assure you that you are not wasting your time to keep looking for it!

Finding him is only a matter of time and personal sincerity.

So, be patient!

| 5-T | Conclusion

Our detective work has shown that the God of Abraham (the same as Christians) is the only possible solution to the universe and life on Earth.

In a very simple way, the most irrefutable proof that God really exists is that we exist ourselves!

In other words, God is hiding, but we now know he is there.

A) Here is a summary of what we know so far:

- ° God of Abraham really exists (he is also the God of Christians);
- ° God is the Creator of our universe;
- ° God is of unimaginable or infinite power;
- ° God works with great precision;
- ° God has perfect laws;
- ° God has a plan;
- ° God is the source of everything;
- ° God is immaterial (he has no physical limits);
- ° God is eternal (he has no time limits);
- ° God is intelligence and patience;
- ° God is perfect harmony;
- ° God is the Author of all life;
- ° God possesses absolute knowledge.

Since by nature, we (humans) are all incredulous, I propose to confirm the presence of God in chapter | 6 | to reinforce once again the assurance that he really exists.

|6| Confirmation of the presence of God

I propose 3 ways to do it.

A) Some miracles of history.

Even though we were not there, the Bible tells of several tangible miracles.

B) Some visual miracles.

Here, I propose some miracles that you will be able to look with your eyes. Here are the criteria to make sure you have a reliable miracle:

- ° The miracle must have no scientific explanation;
- ° The miracle must be simple, tangible and with several observers;
- ° Documentation of the miracle must not be controversial by experts (medicine, physics, biology, etc.).

You will be able to compare these miracles with the list of God's qualities in our study of article |5-0|.

C) Some testimonials.

I offer you some testimonials that you can hear from yourself.

|6-A| The Exodus of the Hebrew people from Egypt (miracle of history)

The people of God (the Hebrews) were enslaved in Egypt (around 1300 B.C.). To bring out his people, God demonstrated to the king of Egypt (Pharaoh) that he was the master of nature by performing a dozen miracles. Egypt finally yielded and the spokesman of God (Moses, the deliverer) led the people to the Promised Land (Canaan). God even opened the sea for them to cross it.

The empire of Egypt was the greatest world power of the time. Who can take away people in slavery from Pharaoh's hand? He was considered a god!

Internet Keywords	1) Moses. 2) Book of Exodus.

For skeptics who say to themselves, "There is not much evidence of this part of history in Egypt!"

Do you really believe that the Pharaoh of the time would have kept records of his humiliating defeat before poor slaves? Do you believe that at that time everyone was able to write? Do you believe that the few historians of the time were not in the pay of kings and only wrote what was ordered? Do you believe that Pharaoh would have paid for such writing ridicule him? If you had been considered a god and master of the world at that time, what would you have done? ***So, you have your answer!***

|6-B| Jesus Christ, a man like no other (miracle of history)

The Bible tells of the miracles, healings and wonders of the Son of God, Jesus Christ. Jesus walks on the water in the middle of a lake to meet his disciples in their boat! He orders the wind to calm down! Jesus brings back to life 3 dead people! He makes the paralyzed walk and heals the lepers! Jesus heals even a blind man who was born blind! Sometimes there is a crowd of 5,000 people who follow him to hear his teaching and receive healings and miracles!

Between you and me, could all those people who testified of these wonders have hallucinations all at the same time? Here we are talking about several thousand people over 3 years.

Internet Keywords	1) Jesus Christ.

| 6-C | The early Christians (miracle of history)

For 300 years, in the Roman arena, thousands of Christians died as martyrs for their faith. They even had to hide in the catacombs to survive.

Between you and me, would you be dead for lies, falseness, and human inventions? All this in total poverty!

Internet Keywords	1) Christian persecutions.

You will tell me, "If God exists, why did not he intervene to destroy the guilty Romans?"

Jesus Christ would have said to you that you are thinking like a human and not in the way of God! The key to the answer is that God gives life and always gives freedom to every human being, whether good or bad. For God, yes, the Romans did not have the right to kill. On the other hand, if God had destroyed them, he would have demonstrated the opposite of what Jesus taught. Stop making evil for evil because it is endless.

Well, imagine for a moment that God would have intervened with "fire from heaven, voices and lightning!" It would have been nice, but the Romans would have thought that the Christians were a group of wizards and demons to destroy as soon as possible! The whole army of Rome would have risen up to destroy the small Christian communities. God should have intervened again with "fire from heaven!" How would all this have ended? Of course in an endless war between God and the empire of Rome! A carnage! No, God is the Creator and not a destroyer.

| 6-D | Let's start by arriving on Earth (visual miracle)

The first miracle is for people who say to themselves, "Why God does not do spectacular miracles?"

It is because you do not see them!

A great prodigy is in front of you. Just look at some images of Earth seen from the moon, yes, a beautiful little blue planet in huge space, black, cold, and lifeless.

On Earth, we can see moonlight.

But from the moon, we could see...

Internet keywords (image)	1) Image of Earth seen from the moon.

| 6-E | During a Christian mass in Lourde (visual miracle)

Internet Keywords (small video)	1) Levitating host. 1) Hostie en lévitation. 2) Host of Lourde. 2) Hostie de Lourde. 3) Levitating host in 1999 (Lourde). 3) Hostie en lévitation à Lourde en 1999.

The second visual miracle that I propose to you is a levitating host during a Christian mass in Lourde (France) in 1999. It was a private mass that should not be broadcast in public.

For the reader who is not a Christian, here is what you need to know before watching the video.

In the list of God's characteristics of article | 5-O |, we know that we seek the God of Abraham who is the same as that of Christians. We also know that God is immaterial and can do wonders that are far beyond nature on Earth or outside the understanding of our science.

1) The levitating host is the symbol of divinity (God).

2) Here, the host that rises like in an (air draft) is the symbol of the Spirit of God. The word Spirit means in Greek: "Breath or Wind."

The priests that you see here, have no scientific or technical background. They are people with a university degree in theology. The priest of the center is an archbishop. The audience is composed of religious people. It is the program (Le Jour du Seigneur/The Day of the Lord) that films and its technicians have no particular knowledge that would allow them to falsify the images. They only film and retransmit the images. The program has certified that the video is original. I can tell you that everyone would be too scared to lose their job to make a fake!

It should be known that for some Christian movements, the procedure to certify a miracle is very severe. Even if someone sees a miracle, there must be an (in-depth investigation) to affirm it. The majority of miracles have been confirmed after over 30 years of research. The one you are going to see, has been silenced for the moment because it is too recent.

In front of the priest, there are 2 hosts. They are very flat and round pieces of bread about 6 inches in diameter (15 centimeters) that represent the sacrifice of the life of Jesus Christ (the Son of God) for the human, 2,000 years ago.

During the video, the priest will ask God to spread his Holy Spirit on both hosts. Spirit means "Breath or Wind" and Holy means "without any evil." The Wind or Breath of God is simply called the Holy Spirit.

At the moment when the priest's request is made, we see that only the top host lifts about 1 inch (2.5 centimeters) above the other. The one underneath stays in place. The top one seems to rise by "a gust of wind" that makes it shudder and then stabilizes perfectly horizontally above the other.

There are several small videos. For those that show us the event closely, notice that there is an air space between the 2 hosts. We even see the designs and colors of the priest's cassock that travels through this 1 inch (2.5 cm) space.

I said earlier that I have several diplomas in applied science. See article | 2-A |. I can assure you that it is technically impossible to levitate a piece of bread under the same conditions as you see there. Even if someone would give me a budget of 1 million dollars to achieve this miracle, I am not able to do it! You must take into consideration that there are no pipes or even electrical cables on the table and that in addition the host will be eaten.

You will tell me, "Why no one was surprised during the mass?"

The archbishop said that he noticed something, but he had to stay focused on his words. Also, the people in the room are very far away. It would take a very good vision to observe the miracle at this distance. We could say then that the miracle is simply intended for us, the viewers.

| 6-F | The Blessed Virgin Mary appears to Juan Diego (visual miracle)

The third visual miracle is that of Juan Diego, a shepherd who saw a "Beautiful Lady all radiant" in front of him in the field. She asked him to go to see his bishop to build a small church on site. Juan Diego went to see his bishop who did not believe him. The bishop asked Juan Diego that the Lady gave him a proof.

The Lady appeared again to Juan Diego and told him to go and bring a large bouquet of roses to the bishop. Don Diego took the flowers and brought them to the bishop as requested.

When Juan Diego appeared in front of the bishop, he opened his coat and a lot of roses fell on the floor. First of all, you should know that this was not the time of year when roses grow in this part of the country. Secondly, the image of the Beautiful Lady was printed on Juan Diego's coat. **Therefore, the bishop built the little church.**

To go even further, scientists analyzed the image of the Lady (the Blessed Virgin Mary) in the fabric of the coat. Hold on, they discovered the reflection of Juan Diego kneeling in the eyes of the Blessed Virgin Mary!

We see here that God does not do things halfway!

Internet Keywords	1) Juan Diego Cuauhtlatoatzin. 2) Our Lady of Guadalupe. 3) Juan Diego in the eye of the image of the Blessed Virgin.

| 6-G | The Blessed Virgin Mary appears on the roof of a church (visual miracle)

The fourth visual miracle that I propose to you is the video of an Apparition of the Blessed Virgin Mary above the roof of a church. This miracle happened again and again for more than 3 years. Hundreds of thousands of Christians have seen this miracle in person.

Scientists made expertise on the roof to understand the phenomenon and found no explanation.

The patriarch (Orthodox) authenticated the Manifestation and this was respected by the pope (Catholic).

Internet Keywords (video or image)	1) The Apparitions of Mary in Zeitoun (video). 2) The Apparitions of Mary in Zeitoun (image). 3) Our Lady of Zeitoun.

| 6-H | The Apparitions of the Blessed Virgin Mary to the children of Medjugorje (visual miracle)

The fifth visual miracle that I propose to you is the video of an Apparition of the Blessed Virgin Mary to the children of Medjugorje. These Apparitions still going on today, and have been for 30 years already.

Internet Keywords (video or image)	1) Virgin of Medjugorje Presentation (video). 1) Vierge de Medjugorje Présentation (en film). 2) Apparitions of the Virgin Mary in Medjugorje (website).

The video comes from a research scientist in neuropsychology. Neuropsychology is the study of the internal activity of the brain relative to human thought. It is important to know that the human brain has about 100 billion neurons. Our human thought comes from their activities. See chapter | 16 |.

In the middle of this video, you will see a neuropsychologist putting electrodes on the subject's head (the person) he is studying. These electrodes are connected to a computer to see the brain activity of the subject.

It is important to say that only children see the Apparition. The other people around them only see the **reaction** of the children. During the Apparition, the children can talk to her, hold her hand and even touch her veil! For children, she is as tangible as if a human being was in front of them!

Now, for us, what can this bring us since we do not see the Apparition? Yes, but we see the **reaction** of children and it is fantastic!

I will help you. Look carefully at the girl who is praying at the beginning. She has the figure of a girl coming out of her bed with drawn features and tired eyes. Now, look at his face as the Apparition begins. Suddenly, his face lights up with the most beautiful smile in the world! She gets down on her knees and speaks on the tip of her lips (it is an intimate conversation with the Apparition). Afterwards, she stops speaking and it is the child (next to her) who begins to speak on the tip of his lips. When he stops, the first one starts again. It is as if the Apparition speaks to each of them in turn! Each of the children cannot know that the other has finished speaking, because each one is looking ahead. In addition, they do not listen to each other, because each one is only moving their lips (there are no words coming out of their mouths). Take a good look, notice the synchronization.

Meanwhile, the neuropsychologist checks the brain activity. The brain activity is as if the children were in a state of light sleep. We see that the neuropsychologist even puts an opaque cardboard in front of a child's eyes and she sees the Apparition!

At the end of the Apparition, each child tilts his head backwards as if the Apparition is ascending into the sky (heaven) and then they say, "She is gone!" Notice the synchronism.

It is reported that during another Apparition, the children said that the Virgin Mary showed her Son (Jesus) on the cross.

Here are the neuropsychology researcher's conclusions. There is no magic trick. The children really have a collective Apparition. There is no natural explanation for this phenomenon, which has been going on for 30 years.

These Apparitions are being approved by some Christian movements.

|6-I| A host that has a heartbeat (visual miracle)

The sixth visual miracle that I propose to you is the video of a host in its paten. It was sealed using a small glass window. This miracle is still active today in Buenos Aires, Brazil. The current pope Francis himself witnessed this miracle while he was archbishop in Brazil.

At first, we see that the host is white and has nothing special. On the other hand, when the priest says the mass, during the consecration of the host which becomes the sacrifice of the body of Jesus Christ on the cross, something happens! The host becomes stained with blood. Thereafter, we see a heartbeat appear in the host. After the consecration, the host becomes white as before, without pulsations or even blood!

Medical scientists took a sample of the host for laboratory analysis. They discovered that the sample had the same composition as the myocardial tissue of a human's heart. They found inside the tissues, the infiltration of white blood cells that occurs during the suffering of a tortured person put to death. Example: the crucifixion of Jesus on the cross!

This miracle is amazing!

Internet Keywords (video)	1) Eucharistic miracles. 2) Host of Buenos Aires (video) 2) Hostie de Buenos Aires (en film). 3) Pope Francis eucharistic miracle Buenos Aires.

|6-J| Incorruptibility of saints (visual miracle)

The seventh visual miracle that I propose here is amazing! These are the bodies of some saints who have been dead for more than 100 years and have remained intact. ***Their bodies did not deteriorate after their death!***

You know how a dead body decomposes naturally and quickly enough!

What happened? Well, at their death, they were buried as usual. Then, the religious community had to, several years later, move the cemetery for some reason. By moving the degraded wooden tombs, they discovered that the flesh of the person was not decomposed. The clothes were decomposed, but not the body of the person!

Religious people decided to have the miracle authenticated. This allows the person to be beatified or canonized (in order to receive the title of saint).

Subsequently, the community took the body, washed it, dressed it, and placed it in a grave with a glass. So, visitors can see the body of the saint, but cannot cut out pieces of his clothes.

In the process, medical specialists (biologists) take samples of human tissue to analyze them in order to authenticate the miracle.

Often, their skin is still flexible. For many, we could say that they are only sleeping!

We see that these saints are amazing! These are permanent miracles. They demonstrate the Eternity of God and that he is far above nature and science.

Internet Keywords	1) The incorruptible bodies of the saints. 2) Incorruptibility of saints (video). 2) Incorruptibilité des saints (en film).

|6-K| The miraculous water of Lourde (Ste-Bernadette Soubirous)

Bernadette was 14 years old when she had 18 Apparitions of a "Beautiful Lady" in Lourde, France. Her Apparitions took place at the Grotto of Massabielle between February 11 and July 16, 1858.

At the first Apparition, Bernadette is near the grotto to collect dead wood on the ground. **Bernadette is then surprised by a noise, like a gust of wind.** We will see in chapter |10| that this "**wind**" is the Presence of the 3rd Person of God (the Holy Spirit) who says, "Hello, I am here!" "**Spirit**" means "**Wind**" in the Greek language. Afterwards, Bernadette looks up and the Beautiful Lady is there! She is smiling and does not speak, then disappears.

Bernadette describes the Apparition like this: a (luminous) girl of 16 years old with a veil, a white dress, a blue belt and a yellow rose on each of her feet.

During another Apparition, Bernadette has a candle lit in one hand. A doctor present next to her makes the following statement. Bernadette is so focused on the Apparition that she does not pay attention to her gestures and passes her other hand over the flame for 15 minutes. Finally, the doctor discovers that Bernadette's hand has no burn marks!

In another Apparition, the Beautiful Lady asks Bernadette to dig with her hands on the floor of the grotto in order to discover a small spring of water. From this tiny hole, 120 cubic metres of water will come out every day. By drinking or rubbing with this water, hundreds of healings appeared. Even today, miracles are still happening (healing of blind, paralytic, etc.).

In the Apparition of March 25, 1858, the Beautiful Lady finally revealed her name: "*Que sòi era Immaculada Concepcion.*" Which translates as: "I am the Immaculate Conception." Then, people discover that the Beautiful Lady is the Blessed Virgin Mary. It should be known that March 25 is the day of the feast of the Annunciation.

Internet Keywords	1) Bernadette Soubirous (Wikipedia). 2) Bernadette Soubirous (video). 2) Bernadette Soubirous (le film).

|6-L| Stigmatization

1) The Bible does not tell of stigmatization. The holy apostles who founded the early Christian communities were never stigmatized.

2) If I look with the dozen Manifestations of the Holy Spirit that I have had. See chapter |13|. My Manifestations have always been very sweet, as if in the eyes of God, I was as precious and fragile as a little flower! I have always felt safe, respected and loved! God is Holy (without any evil).

3) Stigma is a controversial topic for many medical experts.

So, this topic cannot be part of this book.

|6-M| Do your own search for miracles

If you are still skeptical, after all the solid miracles I have given so far, I suggest you do your own Internet research. **On the other hand, it is easy to get lost.** Again, I give you the criteria listed above.

To make sure you have a reliable miracle in front of you:

- ° The miracle must have no scientific explanation;
- ° The miracle must be simple, tangible and with several observers;
- ° Documentation of the miracle must not be controversial by experts (medicine, physics, biology, etc.).

If a miracle scares you or makes no sense, skip it. The idea is to confirm that God exists, not that all the miracles (video) on the Internet are true. **In reality, only one true miracle is needed to confirm the presence of God. So, you have to do your research intelligently!**

Now, if you want to look for yourself.

Internet Keywords (video)	1) Miracles. 2) The most amazing miracles. 2) Les miracles les plus étonnants. 3) The most mysterious miracles. 3) Les miracles les plus mystérieux.

A word of encouragement from me:

Do you know that God is near you right now? One day, if he sees the sincerity of your approach and you look for him ardently, he will give you the first "gift" which is to truly believe in him. I repeat, this "gift" is not human. The only thing that is in your hands is your sincerity and your effort to seek him.

|6-N| Testimonies of miraculous healings

In Quebec, we are fortunate to have a good example with Saint Brother Andrew.

Through the grace and action of God, Saint Brother Andrew obtained hundreds of healings for people who came to confide in him and pray.

To see a short video:

Internet Keywords (video)	Portier de Dieu, saint André de Montreal.

For a simple biography:

Internet Keywords (Wikipedia)	Brother Andrew.

To see the text of the miracle that led to his canonization:

Internet Keywords	Diocese of Montreal, Brother Andrew, the miracle that led to his canonization.

|6-O| Testimonies of near-death experiences (NDE) that saw Jesus

Many people who had a "near-death experience" testified that they saw Jesus.

Personally, I believe that these people had indeed received a message from God for themselves and their entourage. I am convinced of that, just look at their sincerity!

A) Now, let's look at some testimonies.

I give you some titles:

Internet search titles, video (Google, YouTube, or others)	
1) A doctor meets Jesus Christ, testimony.	1) Un médecin rencontre Jésus Christ, témoignage.
2) She committed suicide, went to hell, to heaven, and then came back.	2) Elle s'est suicidée, est allée en enfer, au paradis, puis est revenue.
3) Exceptional/the vision of the Sacred Heart suffering (version 14 minutes).	3) Exceptionnel/la vision du Sacré-Cœur souffrant (version 14 minutes).
4) I do not believe in God ... Patrick's answer.	4) Je ne crois pas en Dieu... réponse de Patrick.
5) A child sees Jesus and Paradise.	5) Un enfant voit Jésus et le Paradis.

All these testimonies are real gifts for Christians. So thank you all for your donations and your sincerity!

B) The best explanation.

By psychology and my knowledge of God, here is:

As we will see in chapter |16|, experiences associated with suffering (demons, vampires, the devil) are easily explainable by the brain's natural dysfunction during the process of death. **On the other hand, happy experiences are not!** When a brain dies, it is easy to understand that it happens in pain and not in happiness. **So, there is something going on here...**

God being our Creator and knowing that he is very intelligent and loves all of us, so here is what I believe. God simply gives this person a help to better discover him and share his experience with the people around him. It is when we pass close to losing something (here our human life) that we discover its importance (God is the source of all life). Do not forget that God is a parent. Without realizing it, he does a lot for us every day. We only have to look at our beautiful planet Earth that he gave us.

|6-P| Research summary on the existence of God

1) In chapter |5|, we used the observable facts of the universe and Earth to find out that God really exists. Afterwards, we deduced some of his qualities.

2) We found that the religions of the God of Abraham are the only ones in agreement with the facts and the qualities found.

3) Subsequently, as I had a dozen Manifestations of the Holy Spirit, I brought you into Christianity.

4) We have seen that Christianity is true because there is a set of tangible and concordant visual miracles as irrefutable proof.

You now have everything in your hands (scientific facts, miracles, testimonies) to allow you to believe more firmly in God.

On the other hand, as I told you at the beginning, to truly believe in God is only possible if God himself allows it. ***Humanly, we are born blind of God!***

By doing a very caring personal search in the eyes of God, he will allow you one day to believe.

If you do not believe yet, work to find God and he will grant you this, rest assured! ***God (Father, Son and Holy Spirit) really exists and is waiting for you!***

|6-Q| What is stopping us from finding God?

It is not the lack of science. I was able to prove that God exists with only chapter |5|.

It is not the lack of miracles, because you have to know that there are at least 250 miracles authenticated in the West alone. In reality, only one authentic miracle is needed to prove the existence of God.

It is not a problem of human history. In all eras, people have believed in one or more deities.

It is just our lack of willpower to find it. Our society fills us with so many interesting and frivolous things that we do not need God.

Usually, we seek God when:

- ° Our life does not work as we want it (**it was my case**);
- ° Disease;
- ° Death is near.

Finally, I would say that our society does not really help us to find God. The beauty of nature on Earth tells us a lot about our Creator. On the other hand, our society has built itself a human kingdom (the cities) over it. Then, we no longer see nature and therefore the image of our Creator at the same time. For our financiers, the goodness of God and the truth is not the best-selling point. For science and technology, the existence of the "Owner of nature" hinders development, because we should respect what does not belong to us. Economically, the best solution is to make the "idea of God" disappear in the head of precious consumers (us). Moreover, to say that those who testify to the existence of God are crazy. Personally, I see only a fool in the person who firmly asserts that God does not exist without really seeking Him!

Christianity

In chapter |5|, we discovered that God really exists. In chapter |6|, we confirmed his presence. Logic dictates that I should now present to you the testimony of my dozen Manifestations of the Holy Spirit whereas I will do it only in chapter |13|. The reason is simple, I must prepare you beforehand. My Manifestations are related to the Scriptures (the Bible). If you do not have sufficient knowledge of the Scriptures, my testimony will unfortunately have no meaning for you...

|7| Introduction to Christianity

|7-A| A word for those who have been traumatized by a religion in the past

A) Beware, you will never find your Creator (God) by fear, because he is Holy (without any evil)!

In reality, Christianity is much more **a conversion of the heart and a relationship** (between a beloved child and his loving Parent) than a religion. It is a way of life. It is a big family whose big brother (Jesus) has come to announce how to live in harmony on earth and what place he will reserve for you in the Kingdom of the Father if you follow his Way. The Lord wants children of light.

To follow the Way of Christ, the most important is your **sincerity**.

God really exists. See chapters |5 and 6|. He is next to you now and he already knows you.

On earth, without Christians knowing it, Christ has kept all the Powers in his hands. This is because humans tend to do evil and the Lord knows that very well.

In article |3-A|, the Lord asked the Christian movements only a work of accompaniment of the followers. This is to **prepare** them to receive the Visit of the Holy Spirit. Be careful, God is managing his kingdom himself!

In fact, **if you take charge of your own life**, no Christian movement is necessary for you to follow the Way of Christ. Here is why:

1) Water baptism is your human commitment to follow the Word of God in your everyday life. God is everywhere and beside you always. You can make this commitment alone in front of him if you want. You can also choose a Christian movement and be baptized. It is important to understand that in the eyes of God, your water baptism depends on **your personal sincerity** and not on a ceremony. The baptism of water is only in your hands in front of God. To be a Christian is in your heart and not on a piece of paper.

2) Currently, we have a golden chance. The Word of God is written in the Gospels of the Bible. Moreover, they are available for free on the Internet. A Christian is committed to learning the Gospels. However, you do not have to memorize all. On the other hand, by dint of reading them, you will see that the sentences will come out of your mouth alone.

3) It is Jesus who saves, no one else. He died on the cross for you to obtain the forgiveness of God necessary for your {birth of the Spirit}. See article |13-D|.

B) In short.

In order to find the Truth (Jesus Christ) in your life:

- ° You can do it alone from home (the door of your room closed);
- ° It is not necessary to adhere to anything, see chapter |9|;
- ° Yes, there may be people around you who will not agree. But no one knows the depths of your heart and your personal life belongs to you. It is between you alone and your Creator. No one has anything to say.

What is really important is that the day you will be ready to receive the Breath of Life (the Holy Spirit) in you, the Son will give it to you. Thereafter, no one will be able to take this Gift away from you.

NT	St-John	14,21	"He who has My commandments and keeps them (1) is the one who loves Me; and he who loves Me will be loved by My Father, and I will love him and will disclose Myself to him. " (2)

(1) Here, it is to apply the Word in his everyday life. This only comes from you.

(2) Here, it is the {birth of the Spirit}. This is given only by Jesus Christ alone.

Here is what you need:

- ° To be a little **tired** of all injustice and human wickedness on earth;
- ° The **will** to seek God in your life;
- ° The **Word** of Jesus Christ (Gospels). It is possible to have access to the Bible via the Internet for free;
- ° **Time** and **patience**;
- ° **Sincerity**.

C) This book offers you an accompaniment in your search for God.

Having had more than a dozen Manifestations of the Holy Spirit myself, I am well placed to give you a good help to find God in your turn.

Throughout this book, I help you understand the important points of the Bible. I give you simple and modern explanations of a person who is able to talk to you about the Love of God today.

Did you know that the Gospels were made by people who had their {birth of the Spirit}? So, you need another person who has received the same thing for a precise interpretation. If you ask a person (even religious person) to interpret these texts, be very careful! Make sure he has had his {birth of the Spirit} concretely. See articles |13-D and 13-E|. If the person tells you that the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is not perceptible then he does not have what it takes to help you.

Besides, nothing prevents you from being part of a Christian movement if you want. It is always interesting and more encouraging **to prepare** in a group. But that is your choice, see chapter |9|.

|7-B| It is important to set the record straight

A) Scientifically:

Since the 1990s, scientists have been scared to tell people in our society that the only explanation left for the existence of our world is that the Creator (God) also exists. They would not want to lose their credibility!

B) Religiously:

Many Christians do not know that the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is a real Manifestation. Throughout Christian history, many religious people have written about Christ without actually receiving the Holy Spirit in them to guide them in their work. They thought they had received the Holy Spirit in their sacraments but it was not the case. This explains that human rituals have taken a lot of space at the expense of what Christ requires, a conversion of the heart and a relationship.

C) So, how can I do?

- ° How can I tell the truth and offend as few people as possible?
- ° How can I remove myths in people's minds?
- ° How can I make a modern, simple and logical Christian book for people today?

D) A challenge too big for me alone!

The purpose of this book is to inform the reader and help him to seek the Truth. Without the {inspiration} of the Holy Spirit, this book would not exist. So, if you want one more proof of the existence of God, you have it in your hands!

| 7-C | Why find God?

When you have found God, you have everything! Much more precious than gold. Much more precious than anything that rusts and gets lost on earth.

Imagine that you are in your room at 4 o'clock in the night. You have to go to the toilet and there is no night light on your way. It is a safe bet that you will stumble on an object lying on the ground in the dark! On earth, it is the same thing. God is this "Light" for you. When we know that God is there, we can ask him things. God watches over us, protects us, and helps us to achieve what we do not believe possible! God can do wonderful things for us if we sincerely ask him.

However, we have to go to meet him, we have to find him. Most people do not get anything from God, because in reality they do not believe enough in him. In their head, God is, say, "far enough!" It is normal that the fulfillment of their demands is, says, "far enough!"

| 7-D | Why is God so hard to find?

It is simply because God hides his Presence from us humans.

You will tell me, but why?

It is mainly a question of human freedom. God has given us life generously, he wants nothing in return, not even to be recognized. God is humility!

God created our world. He has laid down life here and nature works autonomously without God. Life on earth is spreading like a flame in the grass of a field. God has his own world and we humans have ours. In a way, Earth is our heritage and we do what we want even bad things. ***God has the great goodness to tolerate us!***

The reality is that God does not allow us to truly believe in him without his permission. On the other hand, we may think that he exists. Here, there is a big difference between the expressions: to think and to truly believe.

The expression "to think" is human and it has a sense of "maybe he is there, I am not 100% sure!"

The expression "to truly believe" is not human and it has a meaning such as: "Well, yes, he is there for real"; "Why did not I understand it before"; "Was I blind?" In this book, I hope to bring you to the expression: "to truly believe." On the other hand, understand that "to truly believe" is a permission that only God can grant you.

| 7-E | 8 quick (questions/answers):

1) What is the use of nature on Earth?	a) Maintenance of life. b) To understand that all this beauty is the work of much greater than us (our Creator).
2) What is the use of science?	To discover by our observation that God really exists.
3) What is God for?	To create living worlds. Example: Earth and Heaven.
4) What is the use of the human?	He is the living stone of our world.
5) What is the purpose of Christian prayer?	To crumble the living stone to make it a fertile soil.
6) On Earth, what is the use of the Holy Spirit?	To bring out of this fertile soil, a {God's child}.
7) What is the use of being a {God's child}?	To live eternal relationship in the joy of his Father (the Creator).
8) What is the use of this book?	a) To answer your important questions. b) To help you discover that God really exists. c) To help you to become a {God's child} if you really want it.

|8| To acquire a Christian base

|8-A| An outline of history in the Bible

In the Old Testament, texts from the beginning until Abraham are "symbolic." These texts, inspired by God, are very interesting because they draw primarily the history of humanity. Without people noticing, these texts also give a small picture of God's Plan for the human, so they are very important. For the moment, I advise you to read them simply out of curiosity, I will explain them in chapter |21|.

The truly tangible narrative begins with Abraham (around 2,000 B.C.). In his time, Abraham did not agree with the stone gods that humans carved and prayed. Most of these gods were ugly and wicked. Abraham thought that the God who created earth, plants and animals must be necessarily different from that! He therefore began to seek God (the Creator). One day, God came to him in the form of a "Vision." Since we know that God is immaterial, we can think that only Abraham could see and hear him in his head. It is obvious that people have called him crazy!

Abraham was the leader of his own people (Hebrews or Jews). He had no children, because his wife was sterile. In addition, they were both very old. God promised a son to Abraham and his wife gave birth to him 12 years later. God establishes the First Covenant (Old Testament) with Abraham and his people. God truly became their One God, and the people in return received a territory (Canaan) and got help to repel the enemies. Abraham and his people saw the promises of God come true.

Subsequently, there was a great general famine that lasted 7 years in all territories including Canaan. Through Joseph (grandson of Abraham), God asked to gather a large supply of grain in Egypt and brought the people to a land that Pharaoh of Egypt lent them to settle.

The Hebrew people had already been working in Egypt for a few hundred years when the Egyptians decided to enslave the Hebrews. What did not please God at all!

Afterwards, God spoke to Moses through the miracle of the "burning bush!" On the orders of God, Moses went to deliver the Hebrew people from the hands of Pharaoh of Egypt. To convince Pharaoh of the Power of God, God did wonders, one at a time, until Pharaoh let the Hebrew people go.

Here are some of the wonders that we also called the "plagues of Egypt":

- ° The shepherd's rod of Moses changed into a serpent (cobra) in front of Pharaoh's court;
- ° The water of the river (the Nile) changed into blood;
- ° Hail as fire fell in Egypt;
- ° The moon totally obscured the sun for 3 days;

There were 10 wonders (or plagues of Egypt) in all. These wonders were to demonstrate that God is the Creator and that Pharaoh is only a human.

After 10 wonders, Pharaoh could not take it anymore and decided to let the Hebrew people go. Moses led the people across the desert to the shore of the sea. During this time, the proud Pharaoh had hardened his heart again, he decided to go after the people in the desert and kill them. God made 2 other miracles. He erected a pillar of fire in front of Pharaoh's army to bar his way. God opened the sea. He made a way into the sea to let the Hebrew people pass. There were two walls of water, one on the left and one on the right creating a path in the sea. Afterwards, Moses alone went to meet God on Mount Sinai and received two tables of God's Law (the Ten Commandments) for his people so that they may live in peace. Then God gave them the land of Canaan.

Hundreds of years passed and the people began to break the Laws of God. God sent many prophets to talk to the leaders of the people. But the leaders did not want to listen to them and killed them.

Before continuing, let's define some basic terms. Jesus Christ taught that there are 3 Persons in ONE God. There is:

- ° God the Father (the Will).
- ° God the Holy Spirit (the Breath).
- ° God the Son (the Word) who incarnated in human form (Jesus Christ).

Finally, God the Father sent his Son on earth (Jesus) in the year 0000. Through the action of the Holy Spirit, the Son of God took flesh in the womb of a woman named Mary. The role of Jesus was to put an end to the First Covenant (Old Testament) that the people did not respect and subsequently, to concretely establish the 2nd Covenant (New Testament). Jesus, then 30 years old, taught the basics of the new doctrine for 3 years to his disciples and the people. Jesus performed several hundred miracles, healings, and wonders to prove to the people of his day that he truly was the Son of God.

Of course, as it happened to all the prophets, it bothered the leaders of his time a little too much, because Jesus was revealed as the Son of God. The leaders therefore organized themselves to condemn Jesus and have him crucified by the hand of the Romans. God the Father allowed this crime to be done in order to demonstrate the guilt and wickedness of the human compared to the goodness of his own Son. We say that Jesus sacrificed his life, his own body to give the chance to every human being who really wants to be called a {God's child} to have access to the Kingdom of God for Eternal Life.

Three days after the death of Jesus, God the Father Resurrected him. This is to show that God the Father has power over all life and over death. Subsequently, the Risen Jesus appeared to his disciples and more than 500 people for 40 days, then he returned to God the Father.

|8-B| To believe in something solid!

We have seen that only religions derived from the God of Abraham are in accord with all the facts of modern science. See chapter |5|.

Christianity is very different from Judaism. As Jesus taught at the time of Judaism, it is normal that nascent Christianity had taken, by the transfer, notions of Judaism. From there come concepts such as: punishment, demon, hell, etc. (see the Septuagint on the Internet). Jesus had taken 12 people of the time (called the Twelve) with the least knowledge of Judaism to diminish its influence. But there are notions that are passed anyway.

Because there is only ONE God. Because there are currently several major religions, and all of them have religious people. Because all these religions do not all pray the same deity, but believe in it! This means that a person can believe in a deity that does not exist and invest in it all his life. That is why the usefulness of chapters |5 and 6|.

For **Christianity**, there is a "cornerstone," it is **a promise of God that certifies it**. That of receiving in oneself the {gift of the Holy Spirit} which makes a person, a {God's child} already on earth. In the New Testament, the first {gift of the Holy Spirit} was made to the Twelve, at the day of Pentecost. See the beginning of the book of Acts of the Apostles.

|8-C| How to find the Truth?

A) To believe in what exactly?

To do this, look at the 4 Gospels, the book of Acts of the Apostles and the Epistles. The Old Testament is not Christianity, but Judaism. In Judaism, humans believed that God was an avenger and punisher. This is against the revelations of Jesus. You can read the whole Bible if you want, but if you see bad things about God, it is not the reality of God, but the human belief of the time.

Some texts in the Bible are in conflict. Example: the book of Job (from the Old Testament) and the Epistle of St-James (from the New Testament). Job having the vision of the Tempter (the devil) while St-James says that every human being is confronted with his own human temptation. There is also the book of Revelation (Apocalypse, New Testament) which is in conflict with the Gospels (the revelations of Jesus) on the Holiness of God. See article |20-B|.

In addition, for some Christian movements, we must be very careful, because there are certain beliefs (dogmas) that do not match the Gospels. See article |2-B|.

In this book, I confirm the Gospels.

B) Can we take the Scriptures literally?

Although they are true, you have to be careful. In the days of Jesus, people were very superstitious and this is reflected in their writings. People thought that diseases were "evil spirits." They even believed that fever could be a "bad spirit." They thought that they were purifying their hands of "unclean spirits" by passing their hands in the water. Even Jesus tried to reason them:

NT	St-Matthew	15,16	Jesus said, "Are you still lacking in understanding also?"

An important detail misinterpreted is the famous "Gehenna of fire" which Jesus talks about. It was actually a simple dump at the exit of the city. People put in it rubbish and added sulfur to help it burn better, hence the smell given to the word "hell." When there was nothing more to burn, it is obvious that it was extinguished all alone. In the days of Jesus, the word "hell" meant "under the ground" where we put a grave. The expression "until the end of time" did not exist either, it meant "for the time it lasts or when God will have decided it." It is therefore important to filter the Bible translations to find their bearings and not take fright! See chapter |20|.

In reality, one must have his {birth of the Spirit} to interpret the Bible accurately. Otherwise, it is easy to see demons everywhere! That is another reason I write this book for you. ***This is to help people see clearly and allow themselves to truly love God without fear!***

|8-D| Sense of the suffering of Jesus on the cross

We must know that God is the Perfect Trinitarian Unity (Father, Son, and Holy Spirit). When one suffers, it is God who suffers. So, everyone understood the suffering of the Son (Jesus) on the cross, but who understood the suffering of his Father! I give you an example. In hospital when a child is suffering, we know that parents are suffering too!

I give you some meanings of the suffering of Jesus:

- 1) To demonstrate perfectly (Divinely) the wickedness of the human compared to the Goodness and Holiness of God. In fact, that day, it was not Jesus who was judged (by the human) to be sentenced to death. No, **it is humanity that has been judged** (in front of God the Father) to the death (in the ground) for his crimes committed against his own Son!
- 2) To demonstrate **the freedom of humans** on earth to commit evil on their own. Demonstrate respect for this human freedom by the Creator (God) who himself suffered the consequences of it.
- 3) To remove from the head of Judaism (Old Testament), **the false idea** that God is a punisher and avenger.

To go further, see article |19-H|.

|8-E| To be in relationship with the Lord

One of the revelations of Jesus is that God wants to be in touch with you in particular. You have a great value in his eyes. It is a relationship between a loving Parent (God) and a beloved child (you). Not from a king to his faithful subject. Not from a guru to his adept! Not from the terror! God already knows you and he wants you to know him too. God knows you even if you are not baptized (Christian). He looks at you every day and already loves you. He wants you to go to meet him. He has plenty of time for you. **But do you have time for him?** Would you like to live in his Presence? If you want to become his {child}, his Breath will actually come into you to make you {be born again} on earth when you are ready. He will help you with all your miseries. You will never feel lonely again. He will prepare a place for you

in his Kingdom. How much does it cost? Money interests only the human, but not God. No one can buy a place in his Kingdom.

Jesus said:

NT	St-Matthew	5,2-10	He opened His mouth and <i>began</i> to teach them, saying, "Blessed are the poor in spirit, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. "Blessed are those who mourn, for they shall be comforted. "Blessed are the gentle, for they shall inherit the earth. "Blessed are those who hunger and thirst for righteousness, for they shall be satisfied. "Blessed are the merciful, for they shall receive mercy. "Blessed are the pure in heart, for they shall see God. "Blessed are the peacemakers, for they shall be called sons of God. "Blessed are those who have been persecuted for the sake of righteousness, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.
		11,28-30	"Come to Me, all who are weary and heavy-laden, and I will give you rest. "Take My yoke upon you and learn from Me, for I am gentle and humble in heart, and you will find rest for your souls. "For My yoke is easy and My burden is light."

So, what do you have to lose apart from your human misery?

Without God, the human alone performs only rituals. Jesus said that it is not by performing rituals that you will be saved (for Eternal Life).

NT	St-Luke	6,46-47	"Why do you call Me, 'Lord, Lord,' and do not do what I say? "Everyone who comes to Me and hears My words and acts on them, I will show you whom he is like:

The human part of religion is: rituals; severe laws; buildings; sacred objects; prayer formulas; administrators.

All this already existed in Judaism and it has been transmitted in Christianity, because a human remains a human.
Except that God asks for a religion of the heart, a way of conversion!

NT	St-Matthew	12,7	"But if you had known what this means, 'I desire compassion, and not a sacrifice,' you would not have condemned the innocent.

|8-F| So Jesus Christ comes to change everything by putting his Spirit in our hearts!

A) God the Father does not want severe rituals and laws that make people suffer.

On the contrary, Jesus gives us only 3 commandments: to love God, to love others as oneself. So, respect and do no evil to anyone (to God, to others, to oneself). Evil breed evil. Jesus was a pioneer of modern psychology 2,000 years ago. It is said now in psychology, "One cannot love and respect others if one does not love oneself and does not respect oneself first."

Jesus says that religion is nothing if it does not come from the bottom of the human heart.

B1) God the Father sends the Paraclete (the Helper), he is the 3rd Person of God, the Holy Spirit.

NT	St-John	14,15-17	"If you love Me, you will keep My commandments. "I will ask the Father, and He will give you another Helper (1), that He may be with you forever; <i>that is the Spirit of truth</i> (2), whom the world cannot receive, because it does not see Him or know Him, <i>but</i> you know Him because He abides with you and will be in you (3).
		14,21	"He who has My commandments and keeps them is the one who loves Me; and he who loves Me will be loved by My Father, and I will love him and will disclose Myself to him. " (4)
		14,23	Jesus answered and said to him, "If anyone loves Me, he will keep My word; and My Father will love him, and We will come to him and make Our abode with him. (5)
		14,26	"But the Helper, the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in My name, He will teach you all things (6), and bring to your remembrance all that I said to you.
NT	1st Epistle of St-Paul to the Corinthians	3,16	Do you not know that you are a temple of God and <i>that</i> the Spirit of God dwells in you? (7)
NT	Acts of the Apostles	2,1-4	When the day of Pentecost had come, they were all together in one place... they were all filled with the Holy Spirit (8)...
		2,33	"Therefore having been exalted to the right hand of God, and having received from the Father the promise of the Holy Spirit , He has poured forth this which you both see and hear. (9)
		2,38	Peter <i>said</i> to them, "Repent, and each of you be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of your sins; and you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit. (10)
NT	Epistle of St-Paul to the Romans	5,5	and hope does not disappoint, because the love of God has been poured out within our hearts through the Holy Spirit who was given to us. (11)
NT	2nd Epistle of St-Paul to the Corinthians	1,21-22	Now He who establishes us with you in Christ and anointed us is God, who also sealed us and gave <i>us</i> the Spirit in our hearts as a pledge. (12)

These verses give a lot of information about the Holy Spirit. The reference **(6)** of the excerpt of (St-John: 14,26) above explains the {inspiration} of this book. Here, we will analyze the subject of the Holy Spirit for the first time. Subsequently, chapter |10| will give more precision and chapter |30| will go even further. On the other hand, as I said in article |0-C|, we must not burn the steps.

Let's go!

B2) Two general terms: the Holy Spirit and the {gift of the Holy Spirit}.

In these verses (higher on this page), look carefully at references **(1)** to **(12)**. Here is the general idea that emerges. The Holy Spirit is a Paraclete (an Intercessor) who does Actions for us. The Holy Spirit is always a concrete Manifestation. The Holy Spirit can do many different actions. A big difficulty is that the Bible talks so generally about the Holy Spirit that we have a hard time knowing what he is precisely. The Holy Spirit is not an object or a good. The Holy Spirit is the 3rd Person of God. Being a Person, he introduces himself and says, "Hello" in his own way (a Wind, a Breath, a Light, etc.). Being a Person, he does things for us. He can do wonders, he can give psychological help; he can make messages; he can donate. Beware, the Holy Spirit does not enter or leave a place. He Manifests himself for a few moments and disappears. See chapter |10| for more details.

We have seen that the Holy Spirit is a Person of God. He should not be mixed with the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. This last term is a Manifestation of the Holy Spirit who comes to give us a truly special "**gift**." This "gift" is the {birth of the Spirit}.

C) The Scriptures, yes they are real!

In the last verse above, in reference **(12)**, St-Paul says that the "Breath of God has filled their hearts." We must understand the mentality of this time. They are mainly people from the land and fishermen. They have no romanticism or abstract symbolism. When they say that God: "blew them inside"; "filled with the Spirit"; made them a "mark in their hearts that is the seal of Jesus Christ." Well, it is real; tangible; it is felt in their body. **I am the living witness!**

No one can receive the "Breath of God in him and be filled with it" without actually feeling it in his body. If it does not "blow" is that there is no breath, it is not complicated! If you have not felt the mark in your heart, it is because your heart has not been "filled with the Holy Spirit." Even if you are baptized Christian, confirmed or even a religious person. **Do you want tangible proof?** The majority of Quebeckers have been baptized Christians and confirmed, but where is their faith? The vast majority do not go to mass and churches fall into ruins! Yes, they started a Christian initiation, but it was necessary to engage by efforts.

|8-G| In order to acquire some basic knowledge

In this book, I have only excerpted some verses necessary to understand the essentials of the Bible. See chapters |21 to 24|.

For now, I suggest you read only the introduction of chapter |19| which will give you an idea of the structure of the New Testament in order to give you some guidance.

In order to make it simple and at the lowest possible cost, I suggest you:

In article |8-H|, summaries of the Bible in paper form or on the Internet.

In article |8-I|, complete Bible in paper form or on the Internet.

In article |8-J|, Internet movies.

In article |8-K|, some movies in DVD format (low-cost).

Before going any further, it is important to understand that all websites belong to their respective authors and that they may disappear at any time.

|8-H| Summaries of the Bible in paper form or on the Internet

In reality, it is quite difficult to read the Bible. For example, the Jerusalem Bible has about 1700 pages. Since the goal I am giving you here is to have general knowledge and not to become a theologian, the easiest and fastest way to do so is to read a Bible for young people. Yes, you have read it well, a Bible for young people! This type of Bible is very pleasant to read and only takes a few hours. It gives a well-structured and sufficient overview at first. I present 3 here, but there are many others. These small Bibles are very well illustrated. They are intended for young people, but so pleasant and quick to read for an adult. They give all the basic information to someone who wants to get a good overview quickly.

1A) *Children's Bible: Illustrated Stories from the Old and New Testaments*

See all good booksellers with this number:

ISBN-13: 978-1841936390

1B) *The Complete Illustrated Children's Bible*

See all good booksellers with this number:

ISBN-13: 978-0736962131

2) *God speaks to His children*

See Aid to the Church in Need: <https://acn-canada.org/>

You can read this little book for free on this website:

https://issuu.com/aidtothechurchinneed/docs/god_speaks_to_his_children

|8-I| Complete Bible in paper form or on the Internet

1) For this book, the excerpts come from the Bible (**New American Standard**) of:

<https://www.biblestudytools.com/nas/>

Or

http://www.lexilogos.com/bible_multilingue.htm

For the last website, there are several Bibles available and in several languages.

2) You can also get a complete paper Bible starting at \$25. See all good booksellers.

The advantage of a paper Bible is that there are notes from the translator at the bottom of each page. The strength of the translator is the context of the Scriptures. On the other hand, the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is necessary to bring out its profound meaning. That is what I am doing here for you.

3) For those who would like someone to read the Bible for them.

<https://www.biblestudytools.com/audio-bible/web/>

It is the World English Bible.

4) There are also Bibles in electronic format for less than \$10. However, it is important to check if there are any footnotes of the translator.

|8-J| Internet movies

Using the Internet (with Google or YouTube).

I give you a short list of some possibilities that we can meet there.

The Gospel of John (2003 Full Movie)

A must see

The Acts of the Apostles (Full Movie)

A must see

The Gospel of Matthew (Full Movie)

A must see

In the Beginning (Full Movie)

The prophet Jeremiah (Full Movie)

The Ten Commandments (1956 Full Movie)

Abraham, Sarah, Isaac, Jacob (Full Movie)

Jesus of Nazareth (1977 Full Movie)

Warning, this well-known movie does not really follow the Gospels. Do not rely on it to learn them.

| 8-K | Some movies in DVD format (low-cost)

These movies have 2 objectives:

- ° To give a general knowledge;
- ° To offer an entertainment.

Some movies may use word-for-word biblical text excerpts. Other movies are interpretations of its author, therefore his vision of the facts.

List	
<i>The Bible</i> <i>In The Beginning</i> Cinema Classics Collection Directed by John Huston (The first 22 chapters of Genesis)	<i>The Ten Commandments</i> <i>Les Dix Commandements</i> De Cecil B. DeMille Charlton Heston, Yul Brynner (Exodus, Moses)
<i>The Nativity Story</i> <i>(La Nativité)</i> Keisha Castle-Hughes (Marie) & Oscar Isaac (Joseph) (Quite complete)	<i>Mary of Nazareth</i> <i>Marie de Nazareth</i> A Film by Jean Delannoy Myriam Muller, Didier Bienaimé. (Smooth)
<i>Son Of God</i> <i>Le Fils de Dieu</i> Les producteurs Mark Burnett et Roma Downey (Modern and action)	<i>The Agony and the Ecstasy</i> <i>L'Extase et l'Agonie</i> Charlton Heston, Rex Harrison (Story of Michelangelo, the painter)
<i>Ben-hur</i> William Wyler's Charlton Heston (Entertainment)	<i>The Robe</i> <i>La Tunique</i> Richard Burton, Jean Simmons, etc. (Entertainment)

(*) Personally, I bought these movies for about \$5 Canadian each. We can find them in supermarkets or online stores (on the Internet).

|9| To follow the Way of Christ, is it necessary to be accompanied by a Christian movement?

Answer:

You can get help from a Christian movement if you wish, but it is not a necessity.

|9-A| Introduction

A) Two difficulties, simplicity and the truth!

1) The first difficulty:

Many Christian movements think they have in their hands the powers of Christ and transmit the {gift of the Holy Spirit} to Christian baptism. Of course, you will not feel anything at all, because that is not the way it works. See article |1-A|.

Later, during mass, they talk to you as if you had received the {gift of the Holy Spirit} while you did not receive anything. Obviously, their formulas become difficult to understand, abstract and mysterious. From then on, some followers even begin to lose interest in mass...

As I had the {gift of the Holy Spirit} in a concrete way, I understand what is said at mass. See chapter |13|.

On the other hand, for the follower **who did not have** the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, the words of mass will confuse him in error. He will believe that he is already saved while **he is not saved at all**.

The follower thinking himself saved now believes that he has very little to do as Christian. Then, he will fall asleep and will fork off of the Way of Christ...

In summary:

The words of mass apply to you only after your Manifestation of the {gift of the Holy Spirit} . (1)

The words of mass do not apply to you if you have not had your Manifestation .

(1) The {gift of the Holy Spirit} is a synonym for the {birth of the Spirit}. See article |3-E|.

2) A second difficulty:

Several Christian movements base their catechesis on Eucharistic communion. The problem is that communion **is only a memorial**. This is indicated in the New Testament in several places. I do not understand why they have not seen it yet! This memorial is after the {birth of the Spirit}. I had this memorial at mass, but 3 months after my {birth of the Spirit}. See chapter |13|.

3) Simplicity:

Contrary to what some Christian movements think, Christ has kept all the power in his hands.

In reality, a follower does not need to understand a single mystery. The Lord wants the follower to believe in him and make his conversion of the heart every day in his life. The Lord wants the follower to follow his Way. Not that the follower spends his time juggling with mysteries! In order to prove that the conversion of the heart is much more important than the mystery. The first Gospel was made by St-Mark at the request of St-Peter. It is a Gospel of conversion of only 20 pages that has no mystery inside. At the beginning of their mission, the apostles worked with this one Gospel and their Epistles.

The only thing you really need to know is that if you do what Jesus asks, he will send the Holy Spirit to give you your {birth of the Spirit}. If you have not yet had your {birth of the Spirit}, it means that you are not working hard enough on yourself. You are not ready yet, it is not more complicated than that!

4) The truth:

Whether you are simply Christian or a religious person. For you, if rituals and mysteries are more important than believing in God and making your conversion of the heart every day... you will never have your {birth of the Spirit}. Keep dreaming because you will never go to Heaven! No ritual or mystery is needed to approach God. On the other hand, the deep need to find the Creator, goodness of heart and humility are essential for Him to reach out to you!

5) This book...

On the other hand, I do not have the choice to unravel the mystery, because there has been too much human confusion. In fact, in the course of history, humans have made Christianity very complicated when Christ had established something very simple...

B) Understand that no Christian movement will do the work for you in front of God...

Christianity is much more a **conversion of the heart and a relationship** (between a beloved child and his loving Parent) than a religion. It is a way of life. It is a family whose big brother (Jesus) came to announce how to live in harmony on earth and the place that he will reserve for you in the Kingdom of the Father if you follow his Way. The Lord wants children of light.

It is only Jesus Christ who Saves, no one else. It is only Jesus who makes the {gift of the Holy Spirit} when a person is ready to receive it.

Very important:

In reality, the **connection** between you and God is not made by a Christian movement, but by **the Holy Spirit**. The only job of the Christian movement is to proclaim the Gospels and prepare their followers for the Visit of the Holy Spirit.

This is what Jesus says:

NT	St-John	14,26	"But the Helper (1), the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in My name, He will teach you all things, and bring to your remembrance all that I said to you.

(1) The Helper (or Paraclete) means "Intercessor."

Yes, it is true that it is more pleasant to participate in a group and **I encourage you to do so**. So, participate in it, but stay very vigilant because it is very easy to get lost...

NT	St-Matthew	7,13-14	"Enter through the narrow gate; for the gate is wide and the way is broad that leads to destruction, and there are many who enter through it. "For the gate is small and the way is narrow that leads to life, and there are few who find it . (1)

(1) Ironically, finding this Way took me only 45 years!

C) I cannot choose a Christian movement for you.

The only thing I can tell you is not to let yourself fall asleep, because you will never wake up...

Some movements will say something like, "A little water and a cross on the forehead and then Heaven at the end of your life!" It would be so easy if it was like that! After such a beautiful ritual, everyone could put the money first and only care about themselves! **But it does not work like that!**

| 9-B | Some questions to ask to know if we are forking off from the Way of Christ

See also the 2 charts in article | 3-A |.

A) A small list:

1) Does the Christian movement use an unrecognized Bible (internationally)?

→ If so, you do not have the Word (the Gospels) of Jesus in your hands.

2) In the course of history, has the movement forged beliefs outside the Bible? See article | 2-B |.

→ If so, you do not have the same beliefs as Christ.

3) Does the movement have a ceremony or ritual in which it involves more than yourself?

→ You can only commit yourself to God by a promise.

→ As for him, God has only made one Promise. It is the 2nd Covenant accessible to every human being in particular. It is the {gift of the Holy Spirit} on earth and Eternal Life at the end of his mortal life. But this is conditional on following the Word of Jesus as his Master, rejecting evil in his life and belonging to God. **Otherwise, there is nothing at all.**

4) Do you receive gifts of God without feeling them in your body?

→ Impossible, the Holy Spirit is always a concrete Manifestation in your body. See article | 13-J |.

5) For the Christian movement, is the devil at your door?

→ It is not fear that will make you love God! God is Love.

6) Does the movement cost a fair amount of money?

→ Jesus was poor and had no money.

7) Do you have to do things you do not want to do?

→ God is only freedom. It is for this reason that God does not impose himself on earth and that humans do whatever evil they want. We need only think of the horror of World War II.

8) Do you feel respected, you and your family?

→ God is only respect.

9) Does the movement prohibit you from certain health care services?

→ God is the Lord of the living and not of the dead.

10) Does the Christian movement give you the {gift of the Holy Spirit}?

→ Impossible, the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is made by **God alone** to a particular person when he is ready to receive it and not before. I received it at 45 years old spontaneously at home and in the middle of the night and I did not know that it existed!

11) During mass, do not you understand half of what is said, because there are too many mysterious words?

→ The more mysterious words there are, the more people who pronounce them show you that in reality they do not understand much. So, it is not in a vague direction that you will achieve what Christ is asking you to do!

12) Are you eager to get out of the mass of a Christian movement?

→ So, what are you doing there? Our Creator is far from dull! There are many other Christian movements waiting for you to better meet your personal needs on the Way of Jesus. You must understand that a Christian remains a Christian. He must absolutely **belong to Christ directly** and not to any Christian movement.

B) Finally, I give you 3 passages from the Scripture that will make you think:

NT	St-John	10,16	"I have other sheep (1), which are not of this fold; I must bring them also, and they will hear My voice (2); and they will become one flock (3) <i>with</i> one shepherd (4).

(1): The 2nd Covenant is available to every human being in the world and not only to the Jews of the time.

(2): It is to recognize that Jesus Christ is the Son of God and to follow him.

(3): It is the {assembly of God's children}.

(4): It is Jesus Christ.

NT	St-Paul, Epistle to the Romans	8,9	...But if anyone does not have the Spirit of Christ, he does not belong to Him.

(*) One must have received the {gift of the Holy Spirit} in himself concretely to be a {God's child}.

NT	Paul, 1st Epistle to the Corinthians	3,16	Do you not know that you are a temple of God and <i>that</i> the Spirit of God dwells in you?

(*) One must have received the {gift of the Holy Spirit} in himself concretely to be a {God's child}.

If you have felt nothing of God, it is because you have received nothing from him!

|9-C| What is the true role of Christian movements?

See also article |3-A|.

NT	Acts of the Apostles	1,5	for John baptized with water (2), but you will be baptized with the Holy Spirit (1) not many days from now."

(1) Here is a translated excerpt from the footnote of the Bible (Jérusalem 1977, des Éditions du Cerf): "The baptism of the Spirit, already announced by John the Baptist, and here promised by Jesus, will be inaugurated by the outpouring of Pentecost. Then, according to the order of Christ, the apostles will continue to administer **the baptism of water as a rite of initiation** to God's kingdom."

(2) The holy apostles gave only a rite of initiation. So no Christian movement does more than that, too.

NT	St-Matthew	28,18-20	And Jesus came up and spoke to them, saying, "All authority has been given to Me in heaven and on earth (1). "Go therefore and make disciples of all the nations (2), baptizing them (3) in the name of the Father and the Son and the Holy Spirit, teaching them (4) to observe all that I commanded you (5); and lo, I am with you always, even to the end of the age." (6)

(1) It is Jesus who has all the powers and not humans.

(2) To announce the Good News of the Risen Jesus.

(3) To give a baptism of initiation.

(4) To teach and set an example.

(5) The 4 Gospels.

(6) The Presence of God on earth is done by the Holy Spirit.

In summary:

1) Christ has all the powers.
2) Christian movements only have an accompanying role: a) To teach the Gospels and to set an example. b) To give water baptism as a rite of Christian initiation. c) To help the followers in their preparation in order to receive the eventual Visit of the Holy Spirit.

|9-D| How to unlock in order to get his {birth of the Spirit}? The basics

Understand that if you have not had your {birth of the Spirit} yet, it is not that it does not exist, but rather that you are doing something that prevents you from getting it. If you do not look for the truth in your life, **it is over**.

Some basic questions to ask yourself:

- ° Is good agreement and mutual aid priority? Or your priorities are objects, power, money and success.
- ° Are you straight and honest? Are you looking for reality and truth in your life? Or personal benefits.
- ° Do you really have a kind heart? Or deep down, it is more about appearance.
- ° Do you really believe in God? Or rather it is a family tradition.
- ° Do you need God to help you direct your life? Or you want to manage it alone.
- ° Do you fulfill the promises of your Christian baptism?
- ° Do you know the Gospels enough to recite bits of sentences easily?
- ° In your life, do you try to conform to the teachings of the Gospels?

Unfortunately, no one can unlock without knowing a few home truths:

The majority of Christians and religious people want to make their little human religion alone without the concrete Presence of God in their lives. In this case, the Visit of the Holy Spirit is impossible. Their human precepts only take them away from what Christ is asking for in the Gospels. They only see what they want to see, deform to their advantage and put their followers to sleep. No one goes to Heaven dreaming! Look in the Gospels how the Word of Jesus is firm. With my Manifestations of the Spirit from chapter 13 , I can confirm you that the Gospels are real and not a dream! God really exists and Heaven is a Holy Place. No human being deserves to enter there! The majority of Christians want to go to Heaven because they are scared of death, not because they desire the Presence of God by their side and live in a place without any evil. For them, Christianity is a tradition or a passing therapy to dispel their worries and dream of a better world later that they do not even want to work on earth anyway. The majority of Christians will have the result of their work, Eternal Life will be for them only a dream!

|9-E| How to unlock in order to get his {birth of the Spirit}? Your commitment

A few questions:

1) In the world, are there several Christian movements? Or a single united movement...

NT	St-Paul, 1st Epistle to the Corinthians	1,12-13	Now I mean this, that each one of you is saying, "I am of Paul," and "I of Apollos," and "I of Cephas," and "I of Christ." Has Christ been divided? Paul was not crucified for you, was he? Or were you baptized in the name of Paul?

(*) See article |2-B|

2) Do Christian movements have the same beliefs? Have some of them moved away from the Gospels?

NT	St-Paul, Epistle to the Galatians	1,9	As we have said before, so I say again now, if any man is preaching to you a gospel contrary to what you received, he is to be accursed! (1)

(1) Accursed (or anathema) means: worthless, **which is excluded** from Christ. See article |4-A|.

3) Does each Christian belong to Christ directly or to his respective Christian movement?

NT	St-Paul, Epistle to the Romans	8,9	... But if anyone does not have the Spirit of Christ, he does not belong to Him.

(*) Obviously, St-Paul talks about the {gift of the Holy Spirit} or the {birth of the Spirit}.

4) For Christians, are sacred objects and rituals more important than belonging to Christ?

NT	St-Matthew	7,21	"Not everyone who says to Me, 'Lord, Lord,' will enter the kingdom of heaven, but he who does the will of My Father who is in heaven <i>will enter</i> ."

5) Where does the Spirit of God reside? Maybe at the back of the church in a small box!

NT	St-Paul, 1st Epistle to the Corinthians	3,16	Do you not know that you are a temple of God and that the Spirit of God dwells in you?

6) How to obtain the forgiveness of our sins? Perhaps by our sacrifices!

NT	St-Matthew	12,7	"But if you had known what this means, 'I desire compassion, and not a sacrifice,' ..."

7) Are you looking for the truth in your life? Or to obtain human benefits?

NT	St-Paul, Epistle to the Galatians	1,10	For am I now seeking the favor of men, or of God? Or am I striving to please men? If I were still trying to please men, I would not be a bond-servant of Christ.

8) Is the Christian religion your job?

You chose to do a religious training to help people and earn your bread. But this is not exceptional! There are many people who have chosen to do some training in teaching or nursing to help people and to earn their bread as well...

Suppose your parents would have been of a religion other than Christian. Would you still have been a religious person in this other religion? So maybe you have **the religious profile** like me I have the scientific profile...

It must be understood that the criteria for following the Way of Christ are the same for everyone. It is only that your work gives you more time to approach the Lord. I asked religious people who did not have their {birth of the Spirit}, if they gave (from the bottom of their hearts and without return) their life to God. They said, "No, you are talking about an idea!" So, I said to them, "God cannot take your life with him for his Kingdom if you do not give it to him, he is not a thief!"

9) For you, being a Christian is like a "drawer chest?"

Everything is so tidy in your head. Every week there are:

- ° 1 hour for God on Sunday mass;
- ° 40 hours of work to pay off his debts;
- ° 6 hours for shopping;
- ° 6 hours to listen to your favorite television shows;
- ° Etc.

So, God does not accompany you in your week. A little question like that. When someone talks to you about God, what do you do? You do not have time, the drawer is closed! Then, this famous drawer will become your "grave" because you do not have time to prepare yourself to receive the "Breath of Eternal Life" before closing it. It is your fault and not his! He has plenty of time for you.

10) Do you have too much to do to have time to think?

You know that a child is a small person whose parent is very important in his mind. At school, ask a 6-year-old girl, "Are you bored?" If she answers, "Yes!" Ask her about what. She will certainly answer you, "Mommy!"

In the same way, to become a {God's child} you must:

- ° To seek God;
- ° To meet him;
- ° To be born again;
- ° To get bored of him...

It is for this reason that a {God's child} has an eye in Heaven and an eye on earth at the same time. For a {God's child}, whatever he does in the week, the Lord is always near him!

NT	St-Matthew	18,2-3	And He (1) called a child to Himself and set him before them, and said, "Truly I say to you, unless you are converted and become like children, you will not enter the kingdom of heaven.

(1) Jesus.

11) Do you believe enough in God?

In reality, there are several levels within the meaning of the word "believe." I, before the beginning of my research on God in October 2015, thought that I believed in God. But I did not know that my level of belief was not enough. To get to your {birth of the Spirit}, you will have to see nature around you (animals, plants, etc.) really as the tangible work of God. It is his garden and his little beings. You will have to be convinced of the existence of God as much as that of your nose in your face! It is only that you have not met him yet. You will even have to believe enough not to be too surprised that an angel might really appear to you. **Yes, just that!** This step (to truly believe in God) is difficult to achieve because it is a "gift that God alone can give you." See chapter | 12 |.

In Christianity, the expression "to have faith" has many meanings. For most people, that means "believe." But in reality, it is more than that. The word "faith" means "commitment." To have faith means → to believe enough to commit oneself to the Way of Christ.

NT	Epistle of St-James	2,17	Even so faith, if it has no works, is dead, <i>being</i> by itself.

12) Are you in religion with God or in **relationship**?

Jesus reveals God as the Heavenly Father. God is immaterial and he reads directly into our heart. He does not want to have people crawling on all fours in front of him! No, he wants children!

Here is a proof...

OT	Ezekiel	2,2	As He (1) spoke to me (2) the Spirit entered me and set me on my feet (3); and I heard <i>Him</i> speaking to me.

(1) God.

(2) The prophet Ezekiel.

(3) God wants to be in a relationship with the person.

The shortest definition of the word religion is "the management of the sacred." Currently, this involves objects, clothing, images and rituals.

If you see God as a religion, it will be difficult to get your {birth of the Spirit}. **A religion is human!** I am not the only one to say it, even the Blessed Virgin said it during her Apparitions in Medjugorje. Basically, the Blessed Virgin said that Jesus is the Word that you must "**integrate into your life**" every day. It is for this reason that Jesus presents himself as the "living Word that must be eaten."

NT	St-John	6,57	"As the living Father sent Me, and I live because of the Father, so he who eats Me, he also will live because of Me.

Here are 3 very short verses, but that say a lot about what Jesus asks:

NT	Acts of the Apostles	2,41-42	So then, those (1) who had received his word (2) were baptized (3); and that day there were added about three thousand souls. They were continually devoting themselves to the apostles' teaching (4) and to fellowship (5), to the breaking of bread (6) and to prayer (7).

- 1) The early Christians.
- 2) They decide and open their mind to the Word of God.
- 3) They go into action and enter into the small community through the initiation of water baptism in the name of Jesus.
- 4) They are diligent and put the teachings of Jesus into practice every day (they make their conversion of the heart).
- 5) They are united, have a kind heart, forgive and help each other.
- 6) They commemorate the Sacrifice of Jesus. Jesus being the only Truth, the only Way, the only Life.
- 7) They ask the Lord for help and thank him for the graces granted.

From these 7 points, see how we have moved away from what Christ is asking. Then, you understand why the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is so rare!

Let's go further...

Read the Gospels carefully and you will see that Jesus is asking for more than a religion. He holds Eternal Life, and the only way to have it in your turn is to mix your human life with his own. **It is not anything!** It is why God sends the Intercessor (the Holy Spirit). It is because humanly, we are too weak to reach the necessary by ourselves!

13) Are you superstitious? No, are you really so sure?

To go further, see chapters | 16 and 18 |.

There is often a close relationship between rituals and being superstitious. People who are superstitious like mysterious objects and their powers...

- ° Do you think that the Spirit of God is in an object?
- ° Are the devil and demons really tangible?
- ° Do you talk more about the devil than about God?
- ° Do you believe in ghosts?
- ° Do you have great fears?
- ° Do rituals allow you to feel safe?

It is important to know that many people practice a religion in order to be secure within themselves. For this reason, some even make religion their profession.

Is it necessary for me to repeat that the Lord wants **a conversion of the heart and a relationship**? He does not want to be a guru with his followers to mysterious objects! God is immaterial, objects and large gestures do not interest him.

NT	Epistles to the Hebrews	10,15-16	And the Holy Spirit also testifies to us; for after saying: "This is the Covenant that I will make with them after those days, says the Lord: I will put my Laws upon their heart, and on their mind I will write them, "

14) What is the cross?

a) To carry his cross.

There are many Christian movements which believe that it is necessary to suffer a lot to follow the Way of Christ. It is true that the expression "to bear his cross" is written in the Gospels. Except that you have to put yourself in context. At the time of the evangelists, the early Christians were martyred in spite of themselves by the Romans.

But now, the Roman Empire no longer exists and Christianity is the largest religion in the world. So, we have to update ourselves a bit!

NT	St-Matthew	10.14	"Whoever does not receive you, nor heed your words, as you go out of that house or that city, shake the dust off your feet. (1)
		10.23	"But whenever they persecute you in one city, flee to the next (2) ...

(1) In the past, how many Christians have lost their faith because religious people have imposed Christianity.

(2) How many religious people have been martyred needlessly to defend their building rather than run away.

So, what does it mean "to carry his cross?" It is simply when someone chooses to do good on earth, it is obvious that other people who have not made the same choice will give him some misery. So, we must continue to move forward without becoming bitter. We must forgive. It is necessary to remain good in spite of everything with the example of Christ. See article | 12-E |.

b) The cross, an important symbol.

Furthermore, I point out to you that worshipping a cross is not in the Gospels. The Lord was not in admiration before his cross, he died on it! On the other hand, the cross is a symbol of shame for humanity. It represents our madness and our rejection of our own Creator! Through this symbol, a Christian must recognize his own wickedness and see where it leads! Subsequently, this symbol makes it possible to bring forth the desire of the conversion of the heart to obtain the Forgiveness of God.

15) Did a Christian movement put you to sleep?

You were baptized then for what to make an effort! Everyone on the bus to Heaven! See article | 1-B |. I closed my eyes for 45 years. It would have been possible that I never open them again...

16) Are you really Christian?

Do you know the message that the Blessed Virgin gave to a Christian crowd during one of her Apparitions at Lourde? See article | 6-K |. She said just one word, "**Repentance!**"

But a word that tells us a lot...

NT	Acts of the Apostles	2,38	Peter <i>said</i> to them, " Repent (1), and each of you be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of your sins; and you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit.

(1) Here St-Peter talks to non-Christians.

Repentance is the beginning, it is the desire to take charge of your own life. It is only afterwards that the person can take a first step on the Way of internal conversion requested by Christ.

In reality, the Blessed Virgin simply telling the people of the crowd (yet baptized) that they have not even taken a step yet! Yes, they do ceremonies and rituals, but that is it. Repentance is not there and the conversion of the heart is even less so. To show you that I am not wrong, the authorities (yet Christian) tried to lock Bernadette (just 14 years old) in a madhouse!

NT	St-Matthew	7,18-19	"A good tree cannot produce bad fruit, nor can a bad tree produce good fruit. "Every tree that does not bear good fruit is cut down and thrown into the fire.
		15,8-9	"This people honors me with their lips. But their heart is far away from me. But in vain do they worship me, teachings as doctrines the precepts of men."

(*) Every Christian who has not yet had his {birth of the Spirit} should ask himself serious questions.

|9-F| How to unlock in order to get his {birth of the Spirit}? Your head and your heart

A) Intellectualization.

It is easy to intellectualize the texts of the Bible. These texts are mysterious and therefore stimulating. It is even possible to study the Bible in every little detail for years. **But Jesus asks to pass his Word from head to heart** and not to be an absolute specialist of the Scriptures.

B) Not to confront human malice.

To make a small world to oneself, well protected from the wickedness of our society, does not help to obtain our {birth of the Spirit}. In reality, the suffering and evil that humans do on earth is "the stepladder of the heart" to cry out to God and take his hand, "Lord, come and help me, I need you in my life!"

C) To be scared of the reality of God.

Talking about the Holy Spirit like that is very interesting and captivating. **It is not disturbing as long as He does not really appear!** We do not want to be seen as crazy, are we? Humans love human praise, they do not like being perceived as an illuminated person...

The difficulty is God! God is neither human nor material. Jesus says of his Father that he is Spirit (Wind). So, how to pray "the true God who is Spirit" when we are scared that he really appears to us!

→ In reality, in order to become a {God's child}, God must be Present!

→ ***You just have to trust, because God is our Creator. When you meet him, you will see that he is a Love! See article |13-D|.***

D) To be scared of the devil.

Surely you have heard about the idea that if we come near God, the devil is approaching at the same time. Well, this idea is absurd!

In chapter |18|, we will discover that the devil does not exist as: "a supernatural being of Evil."

However, let's not go too fast with a simplistic conclusion. The devil really exists as: "a fundamental concept in our head, our natural fear of death." It is for this reason that the devil is so present in the Scriptures of the Bible. The devil is "**the personalization of a reality of our psyche**" that is natural and necessary for everyone to defend themselves and stay alive.

It is for this reason that a "supernatural being of Evil" is much talk about in Christianity as in many other religions besides. This is because the fear of death is natural for every human being.

The real difficulty is superstition. It is scary and it is very morally exhausting. Then the brain, being alert of a possible danger that it cannot concretely identify, can create us the idea of the devil to make us flee.

→ I can assure you that you can approach God without any fear!

E) To remember:

- 1) When we want to become a {God's child}, we must accept one day to have the Visit of the Holy Spirit for real.
- 2) To go to Heaven, a Christian must take charge of his own life and not rely solely on a Christian movement, for it has only the responsibility to accompany you.
- 3) Do not play with your fears and superstitions. I invite you to read article |16-D|.

|9-G| Why does God perform miracles?

- 1) I give you a first example:

Imagine a father supervising his young child trying to ride a bicycle in his yard. Tell me when does the father put his hand on the back of the child? Yes, when the child needs help because he is going to fall.

→ Miracles are to support the faith of Christians when it weakens.

- 2) I give you a second example:

To make this book, I had a dozen Manifestations of the Holy Spirit. I realized that the Manifestations stop only when I understood the Message. From there, the Holy Spirit lets me work alone. If he sees that I need help again, he intervenes a second time, otherwise, he does nothing.

→ Miracles are also destined for the organization of the Christian movement itself in order to question itself and seek the Truth.

|9-H| Just one Way of Life (Jesus Christ) for everyone

Stay close to the Word (Jesus) only, for he is the Resurrection and the Life. **You can be in touch with God even from your home.** The only Person who will come to you for real is the Holy Spirit when you will be ready, but not before. God loves you and you have the right to live on earth in peace, respect for others and for yourself. God is already there beside you now and waiting for you **whether you are Christian or not**. It is simply a matter of removing your selfishness and opening your heart to him. It is so little to receive so much!

| 10 | God and {God's children}

Here, I discuss some important concepts from my synthesis work between the Scriptures (the Bible) and my dozen Manifestations of the Holy Spirit from chapter | 13 |. This introduction allows the reader to obtain a sufficient basis to face in a more rational way the mystery of the Holy Trinity and the different Manifestations (Messages, Visions, Apparitions, etc.).

For readers who only want the foundations for the {birth of the Spirit}, see article | 15-G |. For those who want to go further, chapters | 30 to 35 | will enrich this chapter | 10 |.

A) The Holy Trinity.

God presents himself to humans as one individual, but composed of 3 Persons. The 3 Persons are so united that they form together only one God.

There is:

- ° The Father;
- ° The Son;
- ° The Holy Spirit.

They compose the Holy Trinity.

The word Holy is the qualifier of God. Only God is Holy (without any evil).

We could make a small comparison with our hand. We have 5 fingers, but they are the fingers of one hand.

B) A {God's child}.

The process used by God to make a {God's child} from a human being has always been rather mysterious. See article | 15-G |. The problem resides in the fact that God is (eternal, immaterial) and that the human being is (mortal, material).

In order to elucidate this mystery as much as possible, we must strive to better understand the reality of God and that of the support of human life.

We have seen in point F) of article | 3-D | that there are 3 ways to see the support of life of the human being.

1) The old point of view of the Greeks.

Since it is false, it will not be used.

2) The old point of view of the Jews.

It is very useful for understanding the Bible.

In chapter | 35 |, I use this old point of view to present a basic summary of the mechanism of the {birth of the Spirit}. This old point of view is less realistic than the modern point of view used in chapter | 30 |. On the other hand, this old point of view is easier to understand.

3) A modern point of view (since the 1900s).

This is the method used here in this book because it helps to elucidate the most mysteries.

Let's go!

|10-A| The Holy Spirit, a mystery for many people...

See also article |8-F|.

A) Why is it so difficult to define the Holy Spirit?

This is because many people teach and write about the Holy Spirit and do not even know they have not received him in them! They have not experienced him and do not even know that the Holy Spirit is always a concrete Manifestation. So, they stir up learned words that others have written and they mix up a lot of people with all that...

B) In the Bible, why is the Holy Spirit so mysterious?

In the Scriptures, we see the Holy Spirit primarily through the eyes of the 4 evangelists and St-Paul. It is true that the idea of the Holy Spirit is foggy. Why did not they write more clearly?

Here are some probable reasons:

- 1) The mystery has always been fascinating. It is a natural driving force for humans. To solve the mystery, we must look for the answers. This work changes our mentality and moves us forward.
- 2) In the image of the parables of Jesus (difficult to understand), set aside those who do not want to make an effort to understand so that they do not harm the apostles.
- 3) The level of science was low at the time. The current logical and rigorous thought did not exist.
- 4) The Scriptures were made so that only those who have had their {birth of the Spirit} understand the mystery. This allowed people who did not understand asking for help from those who received it. **As I am doing right now for you in this book.**
- 5) The mysterious form of the Scriptures has allowed them to pass through time until now. Fortunately in the course of history, since humans (alone without the Holy Spirit) do not have the ability to understand the mystery, they no longer had the ability to modify it. So, we currently have Scriptures of very sufficient quality. See article |15-E|.

Now, I am going to take away some of the mystery. In fact, it is easier than we think!

|10-B| The least known Person

As I said, there are 3 Persons. But logically, they should be rather indicated in this order:

- ° The Father;
- ° The Holy Spirit;
- ° The Son.

You will understand later...

In Christianity, it is common to say that the Holy Spirit is the least known Person of God.

This is really strange! In reality, it is the Person who should be the best known...

I have never met the Son or even the Father. On the other hand, the Holy Spirit is the only one who has come to me more than a dozen times.

In reality:

It is through the Gospels that we know the Son.

It is through the Revelations of the Son that we know the Father.

It is when the Holy Spirit Presents himself to us that the Word of the Son becomes alive and real.

So, if many Christians do not know who the Holy Spirit is, it is because they have not met him yet.

This is what St-Paul said:

NT	St-Paul, Epistles to the Romans	8,9	... But if anyone does not have the Spirit of Christ, he does not belong to Him.

| 10-C | A basic image of God in 3 Persons

A) If we associate the person with his function:

1) The Father is: the Eternal; Foundation; Perfection; Love; Goodness; Source.

→ The Father is **God who is the Source of Existence**.

2) The Holy Spirit or simply the Spirit is: the Breath of Eternal Life of God.

The Holy Spirit is the Vital Power that comes out of the Father.

The Holy Spirit is also the link of Unity (the cohesion) of God.

For those who want to go further. We will see in articles | 30-G and 32-J | :

In the Kingdom of God, it is this vital power that feeds all the living beings.
In short, the Holy Spirit is the **Carrier** of Eternal Life, even on earth.

→ The Holy Spirit is **God who is the Union of Life**.

3) Now, let's go for the Son...

Although Jesus Christ passed on earth, it is the Person of the Son who is the most difficult to understand. How does he can be the Son of a timeless or eternal God? The word Son means "to be begotten of." This involves time, then the Father and then the Son. So, we are faced with a big mystery. As this book aims to clarify the mysteries, we must think a little to find a satisfactory explanation.

Note:

For readers who want to go further, the full meaning of the Son will be addressed only in article | 32-K | . In summary, Jesus calls himself the Son, because he is the one who connects man to God. He is the only Son of God who allows a human being to become {a son or a daughter of God}.

But for the moment, let's not burn the steps, let's build slowly...

Reading the Gospels, Jesus is called "master," which means teacher. He says he is the only Way to Eternal Life. At the beginning of his mission, he calls himself the "Son of man." Subsequently, he is revealed as the "Son of God" or the "Word of God." Now, in the days of Jesus, what did every son do? He learned from his father a trade and humbly received instruction.

If we rephrase in one sentence:

Jesus is the teacher with the humility of taking the human condition (Son of man) so that the human being, by taking his Way, may become {a son or a daughter of God}. On his Way, a human being goes from a man's child to a God's child. It is about letting yourself be led with confidence.

Now back to the Person of the Son...

The Son is: the Word, the Master or the Teacher.

→ The Son is **God who Educates**.

At the end of his mission, Jesus goes so far as to die to give an example of what he teaches. Is there a bigger teacher than him?

B) If God is compared to human communication:

1) The Father is the Will. 2) The Holy Spirit is the Breath. 3) The Son is the Word.

C) If God is compared to a human being:

Humanly, it is obvious that I am not able to read in the mind of a person (interior). By cons, I can understand the mind of a person if I listen to him (exterior). I draw a parallel here:

1) The Father is the Interior of God or the Existence.

3) The Son is the Exterior of God or the Word.

2) The Holy Spirit is the Union of Life of God. He is the Union between the Interior and the Exterior.

D) If God is compared to a school:

1) The Father represents the **director** of the building.

2) The Holy Spirit represents (**the carrier**). The **bus driver** is the link between house and school.

3) The Son represents the **teacher**.

E) To arouse the reader's curiosity....

I give you a little bonus. We will see in article |30-G| that God is more than an individual as we can imagine. He is a complete whole, both (the Self) and (the Other) forming (the We).

If we make a concordance with the first 4 personal pronouns:

First-person singular	I	The Father	The Self	The interior
Second-person singular	You	The Son	The Other	The exterior
Third-person singular	He	The Holy Spirit	The one who Unites	The cohesion
First person plural	We	God	The <u>Unity</u> of the <u>Self</u> and the <u>Other</u> forming only One God	The whole

Some Christians have even thought that the Holy Spirit is the "We." This is because they do not differentiate between:

1) The Holy Spirit who is a Person. He is the Unity, the Link, the Carrier (Wind or Breath).

And...

2) The {gift of the Holy Spirit} or the {birth of the Spirit} which is a **Manifestation** involving the **3 Persons** of God. It is the **Glorious Breath** of the **Eternal**. 1) The **Eternal** is the Father. 2) The **Breath** is the Holy Spirit. 3) The **Glorious** is the Son. See article |10-I|.

|10-D| The world of humans and the World of God

To go further in the search for the Holy Trinity of God, we must define the 2 world/Word.

But before, I have to talk about the concept of **good and evil**.

A) Good and evil.

1) What is good and evil? Do you know that? Yes! Are you so sure about that?

The problem is that we differentiate between **good and evil** through established criteria. Let it be criteria of the society in which we live. Let it be religious criteria. But these criteria have always been redefined according to the times.

Examples:

About 1300 B.C.	God gave Moses the 2 Tables of Law. These are the 10 Commandments.
From the 10 Commandments.	The Pharisees of the time of Jesus had made more than 600 rules.
In the year 0030.	Jesus simplified all this in one sentence: "To love God and others as oneself."
In the year 1995.	The Civil Code of Québec contains more than 3,000 articles.

2) In reality, there is only God who has **Absolute Knowledge** in order to make the difference between **good and evil**.

We only "think that" according to the criteria learned during our education.

On earth, our human life is autonomous (biological) and not united to God. Then, all the possibilities of action of good and all the possibilities of action of evil are inevitable. Since Eternity, God has made his own choice of good only. Now, he asks every human being on earth to make his own choice. Those who make the same choice as him will be called "God's children." Those who do not make the same choice will not have this favor.

It is for this reason that it is said, "In the Kingdom of God, we will do only the Will of God."

It is obvious! In this place, there are only the possibilities of action of good, so it will not be difficult to do...

B) What is most important to get his {birth of the Spirit}?

Becoming a "God's child" means everything...

To take the existence of God seriously.	It is impossible to go in one direction without firmly believing it. A child has confidence in his parents.
To make your conversion of the heart.	God is without evil, so his child must make the same choice. It is necessary to make efforts.
To belong to God.	A child belongs to his parents and has access to his home. God cannot share his Life (the Holy Spirit) with us if we do not share our life with him. Subsequently, the Holy Spirit gives the necessary qualities to the person in order to do the least possible evil.

To go further, see chapter | 12 |.

Now, let's define the 2 world/World...

C) The world of humans is:

- ° Material;
- ° Temporal;
- ° Deadly;
- ° Individual.

It is a world totally free of experimentation. The human being has an individual life form (biological) without God, hence its total freedom of choice. The human being can do anything he wants even atrocious things. This temporal world is limited (temporary) because evil is possible and God does not eternally finance the life of those who do evil. The human being is responsible for the evil he does and he receives no evil supernatural influence. Satan is a symbol. The devil is not a supernatural being. The devil is the psychic personification of our fear of dying. To go further, see chapter | 18 |.

Why is our world temporal and limited?

This is because it is possible to do evil on earth and God only allows it "temporarily."

Our entire universe functions as an "hourglass" or a "battery" that God has given us. There is always a full container that empties into another until it is exhausted.

I give you 3 examples:

- 1) A waterfall is a reservoir that flows to a lower basin.
- 2) Our Sun is slowly consuming itself to heat Earth and will eventually run out in 5 billion years.
- 3) The energy of the "Big Bang" flows into the void of space until its total cooling.

D) The World of God is:

- ° Immaterial;
- ° Timeless;
- ° Eternal;
- ° Unified.

This World is filtered by God. Unlike our world on earth, all the possibilities for action of evil are absent. In this World, all beings live in the perfect Unity (without any evil) of God. It is a World where beings are so United that they all share the same "Breath of Life of God." It is a World where death and suffering do not exist, because the choice of evil does not exist either. In this World, all beings have their own personality and are free to do whatever they want in the possibilities of good.

E) Similar characteristics between the 2 world/World.

God being the Creator of our world (our universe), we find similar characteristics of his World in ours.

Examples:

- 1) In physics, we know that the laws that govern our universe are **perfect**.
- 2) In physics, we know that by nuclear combustion, it is possible to make matter disappear in the **non-material form** (energy, heat, light, radiation).
- 3) In physics, we know that Earth spins on a **perfect and lossless** imaginary axis around Sun in an empty space for almost an **eternity** (billions of years).
- 4) Through ecology, we know that the atmosphere, animals, plants, insects and bacteria are all **perfectly united** on Earth in an **endless cycle of life** (billions of years) as long as the Sun is shining.

F) Why is the World of God timeless?

God presented Himself to man under the Name of Yahweh. His Name means "past, present, future." God is the **Eternal**. Since eternity has no beginning and no end, then there is no time between the 2 either.

| 10-E | Who is the Holy Spirit?

Look closely at the characteristics of the 2 world/World of article | 10-D | and you will understand that they cannot touch each other. They are completely sealed and separated from each other. So, it takes a means of communication between the 2 world/World. It takes a means of exchange or transfer.

This means of transfer is the Holy Spirit! Everything goes through him...

A) Then, who is the Holy Spirit?

In one sentence, the Holy Spirit is the "**Living Unity**" or the "**Living Bridge**" connecting the 2 world/Word.

1) In the World of God, the Holy Spirit is the "Breath of Life of God" shared among all.

2) In our world on earth. As we cannot feel the immaterial reality of God, the Holy Spirit makes for us Manifestations adapted to our condition of biological life to convey the "Message of the World of God" here.

Even the Son came to earth (the Incarnation) through the **Carrier**, the Holy Spirit.

NT	St-Luke	1.34-35	Mary said to the angel, "How can this be, since I am a virgin?" The angel answered and said to her, "The Holy Spirit will come upon you, and the power of the Most High will overshadow you; and for that reason the holy Child shall be called the Son of God.

The Holy Spirit has the Power to make the apostle Philip disappear in one place and reappear in another place.

NT	Acts of the Apostles	8,38-40	And he ordered the chariot to stop; and they both went down into the water, Philip as well as the eunuch, and he baptized him. When they came up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord snatched Philip away; and the eunuch no longer saw him , but went on his way rejoicing. But Philip found himself at Azotus , and as he passed through he kept preaching the gospel to all the cities until he came to Caesarea.

3A) In the Bible, another name is given to the Holy Spirit → **the Paraclete**. This word means "protector, intercessor, and comforter." In Greek language, Paraclete means: "He who is called to his rescue." We can see that on earth, the Holy Spirit is the **Link** between God and every human being who asks for him.

3B) In (St-John: 4,24), Jesus qualifies God as a "**Spirit**." In (St-John: 6,63), Jesus states that it is the spirit that gives life and that the flesh (the body) is of no use. In (St-John: 3,6), Jesus says that what is born of the Spirit is spirit. The Spirit is "God the parent" and the spirit is "the child of God" of (St-John: 1,12).

4) On earth, Jesus was the "Human Presence of God" → therefore a presence external to us. Concretely during our {birth of the Spirit}, the Holy Spirit is the "Spiritual Presence of God in ourselves" → therefore an inner presence to us.

5) Through the {birth of the Spirit}, the union or link is established between God and the person here on earth. It is a union in which God shares his Life with the person who also shares his life. That is why it is necessary to give him our life.

6) In chapters |30 and 35|, I will define in more detail the {birth of the Spirit}.

|10-F| 2 forms of life

In this article, I will only talk about the basics. To go further, see chapter |30|.

A) As there are 2 world/World, there are also 2 forms of life.

1) The biological or mortal life form on earth.

It is our "**human or biological body**" that we know very well.

2) The form of Eternal Life in the Kingdom of God.

The qualifier of the word spirit being spiritual, St-Paul simply gives it the name of "**spiritual body**."

B) The Holy Spirit allows the transfer of life forms from one world to another in both directions:

The Incarnation.	The Holy Spirit transfers the Son of God from the Kingdom to earth (Jesus).
The mission.	Jesus orders healings and miracles. The Holy Spirit acts.
The Apparitions of the Risen Jesus.	The Holy Spirit gives a "Special Body" to Jesus 3 days after his death on the cross.
The Glorification of Jesus.	The Holy Spirit returns the Risen Jesus to his Father. This is the end of the mission of Jesus.

C) In the Kingdom.

The Father rewards the Son for the injustice of his death while he has committed no evil. The Father allows the Son to give the "Breath of Life" to his disciples in order to make them {God's children} and bring them into the Kingdom after their pilgrimage on earth.

D) For humans.

It is through the {birth of the Spirit} that a person knows that Eternal Life has been granted to him and that he is now a {God's child}.

For the resurrection mode of the human being, see chapters | 30 and 35 |.

| 10-G | What is the form of life in the World of God?

Personally, I have not seen any Apparition until now. However, there are people who have seen it.

The Apparitions of the Blessed Virgin Mary are described with "splendor." See chapter | 6 |.

It is said that angels have a "luminous human body."

It is said that Jesus had a "Resurrected Body without limits" and that he passed through the walls.

It is said that we will live in the Presence (Glory) of God. With the same feeling of "happiness and peace" as during the {birth of the Spirit}, but this time forever. See article | 13-D |.

The same words always come back: "human; immaterial; luminous; splendor; without limits; happiness and peace."

This will make a big positive change with our human condition!

| 10-H | How does the Holy Spirit operate between the 2 world/World?

Never will a human being know it and that's fine! Let our Creator do his work and we do ours...

To be sure you understand well. On earth, the Holy Spirit always makes real Manifestations adapted to our world **to put us in touch with** the World of God.

I give some examples from chapter | 6 |.

A) Outside of us:

The Manifestation	The message...
The miracle of a host that changes into flesh and blood.	The Memorial of the sacrifice of the body of Jesus on the cross.
The miracle of a host that is levitating over the paten.	Levitation is the sign of a divinity. Jesus is the Son of God.
The miracle of a saint who died and who is incorruptible even after hundreds of years.	God is the Eternal. In (St-John: 11,25), Jesus says, "I am the resurrection, who believes in me, even if he dies, will live."

B) Inside us:

The Manifestation	The message...
Put a message directly in our brain as in an Apparition, a Vision, a Perfume.	God shows us that He is the Supreme Consciousness. There is nothing impossible for him.
The {birth of the Spirit}.	It is the bond of unity between God and the person on earth. To go further, see chapter 30 .

|10-I| Concretely, how is the {gift of the Holy Spirit} made?

Some Christian movements will tell you that it is through your Christian baptism. Others will tell you that it is when you believe in God. Others will tell you that it is by the sign of "speaking in tongues." See article |27-C|.

People have mixed everything up so much that the Lord made me a special Manifestation to confirm this subject.

→ It is only through the {birth of the Spirit} that I describe you. Nothing else!

When St-John says that you must "believe" to go to the Kingdom of God, read his texts carefully and you will see that the word "believe" is a bundle of things. Not only: "I think." If you do everything in his famous word "believe," you will have your {birth of the Spirit} in a short period of time. In brief, the word "believe" of St-John is all the things you need to do in order for Jesus to give you your {birth of the Spirit}.

Some people will say, "If the Holy Spirit gives me a Manifestation like feeling a Perfume in my head, it is because the Holy Spirit is already in my head, so I have received it!" **No.** You must understand that God is everywhere around us and even through our human body. God does not come in or out of a place. God is immaterial and you cannot feel him. On the other hand, God can do all the physical and biological Manifestations that he wants. Manifestations on earth are (biological or physical) because the human being is (biological and physical). In fact, to go to the Kingdom of God, you need only one particular Manifestation, that of your {birth of the Spirit}. Even if you had "Visions" and "Apparitions," it does not change anything! **One Manifestation does not replace another.**

I give you a little revelation from chapter |30|. A person cannot go into a world without having a suitable body to go there. It is simple!

The {birth of the Spirit} is a particular Manifestation to be mixed with no other. See article |13-D|.

A) Briefly:

The {birth of the Spirit} is always done by: "the Breath of the Presence of God which is really long in your nostrils."			
This Breath is really long because it is the Breath of the Eternal (God). This Breath is wonderful because God shows you his Glory. This Breath completely fills the inside of your body. Afterwards, it gives you the feeling that your chest is dilating a bit because the Breath of Life has filled your heart and you are now a temple of God. This Breath brings you to a new life.			
The 3 Persons of God are in this "Breath that gives the birth from above." To go further, see article 30-G . It is the Glorious Breath of the Eternal . 1) The Eternal is the Father. 2) The Breath is the Holy Spirit. 3) The Glorious is the Son.			

This Breath of Life is in the image of the narrative of the birth of Adam in the book of Genesis.

OT	Genesis	2,7	Then the LORD God formed man of dust from the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living being.

St-Paul says that the person then becomes a new creation. Following the Firstborn, Jesus Christ, Son of God.

NT	Epistle of St-Paul to the Colossians	1,15	He (Jesus Christ) is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of all creation.

For a complete description, see the narrative of my {birth of the Spirit} in article |13-D|. Subsequently, see article |13-O| for the Lord's Manifestation to confirm the message.

B) Do not mix up the Holy Spirit with the {gift of the Holy Spirit}.

It is preferable to read article |8-F| again.

During the {gift of the Holy Spirit} or the {birth of the Spirit}, the Holy Spirit is Present, but he is not alone...

NT	St-John	14,23	Jesus answered and said to him, "If anyone loves Me, he will keep My word; and My Father will love him, and We will come to him and make <u>Our</u> abode with him.

I repeat...

The 3 Persons of God are in this "Breath that gives the birth from above." To go further, see article 30-G . It is the Glorious Breath of the Eternal . 1) The Eternal is the Father. 2) The Breath is the Holy Spirit. 3) The Glorious is the Son.

Many Christians are confused. For them, the Holy Spirit does everything. They say that the Holy Spirit is the Love of God. They say that the gifts (patience, charity, etc.) come from the Holy Spirit.

This simplistic vision is not realistic. This is the equivalent of not making the difference between the cooks and the delivery man of a restaurant. The cooks prepare food. The delivery man comes to bring you food.

The Holy Spirit is the Breath. If you will, he is the **Carrier** of all the graces.

→ In this Breath, this **Love** is that of the **Father**.

→ In this Breath, these **gifts** are those of the **Son**. Jesus shares with us his gifts (of patience, charity, etc.) that he had during his mission on earth 2,000 years ago.

C) Warning.

It is very important to understand that a person can have "Visions, Messages, Apparitions" when he has not had his {birth of the Spirit} yet. In order to prove it to you, St-Paul (also called Saul) had an Apparition of the Son of God while he was going to persecute the disciples of Jesus...

NT	Acts of the Apostles	22,6-8	"But it happened that as I was on my way, approaching Damascus about noontime, a very bright light suddenly flashed from heaven all around me, and I fell to the ground and heard a voice saying to me, 'Saul, Saul, why are you persecuting Me?' "And I answered, 'Who are You, Lord?' And He said to me, 'I am Jesus the Nazarene, whom you are persecuting.'

|10-J| A Person of God in me?

Now, for the reader who says to himself, "Since the Holy Spirit is a Person of God, will I be haunted by this Person if he enters me?"

No, I think you have been watching too many movies on TV....

Does your human breath in your nostrils haunt you? Does the biological life of your human body haunt you? **No, well it is the same thing!**

Come on, do not be scared, God is our Creator, we cannot be in better hands!

In reality, every Christian must prepare to receive the **Visit** of the Holy Spirit.

The Holy Spirit is the Person of God who comes to deposit into you a Gift, **the Eternal Life**. Subsequently, the Holy Spirit leaves, he has many other things to do.

From there, you are a {God's child} and heir to his Kingdom. If you ask "something righteous in the eyes of your Heavenly Father," he will send the "delivery truck" (the Holy Spirit) to give it to you on earth. Then, you will feel his return as a Wind. His name is Spirit, which means Wind in the Greek language. He will then present himself to you as a "pleasant wind!" You may be a bit surprised, but do not be scared of our Creator...

It is important to know that the Holy Spirit is the **Breath** of God and not the Word of God (the Son), so the **Holy Spirit does not speak!** It is for this reason that one must seek in the Word (the Gospels) to understand the Message he is making.

The Holy Spirit is our "Intercessor" and can bring us many things: comfort; the feeling that God loves us; the feeling that we are not alone with our miseries. You can even get miracles for yourself or others. Then you will see, I do not make promises for God.

While watching testimonials on the Internet, I could catch a glimpse of something surprising. Sometimes I get the impression that people who were sick then were healed when the Breath of Life of God came into them. I saw the testimony of a person with AIDS who was healed and who even got married and whose wife had two very healthy children. I saw the testimony of a schizophrenic (who believed himself to be haunted by the devil) and who was healed when the **Light** of the Holy Spirit came into him! So if you have a health problem right now, you may be lucky that the Holy Spirit heals you at the same time. **That will make 2 gifts!**

I am in good health. I can tell you that my health is not better after my {birth of the Spirit} than before. So, I ask the Lord only to feel his Presence when I miss him and the {inspiration} for his book. Usually, after a request, the Lord makes me a little Manifestation in a short period of time. The "Heaven delivery service" is very good. I told him that he can give me all the Manifestations he wants without any problem and that he does not need my permission. After more than a dozen Manifestations, I am not really surprised when the Holy Spirit arrives. It is rather the meaning of the Message that requires several hours of work. Sometimes I have to refer to my other Manifestations to understand.

On the other hand, it is true that I had a healing at the beginning of October 2016. It is a request that I made to the Lord in order to write his book. Working on a computer screen for a long period of time gives me a tired neck. Since I had a dislocated vertebra in my neck, I had a lot of difficulty doing exercises to remove this fatigue. If you want to read more, see article |13-R|.

You see the love of our Creator for us. So, why would you do without him? He is here nearby you and waiting for you now! It is not his love that is the problem, but our human selfishness...

|10-K| Apparitions, Visions, Messages...

I have had several types of Manifestations. The most important are described in chapter |13|. Sometimes the Lord gives me a "flash" of 5 seconds after a prayer. Sometimes I ask myself a question, and immediately after, the Lord makes a deep feeling appear in me, but there is no word. An important point is that Messages are always very short. On the other hand, they are very rich in meaning.

In short, the only thing I miss is an Apparition. It should be known that Apparitions are usually intended for young people; or to people who do not know the Gospels; or to make a Message that is not related to the Gospels. For example, if God wants a small chapel in one place, it is obvious that it will take a Messenger to say it and some miracles for the incredulous people. Usually the Lord sends the Blessed Virgin for this work...

As far as I am concerned, I give you the big points:

- 1) I had my {birth of the Spirit} at night. See article |13-D|.
- 2) I had twice a {memorial of the communion with Christ} during the Eucharist on Sunday. See article |13-G|.
- 3) If I am missing an important piece of information for this book, the Holy Spirit comes a few minutes especially at night around 3 o'clock to make me a Message. This is not a joke, the Lord really likes the number 3! Basically, he makes me live an experience and then I have to find the Message for myself. At first, I was looking on the Internet for

quick explanations and I realized that they were even more confused than me. In reality, it is only when I look in the Bible that I find the answers. If I do not understand the Message enough, the Holy Spirit comes back and gives me another experience. It is only when my understanding is sufficient that the Manifestations stop.

Attention, I repeat...

The Holy Spirit does not speak. He is a Wind or a Breath. To understand his Messages, you must study the Gospels (the Word of God).

A) What's going on for a Vision?

As I said in article | 10-F |, there are 2 forms of life:

- 1) The biological or mortal life form on earth. It is the **human body**.
- 2) The form of Eternal Life in the Kingdom of God. It is the **spiritual body**.

The Holy Spirit is the "Living Bridge" or the "Communication" between the 2 world/World.

For example, Old Testament prophets often had visions. In science, we know the principle of telecommunication. I will apply it here:

- 1) First of all, in the Kingdom, the Son of God (the Word) gives the Message.
 - 2) Subsequently, the Holy Spirit establishes the "Communication" on earth through a biological Manifestation directly in the brain of the prophet.
 - 3) Finally, the prophet lives the Vision and must extract its meaning.
- For a good example, see article | 22-D |.

B) What happens for an Apparition?

It is similar to a Vision except this time the Messenger (example: the Blessed Virgin) speaks in front of you.

I give you an example:

Here is an excerpt from article | 6-K |:

Bernadette is then surprised by a noise, like a gust of **wind** [...] Afterwards, Bernadette looks up and the Beautiful Lady is there! She is smiling and does not speak...

(*) This **Wind** is the Presence of the 3rd Person of God (the Holy Spirit) who says, "Hello, I Am here!"

As I said earlier, the Holy Spirit is the Breath of God. **The Holy Spirit does not speak.** He presents himself mainly as a Wind or a Breath. Here, it is the Holy Spirit who **brings** the Blessed Virgin to Bernadette. Thereafter, it is the Blessed Virgin who **speaks**. The Holy Spirit allows Communication between the spiritual body of the Blessed Virgin and the human body of Bernadette. To go further, see article | 32-J |.

Note:

Personally, I wondered for a long time why the Holy Spirit does not speak. The answer is simple, the role of the Holy Spirit is the **Union**.

C) Why a direct biological Manifestation in the brain of the person?

Imagine that the Lord would give you a real and physical message in front of you as you would like to see it. What will he show you? A flash of light to blind you and make you lose the retina of your eyes! Fire to burn your skin like a sausage! Nuclear power to pulverize your body! So we must be realistic, a direct message in our head is very good, thank you!

→ Communication in the head (direct) is **much more precise** than external and indirect communication through our eyes and ears.

D) What is the meaning of Eucharistic miracles?

On these miracles, there is so much confusion that I decided to set the record straight.

It must be known that a Eucharistic miracle is to indicate the "memorial of the sacrifice of Christ." To go further, see article |13-G|.

In these miracles, see chapter |6|, we see that the Eucharistic bread is miraculously changed into flesh and blood. After biological analysis, it is discovered that the flesh is a tissue of the heart of a man who has suffered martyrdom. Of course, Jesus Christ on the cross.

What is the message of this miracle?

Here are the words of Jesus:

NT	St-John	6,51-53	" I am the living bread that came down out of heaven ; if anyone eats of this bread, he will live forever; and the bread also which I will give for the life of the world is My flesh." Then the Jews <i>began</i> to argue with one another, saying, "How can this man give us <i>His</i> flesh to eat?" So Jesus said to them, "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless you eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink His blood, you have no life in yourselves.
		6,63	" It is the Spirit (1) who gives life ; the flesh (2) profits nothing; ...

(1) The Breath of Eternal Life of God.

(2) The mortal breath of life of the human being.

Jesus is talking about his "Form of Eternal Life" when he will return to his Father. Here, Jesus refers to his "**Glorious Body**" that he will have after his mission completed and that he offers as the "**Bread of Life**." To go further, see article |30-G|. Jesus is talking about his "Life of the World of God" that he wants to share by putting it in us. He simply wants to share with us his Life that he receives from his Father as we share a piece of bread. You must eat this "Bread of Life." You must let it enter you through the Breath of Life of God. It is only through the {birth of the Spirit} that this takes place.

Yes, during the Eucharistic miracle, the Breath of Life of God really enters the bread (the host). What do we see appearing? Life, flesh and blood to show us the "memorial of the sacrifice of Christ."

We see that the Breath of Life of God can even give life to a piece of bread!

So the message is, "let your human body be like this piece of bread" by letting the Breath of the Life of God enter you through the {birth of the Spirit}. You will then receive Eternal Life here now and that continues forever after your pilgrimage on earth.

E) The Presence of the Holy Spirit.

The Holy Spirit will always give you a sign that he is there:

- ° A Breath;
- ° A Wind;
- ° A flash of Light;
- ° A Perfume;
- ° Another non-material sign.

If you are attentive and are not too incredulous, you will recognize him. Always thank the Lord for a sign even if you are not sure what it was exactly on the spot. You will always have time to take stock of your disbelief later. Just tell him, "Thank you, Lord!"

For people who have serious and sometimes terrible sins, everything you have done is forgivable for the Lord. The only thing that is unforgivable is your attitude:

- ° Not to need God in your life, not to look for him (to be indifferent);
- ° Not to want to make an inner effort to become a good right and honest person;
- ° Your unbelief;
- ° Your selfishness;
- ° Your lack of humility.

The lack of a single point on this list will prevent you from receiving the Holy Spirit in you. What does the word Holy mean? Without evil! So if you like to do evil, the Holy Spirit cannot unite with you...

NT	St-Matthew	13.13-15	"Therefore I speak to them in parables; because while seeing they do not see, and while hearing they do not hear, nor do they understand. "In their case the prophecy of Isaiah is being fulfilled, which says, "You will keep on hearing, but will not understand, you will keep on seeing, but will not perceive; for the heart of this people has become dull, with their ears they scarcely hear, and they have close their eyes, otherwise they would see with their eyes, hear with their ears, and understand with their heart and return, and I would heal them. " (1)
		12.31	"Therefore I say to you, any sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven people, but blasphemy against the Spirit shall not be forgiven. (2)

(1) It is hearing, understanding and putting into practice the Word of God in order to heal from his spiritual blindness.

(2) The sin against the Spirit is simply not to make every effort to obtain the {gift of the Holy Spirit}.

| 10-L | To receive some help from the Holy Spirit

Here, it is not Manifestations, but psychological help that the Holy Spirit offers you.

As I just mentioned, the Holy Spirit does many different things. It is just a matter of identifying them.

A) An important help is to truly believe in God.

It is very subtle, at the moment when you start to truly believe in God, there is like an inspiration and a "switch" that engages in your brain. From there, you believe in God as much as in the presence of your nose in your face! You are convinced that he exists, it is only that you have not met him yet. You will never believe more than that, even when you have your {birth of the Spirit}.

NT	St-John	6,65	And He was saying, "For this reason I have said to you, that no one can come to Me unless it (1) has been granted him from the Father."

(1) It is God who allows you to truly believe in him. For that, you have to work on yourself.

B) Help to go in search of God.

The Holy Spirit can also make you feel a Perfume in your room when that smell does not really exist, even if you are looking for it everywhere. This Perfume is not in your nose, but in your head, in your feelings, in your brain. This Perfume is a help to seek God more strongly so that you really believe in him.

C) Help to make you obtain the forgiveness of God.

After truly believing in God, there will be feelings of guilt that appear in your head. This, to try to make you obtain God's Forgiveness for your sins. You will need humility to get through this crucial step. There will even be a strange feeling that will automatically appear in you: "the idea that the devil could actually exist." And this even if you have never believed in the devil before! In fact, it is a normal feeling, because now you have to take stock. Will you choose death or life? For this, there are 2 great players:

- ° The devil is the great actor who takes you to death.
- ° Jesus Christ is the great actor who takes you to Life.

D) Help to pray differently.

After you truly believe in God, you will begin to pray differently, because you will know that God is really there.

E) Help to have a "gift" very useful.

To begin with, I advise you to ask the Lord for "peace in your head." When I asked for it, that very night, I saw a little "flash of light" in my head and the next day, I had the gift of peace in me that I still have. This gift of peace in oneself is a marvel! As I told you, God never gives you a gift without you knowing it in your body.

| 10-M | The Holy Spirit in brief

A) The Person of the Holy Spirit is simply: God who is the Union of Life.

- ° In our world, he is the Living Bridge that connects us to God.
- ° In the World of God, he is the Breath of Life of God shared by all.

B) The Holy Spirit is responsible for the Manifestations of God on earth.

He is also responsible for the transfer of life between the 2 world/World.

- ° The Holy Spirit transferred or deposited the Son of God on earth in the womb of Mary. It is the Incarnation (Jesus).
- ° The Holy Spirit gave life back to Jesus after his death on the cross. It is the Resurrection.
- ° The Holy Spirit transferred or brought Jesus back to his Father at the end of his mission. It is the Ascension.

C) On earth, the Holy Spirit presents himself to humans in different forms:

- ° A Breath;
- ° A Wind;
- ° A Light;
- ° A Perfume;
- ° Or another non-material sign.

This is his way of saying, "I Am here!"

In reality, the supernatural is not as supernatural as we think...

We cannot feel the World of God. It is the Holy Spirit who makes real Manifestations (physical and biological) that are adapted to our human body. These Manifestations are not imaginary, but tangible in our body.

D) The main Manifestations of God are:

- ° To do wonders (miracles and healings);
- ° To give psychological help;
- ° To make Messages;
- ° To make gifts.

See article | 8-F |.

E) I give some examples:

1) Before my {birth of the Spirit}, I asked the Lord to have peace in me. Then, the Holy Spirit Presented himself as a "flash of light in my head." He inserted in me the "gift of peace" and he disappeared. Even after a year, I still have this gift.

2) After my {birth of the Spirit}, when I began to write this book, I made a little prayer to the Lord. I was in front of my computer and I did not understand the meaning of the narrative of the Garden of Eden. I knew this narrative was symbolic, but did it really represent the origin of man? Could man has been created in a place outside Earth and brought to Earth after doing evil (perverting)? This was a piece of the puzzle that I was not solving alone. So, I asked the Lord, "What do I do with the Garden of Eden?" About 10 seconds later, I had a small Vision (a Flash) that lasted about 5 seconds like this:

- ° God who walks in the Garden of Eden is Jesus Christ in the year 0030;
- ° The tree of life is the Holy Spirit;
- ° The Garden of Eden is simply our planet Earth.

This narrative of the Garden of Eden does not symbolize the beginning of humanity, but the unfolding of its history, from yesterday to today. With this spark, it was easy to understand that the narratives of the Garden of Eden, Cain and Abel, the Flood and the Tower of Babel are the story of humanity in connection with the plan of God. To go further, see article |20-C| and chapter |21|.

3) For the Visions of the Old Testament prophets as Ezekiel.

- ° Jesus, the Word of God, sends a message from his Kingdom;
- ° The Holy Spirit Presents himself on earth as a Wind;
- ° The Holy Spirit makes an experience in his head (mind) that is in fact a Vision or a Message and the Spirit disappears;
- ° The prophet must work to discover the Message.

Article |22-B| gives you a good example.

|10-N| A list of some gifts

The gifts that the Holy Spirit can insert into you are numerous. It is important to understand that some may be requested before the {birth of the Spirit}, others may be requested after.

A) Before the {birth of the Spirit}.

To truly believe in God

To have peace in oneself.

To pray with more sincerity.

To have some help in repentance in order to obtain the Forgiveness of God.

B) At the {birth of the Spirit}.

A New World opens to us.

On request, it is possible to feel the Presence of God in oneself by the "seal of Jesus" in the chest.

Wickedness is diminished, which increases peace and goodness.

Covetousness is diminished, which diminishes the importance of the objects that surround us.

Boredom is lessened, because we know that God is always near us.

The fear of death is diminished, because we know that earth is only a pilgrimage path.

Life on earth takes on a new meaning. We understand that our past failures were only a stepladder to meet God.

Ability to understand God increases. God is Life and without him, we would not even exist! We live on earth in his good graces. We only have to look at some images of Earth seen from space to realize that apart from our beautiful blue planet, there is no life at all.

C) After the {birth of the Spirit}.

It is possible to ask for special gifts. God will not refuse you a gift **if it is also his Will**. You must understand that God knows you better than you. So, he will only give you gifts that go with your personality.

Even though the Lord already knows our needs, **we must never stop praying and asking him**. See article | 26-B |.

Life on earth is not easy, but with God near us, even our difficulties make sense. God does not take away all our difficulties, because he wants us to grow up. He has confidence in our abilities and he is always there, without us knowing it, to give us a little help that is missing.

| 10-O | A Manifestation of the Holy Spirit

A) How can I know that the Holy Spirit is giving me a Manifestation?

As I said, he Presents himself as a Wind or a Breath. His Presence is very pleasant. He does not speak. He makes you live feelings. Instinctively, you will know that it is the Presence of God.

B) How can I know that this is not a psychic problem?

If the experience is **unpleasant**, it is not the Holy Spirit. It is a psychic problem.

C) How to differentiate between superstitions and reality?

I invite you to read article | 16-D |.

D) Some basic information to know.

1) Supernatural.

The Holy Spirit Presents himself in a supernatural way, for God is above nature. When you receive his Visit, you will not doubt, because the sensations that you will feel are not human.

God Presents himself supernaturally, because humans are very incredulous. I give you an example. When Jesus came to walk on earth, did humans believe that he was the Son of God? Not really! Humans recognized Jesus as the Son of God only after his Resurrection. **They had no choice**, Jesus had a Special Body!

NT	St-Mark	16,14	Afterward He (1) appeared to the eleven (2) themselves as they were reclining <i>at the table</i> (3); and He reproached them for their unbelief and hardness of heart, because they had not believed those (4) who had seen Him after He had risen.

(1) The Risen Jesus.

(2) These are the 11 apostles who remain after the suicide of Judas.

(3) The doors of the house were locked, and Jesus appeared to them in the midst of them without even opening the door.

(4) Jesus had made Apparitions to other disciples long before the 11 apostles.

NT	St-John	20,26-29	After eight days His disciples were again inside, and Thomas (1) with them. Jesus came, the doors having been shut, and stood in their midst and said, "Peace <i>be</i> with you." Then He said to Thomas, "Reach here with your finger, and see My hands; and reach here your hand and put it into My side; and do not be unbelieving, but believing." Thomas answered and said to Him, "My Lord and my God!" (2) Jesus said to him, "Because you have seen Me, have you believed? Blessed <i>are</i> they who did not see, and <i>yet</i> believed."

(1) Here the apostle St-Thomas did not believe at all that Jesus appeared to the other apostles.

(2) We see that to recognize a natural miracle as (Jesus, the Incantation of the Son of God on earth), a supernatural proof is required (an Apparition).

2) The devil.

Many Christian movements firmly believe in the devil. Sometimes, I wonder if they do not believe more in the devil than in God! What I am writing is very hard, but it is unfortunately true.

The difficulty is that the idea of the devil is very difficult to grasp in the Bible. We do not know exactly where he comes from. Is he a creature of God who has badly turned in the past (Lucifer) and is eternal since that time? Is he a divinity of Evil?

In Christianity, in the 1500s, there was a real clash of ideas. Basically, will the "Forces of Good" one day fight against the "Forces of Evil" in a "War" where the devil will be locked in hell for eternity with his followers (demons and damned humans)? Has this famous War already begun on earth?

For all these reasons, some Christian movements often take more than 30 years to recognize a miracle. Yes, this miracle could come **from the devil** and not from God! So, they have to investigate a long time and find the meaning of all the small details to conclude.

I will soon debate the existence of the devil in chapter |18|. For now, I can tell you that:

- ° Satan is a symbol;
- ° The devil is not a supernatural being, but the natural psychic actor who brings us to biological death.

So, I assure you that the devil does not do Manifestations or wonders to anyone!

3) The human brain.

In chapter |16|, I will give you a basic introduction to the human brain (psychology). I can tell you that our brain is very complex. So, you have to take care of it to make it work well.

E) In short:

We are not orphans on a planet lost in the infinite space. We have a Creator as perfect as the laws of physics that govern our world. So, it is normal that our Creator wants to know us and meet us. As God is freedom, then if you want to Live with him, you will have to let him approach you. As God is above nature, you will have to accept a little of supernatural without believing that you are crazy.

In fact, you must trust what you will feel. I give you 3 landmarks:

1) Your brain is working properly when the Manifestation is pleasant.

God is only goodness.

You must understand that there is no psychic problem that gives **happiness**, otherwise we would all like to have this pleasant problem!

2) Your brain is working properly when you have bad dreams sometimes at night.

Your brain is very complex. During the day, your consciousness is in the upper part (intellectual). On the other hand, it stores fears in its lower part (emotional) without you really knowing it. During sleep, your consciousness will slowly move from the top to the bottom of your brain. If there are fears accumulated in this low zone, you will see these fears in a non-intellectual form. The brain is simply trying to get rid of its accumulated fears by showing them to you. So, you are having a bad dream. The images of your dream depend on the nature of the accumulated fear. To understand, you must always think about the feelings you felt during your dream. I give you two examples:

1) Vampires are usually associated with fear of losing control of your life. The vampire is a symbol of possession. The vampire seizes your blood (your life);

2) The devil is usually associated with fear of an exaggerated and fantastic danger that the brain of the child recorded when he was scared of the probable hostility of his father.

All these fears are perfectly natural for the human. See chapter | 16 |.

3) By cons, your brain is not functioning properly and needs care when:

- ° You hear one or more voices;
- ° You really see ghosts, witches, vampires and demons.

All psychic disorders **always give suffering** and that is why these "bad characters" appear in your consciousness. It is to show you your own inner suffering in order to make you react and ask for help. See chapter | 16 |.

→ ***Talk to your doctor without delay!***

| 11 | Several kinds of baptisms

In Christianity, the word baptism needs to be clarified...

In the Bible, it is stated that there are several. In the Gospel of St-John, it is indicated the baptism of water and the Baptism of the Spirit. The Acts of the Apostles also mention the baptism in the name of Jesus.

In addition, each of Christian movements has its own baptismal ritual.

So, how to find oneself in all this?

I am taking stock here. It takes the {gift of the Holy Spirit} to unravel all of this, because all the steps have been successfully completed.

Let's go!

| 11-A | The reality of baptisms

In the New Testament:

NT	St-Matthew	3,11	"As for me (1), I baptize you with water for repentance (2), but He who is coming after me is mightier than I, and I am not fit to remove His sandals; He (3) will baptize you with the Holy Spirit (4) and fire (5).

(1) John the Baptist.

(2) The ritual of water baptism is a human repentance.

(3) Jesus Christ.

(4) The Baptism given by God alone (here the Son, Jesus).

(5) Water represents the purification that a person does on himself by his own efforts. Fire represents the purification that God alone does on a person.

In fact, there are only 2 baptisms that I will simply name:

- ° Human baptism;
- ° Baptism of God.

1) Human baptism.

It begins the day a person says his promises in front of God. This can be done alone or during a ceremony of a Christian movement. It depends only on your sincerity and not on a piece of paper. **It is a personal commitment to follow the Way of Christ.** Then, this person becomes a Christian. Afterward, the person must walk under God's gaze **to fulfill his promises.**

2) Baptism of God.

In this book, it is called the {gift of the Holy Spirit} or the {birth of the Spirit} according to the verse (St-John: 3,6). The person becomes a {God's child}. In a way, here the person gets his "diploma from Christ." To obtain it, you must ask God to guide your life, because God alone always knows what to do. So you must trust him as a child in front of his Parent. See articles | 25-C | and | 26-E |.

On the other hand, as I said before, even if a person does not have his {birth of the Spirit} yet, he can get things from the Holy Spirit:

- ° A healing or a miracle to strengthen one's faith;
- ° A help with conversion;
- ° The gift of truly believing in God;
- ° A help with repentance.

The Holy Spirit is a Person of God who does many different Actions. So, one must not see the Holy Spirit as an object that one appropriates...

The Holy Spirit is the Intercessor who comes to give us help, a gift and then he leaves.

| 11-B | The different baptisms used in Christianity

A) Baptism of water.

It is a rite of human initiation to inner conversion in order to take the resolution to do good. So, to reject evil and to make a good human life. It is also the baptism that John the Baptist gave. It is a human promise in front of God. It is the beginning of a work on oneself.

This is also the ritual given by the holy apostles. They gave this baptism of water in the name of Jesus. The person rejected evil and made the promise to follow the Way of Jesus. Thereafter, the person could be part of the Christian community.

B) Christian baptism of all Christian movements.

Whatever promises the Christian movement does to the baptized person, this Christian baptism has no more value than the one given by the holy apostles. It is a baptism of Christian initiation only. It is only a departure on the Way of Christ.

1) I give you proof that no Christian movement does more than that.

NT	Acts of the Apostles	10,44	While Peter was still speaking these words, the Holy Spirit fell upon all those who were listening to the message.
		10,47-48	"Surely no one can refuse the water for these to be baptized who have received the Holy Spirit just as we <i>did</i> , can he?" And he ordered them to be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ.

(1) We see here that even St-Peter, the leader of the apostles did not give the {gift of the Holy Spirit} to anyone. On the other hand, he gave a baptism of initiation in the name of Jesus Christ.

NT	Acts of the Apostles	1.5	for John (1) baptized with water, but you will be baptized with the Holy Spirit (2) not many days from now." (3)

(1) John the Baptist.

(2) Here is a translated excerpt from the footnote of the Bible (Jérusalem 1977, des Éditions du Cerf): "The baptism of the Spirit, already announced by John the Baptist, and here promised by Jesus, will be inaugurated by the outpouring of Pentecost. Then, according to the order of Christ, the apostles will continue to administer **the baptism of water as a rite of initiation** to God's kingdom."

(3) The holy apostles gave only a rite of initiation. So no Christian movement does more than that, too.

→ It should be known that at the time of the apostles, the way of conversion lasted 3 intensive years (not 1 hour/week) before the person receives the ritual of initiation of the baptism of water.

→ It should know that the apostles gave the initiation ritual of the baptism of water in the name of Jesus Christ only. It was only centuries later that some Christian movements said that the Holy Spirit was given at the same time.

C) Baptism in the Spirit.

Be careful with that expression, it is very badly interpreted. In the Gospel of St-John, this expression is used by John the Baptist because he is a "baptizer." On the other hand, the apostle St-John uses the term {birth of the Spirit} farther on.

NT	St-John	3,3-8	Jesus answered and said to him, "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born again (2) he cannot see the kingdom of God." Nicodemus said to Him, "How can a man be born when he is old? He cannot enter a second time into his mother's womb and be born, can he?" Jesus answered, "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born of water (1) and the Spirit (2) he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. "That which is born of the flesh is flesh (3), and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit (2). "Do not be amazed that I said to you, ' You must be born again. ' (2) "The wind blows where it wishes and you hear the sound of it, but do not know where it comes from and where it is going (4); so is everyone who is born of the Spirit. "

(1) The human baptism. That of John the Baptist's repentance.

(2) The Baptism of God. This is the {birth of the Spirit} that I talk about in this book. In other Bibles, it is also named: the {birth from above}, because it means to be born from the Breath of Life of God (from above).

(3) The human being is made only of flesh and blood. There is nothing eternal in him that escapes during his death like a ghost.

(4) Here, the text simply tells of the freedom of the wind. But what freedom exactly? That of the deliverance of our mortal human condition to obtain the freedom of Eternal Life.

St-Peter also talks about it:

NT	1st Epistle of St-Peter	1.3	Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who according to His great mercy has caused us to be born again (1) to a living hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead,

(1) When St-Peter is speaking, he says that his {birth of the Spirit} is already done, yes at the day of Pentecost.

D) Why does St-John use the word birth rather than baptism?

Just to make a difference. St-John knew that he and the other apostles gave a baptism of initiation to people, but that another word was needed for the {gift of the Holy Spirit} which is given by God alone when the person is truly ready to receive it and not before. St-John then used the word "birth" to indicate how we feel when the Breath of Life of God enters us. St-Paul gives another term similar to the {birth of the Spirit}. Why? Again to make the difference with the baptism of Christian initiation. St-Paul gives the order: "Be filled with the Spirit." Again, that is what we feel when the Breath of God's Life enters us.

For those who believe they have received it, you should check it by comparing it with the description I give in article | 10-I |.

→ **Yes, it only happens in one way for everyone.** See articles | 13-O and 15-G |.

On the other hand, if your "experience" does not correspond to the description that I give, it is not the {birth of the Spirit}. You will have to work harder on yourself. It must be understood that the Holy Spirit does many different Manifestations. If this diverges, the simplest thing is that your "experience" is to give you a little help in order to pass your step of truly believing in God that is needed.

In short, the problem with the expression "Baptism in the Spirit" is that the word baptism means "to be immersed or submerged in." A person could falsely think that the experience is like "entering and exiting a lake (in this case, no water but Spirit). While in the real world, this is not the way it happens at all.

E) The fullness of the Spirit or be filled with the Spirit.

These expressions are only part of the experience that occurs during the {birth of the Spirit} and do not describe it completely. See article | 10-I |. At the {birth of the Spirit}, you will have the impression of being reborn, even of resurrecting with Christ here on earth. It was St-Paul who brought these terms to order the person who received a Christian baptism that he must absolutely obtain his {birth of the Spirit} during his earthly life.

F) The Outpouring of the Spirit.

This term is used by some Christian movements who believe that the person receives the {gift of the Holy Spirit} at his Christian baptism. The Christian then believes he has received the {gift of the Holy Spirit} in him without even having felt it. Now, their "idea" is that during the Outpouring, it is the Spirit that "**sleeps**" in the person who finally Manifests himself!

In reality, the Holy Spirit is a Person who always makes concrete Manifestations.

→ **In short, if you have not felt anything, it means that you have not received anything at all!**

Now, for the person who has had an Outpouring, you have to identify what you had. To do this, refer to chapter | 10 |.

| 11-C | Christianity is relaxing...

Many other religions reproach Christians for not knowing their Bible and not applying the teachings of Jesus in their lives.

The reason is simple. Why make efforts when some Christian movements say that their followers are already saved by their Christian baptism? It only remains to move on in life and focus on money and power...

| 11-D | Christianity is not easy...

You will tell me that the prescriptions of Jesus in the New Testament are very difficult to do.

Yes, it is true!

Jesus talks about:

- ° The conversion of the heart;
- ° Goodness;
- ° Forgiveness;
- ° Charity towards the poor;
- ° Love for God and for others;
- ° A detachment from the lust that leads to accumulate great earthly goods to the detriment of weak people who have practically nothing.

So, why does Jesus ask those who want to follow him to do that?

Well, answer this question:

Why would a person want to go to the Kingdom of God (where there is only good) if that person does not want to do it already on earth?

→ ***God never brings a person to a place where he will not be comfortable!***

| 11-E | Should we do some small works?

A) For all Christians.

Basically, in Christianity, each one is responsible only for himself. It is a relationship between you and God. Your Salvation comes first. On the other hand, there is a close relationship between believing and acting. One cannot believe and not act, it is unfortunately the problem of the majority of Christians. When we believe in God, our life is different, because we know that God is there near us at every moment. Our selfishness is diminished and we want to do small works for our Creator as St-James said. Jesus said that finding God is like finding a precious stone and he was right. We must believe in God to act and we must act to follow the Way of Jesus to obtain the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. Here are the 3 major works. For oneself, make your conversion of the heart (become a better person). For others, be charitable especially towards the poor. For God, share your faith with people to make them grow.

B) For {God's children}.

Since you have received the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, you have been doing small works for a long time, sometimes without even knowing it. Now for you, it is easier to follow the teachings of Jesus than before. Be a light for other Christians, but do not try to do sensational things. The best thing to do is to let the Lord give you a little project. He knows you better than you. So, if he wants something specific, you will do it naturally and you will realize it in the long run, because the Lord gives you his support. Basically, do what you think is right, but do not play heroes! See article | 15-E |.

Testimonials

| 12 | My steps to get my {birth of the Spirit}

| 12-A | Introduction

A) If you want to go to the Kingdom of God, you will absolutely have to reach the following 10 great steps in your life:

(1) To convert yourself to become a good right and honest person. For this step, get help from the Word (the Gospels).
(2) To forgive everyone. See article 27-F .
(3) To realize that our society is built much more with evil than with good. Examples: selfishness; greed; lust; abuse of power; lies; insensitivity; the rejection of the poor; etc.
(4) Personally rejecting to live by doing evil even if you have to suffer from your decision sometimes. Jesus does not ask to hide from society. On the contrary, Jesus asks to be a light for others. Jesus asks to remain good, upright and honest even if people around you are not. During his mission on earth, Jesus never hid himself from society. On the contrary, he taught righteousness to people who were not righteous. In the Gospels, Jesus sums up this in a pictorial way, saying that we must follow his Way and carry our cross every day. On this Way, forgiving allows you not to become bitter. Not wanting to accumulate wealth helps not to compete and become unhappy, because there will always be someone who has more than us. Each person sets his own priorities, so do not compare yourself to others! If you have chosen the Reward of Heaven, work to obtain it, but do not compare yourself to those who work for material rewards on earth. If you take the Way of Jesus to obtain a material reward on earth or tributes, you will be very disappointed. On the other hand, Jesus will give you the first part of your Reward with your {birth of the Spirit}. Afterwards, you will have the second part of your Reward eternally at the end of your pilgrimage on earth. The best image I can give you is that earth is like a garden. God gathers in his garden pleasant flowers for his House and the other flowers remain in the field of culture and die. Moreover, in the past, several Christian religious communities have cloistered themselves in order not to be influenced by our society. But how can we reject evil if we do not see it and if we do not suffer its effects? If I had not chosen to do good despite the evil that others did to me, I would never have had my {birth of the Spirit}. See article 12-E .
(5) To need God and seek him ardently.
(6) To truly believe in God.
(7) To understand that we do not deserve the Eternal Life that God wants to give us. To understand that we deserve only to finish in the ground.
(8) To repent of the evil we do to obtain God's Forgiveness for our sins.
(9) To put all our trust in God alone.
(10) To place our human life in the hand of God so that he helps us to lead it, because we are not able to direct it alone.

For the steps from **(1)** to **(5)**, you must do this work alone. This depends only on you. On the other hand, it is possible that God might perform small miracles around you to help you in your faith. Know how to recognize it...

If you work hard, God will believe in your sincerity and give you permission for the step **(6)**. Afterwards, God will give you some psychological help for the last 4 steps, because they require humility.

(11) You will have your {birth of the Spirit} when God feels that you are ready and not before...

B) In 2 examples below, I insert the (numbers) of the above chart:

NT	Acts of the Apostles	2,38	Peter <i>said</i> to them, "Repent (1, 2, 3, 4) , and each of you be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ (5, 6, 9, 10) for the forgiveness of your sins (7, 8) ; and you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit. (11)
NT	1st Epistle of St-John	1,8	If we say that we have no sin, we are deceiving ourselves and the truth is not in us. (1, 2)
		1,9	If we confess our sins, He is faithful and righteous to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. (8)
		2,5	but whoever keeps His word, in him the love of God has truly been perfected. By this we know that we are in Him: (5, 9, 10)
		2,15-17	Do not love the world nor the things in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh and the lust of the eyes and the boastful pride of life, is not from the Father, but is from the world. The world is passing away, and <i>also</i> its lusts; but the one who does the will of God lives forever. (3, 4, 7)
		2,22	Who is the liar but the one who denies that Jesus is the Christ? This is the antichrist, the one who denies the Father and the Son. (6)
		2,27	As for you, the anointing which you received from Him abides in you , and you have no need for anyone to teach you; but as His anointing (*) teaches you about all things, and is true and is not a lie, and just as it has taught you, you abide in Him. (11)

(*) There are 2 types of anointing:

A) An anointing with oil on the body as during a sacrament. This is not what is in question here.

B) A spiritual anointing. It is the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. It is the "seal of Jesus" in the heart that St-Paul tells in his Epistles. See article |15-G|. In the course of Christian history, people have thought that this anointing is not tangible, that it is a romantic idea. In reality, a {God's child} actually feels this anointing in his chest for about 6 weeks. St-John writes that the anointing teaches everything, see my 12 Manifestations of chapter |13|. This also explains the {inspiration} of this book for a scientist like me.

|12-B| A summary of my steps

I give you some details now...

Take a good look at the narrative of my past below and you will find the 10 steps in the chart of article |12-A|.

A) At church, I had the following sacraments:

- ° My Catholic Christian baptism at 3 months old;
- ° My first communion at 7 years old;
- ° My sacrament of forgiveness at 9 years old;
- ° My confirmation at 11 years old;
- ° My solemn communion at 17 years old.

→ I have never felt anything in my body.

In reality, these are **preparatory ceremonies** in order to become aware of his commitment to the Way of Christ. For God, what is important is not the ceremony. What is important is **the application of this commitment in his everyday life**.

B) Adult, I felt that my life was not progressing like many other people...

At work, I have always tried to be close to people. I would have liked everyone to get on well with each other. On the other hand, I realized that I was often rejected because I have an easy and good character. Often, selfish people kept their jobs in the company while I was laid off at the slightest drop in contracts. Many employers wanted me to be tough with my subordinates. For them, money is more important than anything!

When I was 44, I took stock of my life. I realized that most of my former employers were looking for someone to do the "stopgap" to fill a small surplus of work and then, goodbye! So for them, a good person to hire is the "naïve" that they say to move (from one city to another) for a "supposedly permanent" job, but that in reality will last 8 months! In the end, I totally lost confidence in human goodness! Basically, dishonest people win and honest people lose! **In short, on earth, kindness is like a big defect...**

C) I took a rest so I could forgive all the people who hurt me so I could make a new start...

Once again on employment insurance, still very stressed by my former boss who liked to scare all his staff. I was angry with my boss for my misleading layoff when he had just sold the business. It took me 3 months to unwind and really forgive him in my head. So, I decided to make a little return to school to specialize a little more. Since the study program only required 35 hours/week, I had some time for myself...

D) I needed God in my life...

I was doing a training (AEC) for buildings to open my small business in the energy efficiency field. I knew that starting a business would be very difficult. Many new companies do not survive more than 2 years.

In order to succeed, I thought I needed help. So, because the only one who always knows what to do is God, I started to look for him.

E) I sought God...

At that time, I did not read the New Testament because I thought I had already received all the information during my catechesis. I trusted my catechesis blindly and without checking anything. In short, I was sleeping comfortably like the vast majority of Christians!

I wondered if God existed for real...

I started by watching several Bible movies on the Internet...

Here is a movie that surprised me:

The Gospel of John (word for word). See article 8-J .

Looking at the detail of the conversation between Jesus and Nicodemus about the {birth from above}, I never had this teaching during my catechesis! At that moment, let's say I did not understand much of this conversation, but at least it intrigued me a lot.

At the same time, I undertook research in science to see if it was possible to prove that God really exists. **I realized that yes!** In this book, I have included this research in chapter | 5 |. At that time, I did not even know there were Christian miracles filmed on the Internet. See chapter | 6 |.

This step took me about 300 hours of work.

F) I believed in God and I took action...

I finally realized that it was impossible that God does not exist! And then a "click" occurred in my head, as if a "switch" had been turned on! I **took a breath and said, "God exists for real!"**

I realized that the best proof of God's existence is simply the nature surrounds us. More than that, my own existence (life) on earth while the universe was created perfectly sterile!

Afterwards, I started going to mass regularly and I started to really get interested in what was being said.

NT	Epistle of St-James	2,17	Even so faith, if it has no works, is dead, <i>being</i> by itself.

G) I changed my thoughts...

As I knew that God really exists. I began to watch my thoughts so as not to displease God.

NT	Epistle of St-James	1,26	If anyone thinks himself to be religious, and yet does not bridle his tongue but deceives his <i>own</i> heart, this man's religion is worthless.

I, who have never believed in the devil before, I began strangely to think that the devil could exist and blow me evil thoughts!

I reassure you right away, as it will be seen in chapter |18|, the human is the only one responsible for evil that he does and he receives no evil supernatural influence. In fact, what I was doing (more than before) was simply to pay close attention to my thoughts.

I give you here a good tip to know if you start to believe in God. The thought that "the devil could really exist" will happen at the same time.

This step took me about 1 month.

H) I repented...

I began strangely to think that I am bad in front of God. That I do not deserve God to take care of me in life. That I do not deserve the Life that God gives. That I deserve rather to finish my life in the ground! Without knowing it, this is called "repentance for the evil that one has done" even sometimes without knowing it. God is perfect and I am not! I do not deserve his forgiveness and his life!

We must be very humble to pass this step. It is to recognize in front of God that I do not deserve his Eternal Life, but rather human death at the end of my days.

If you want to know exactly what repentance is in the baptism of water, it is what I just said. Often during Christian baptism ceremony at church, we say yes to all questions without thinking. But if this is not sincere and put into practice, it has no value in the eyes of God. You have to do your homework...

This step took me about 2 months.

I) I needed God concretely in my life.

I began to pray differently.

I was not asking for a job, but I was asking for his presence...

Here are:

"Lord, I know that you really exist, I need you in my life!"

"Lord, I do not have much to tell you tonight, but I need your presence near me, I would like to sleep in your arms tonight!"

"Lord, you are my life and I love you as much as I can."

One evening I prayed to the Lord for peace in my head. Then the same night, I saw (in my head of course) a small "flash of light" pass. Well! The next day, I had received the "gift of peace in my head" that I still have.

J) I needed God to help me lead my life in his own way, because he alone is perfect...

I wanted to make a fresh start in my life, to have a small business of my own.

I remembered that a lot of people love power and that I would not have much chance of succeeding in business by myself.

As I wanted to succeed, I told myself that the only way to do it was to be guided by God. He knows what to do...

I told God I did not trust our human world!

I told God that I did not want to live without him in my life, that I needed him by my side!

I sincerely told God 3 times (it is really a cry from the heart) that **I give my life to him!**

"Lord, come to guide me."

"Lord, take my life, because I do not succeed much alone."

"Lord, I am scared to live without you, Lord never go away from me."

"Lord, you have given me life and it is yours."

"Lord, I would like to testify that you exist, but I am not able to do it!"

This last prayer is the sincere desire to put oneself at the service of God, it is a capital step! The {gift of the Holy Spirit} is the necessary force which St-Peter spoke in order to serve God. Without this strength, this book would not exist. The Lord always gives his {children} what they really need.

K) Look carefully at what Jesus said:

NT	St-John	12,26	"If anyone serves Me (1), he must follow Me (2); and where I am, there (3) My servant will be also; if anyone serves Me, the Father will honor him (4).

(1) To serve God.

(2) To concretely make the Way that Jesus asks in the Gospels.

(3) The reward of Heaven.

(4) By the {gift of the Holy Spirit}.

In the Bible, have you noticed that we often talk about serving? Patriarchs, prophets, apostles and disciples regularly say that they are in the service of God.

We all have a choice between 2 ways. We can serve ourselves and build our little human kingdom. This will be our mortal inheritance. There will be nothing after that. We can serve God (the Eternal) and help him on earth to build his Kingdom (truth, justice, peace, Life, etc.). It is up to us to choose. If you do not have your {birth of the Spirit} yet, it is because you have not yet chosen the way of the Eternal. And that even if you are a religious person. **Jesus did not ask for a human religion, but a sincere commitment of the heart to serve him.** Here, we are very far from a religion with rituals and ready-made phrases. It is a commitment of personal life. God shares his Eternal Life with us if we share our mortal life with him. This has absolutely nothing to do with being a religious person. I point out that the apostles were not religious people and I am not a religious person either!

L) Then, the Lord Manifested himself...

I had my {birth of the Spirit} a few days later in the night, March 14, 2016. See article |13-D|.

The Breath of God (the Holy Spirit) filled me inside. I felt reborn. I would even say **as resurrected** with Christ.

The Breath, as entering through my nostrils, gave me the impression of making my heart dilate a bit.

I knew it was a "**birth**" because it looked like the image of Adam's narrative in Genesis.

OT	Genesis	2,7	Then the LORD God formed man of dust from the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living being.

Except that all this did not correspond with the catechesis received!

I said to myself, "I had not received the {gift of the Holy Spirit} at my Christian baptism!" But that is impossible! **I have been in ignorance all this time...**

M) Subsequently, I did a search in the New Testament...

I understood that this Manifestation was my {birth of the Spirit}. It is also the Baptism of the Spirit which is given only by Jesus Christ himself to the people who will become {God's children}.

This is indicated in several places in the New Testament. This is what St-John writes in his Gospel at the beginning of chapter 3. This is also what St-Paul writes in his Epistles.

Even the book of Acts of the Apostles tells about it in the narrative of Pentecost.

NT	Acts of the Apostles	2,33	"Therefore having been exalted to the right hand of God, and having received from the Father the promise of the Holy Spirit, He has poured forth this which you both see and hear. (1)

(1) The {gift of the Holy Spirit} is a concrete Manifestation and not poetry.

N) I also did a search in the Old Testament...

About 500 years B.C., this is what the prophet Ezekiel writes:

OT	Ezekiel prophet	37,13-14	"Then you will know that I am the LORD (Yahweh, Eternal), when I have opened your graves and caused you to come up out of your graves, My people. "I will put My Spirit (1) within you and you will come to life, and I will place you on your own land. Then you will know that I, the LORD, have spoken and done it," declares the LORD." (2)

(1) It is the Breath of Life of God or the Holy Spirit.

(2) It must be understood that for God who is Eternal, a human being on earth (who is temporal) is already dead and in his grave before the Breath of Eternal Life of God is in him by his {birth of the Spirit}.

| 12-C | Let's go a little further in the big steps...

In addition, see the beginning of chapter | 23 |.

A) It is a personal way that requires time, effort, sincerity and humility.

- 1) The person must have the desire to follow the Way of Jesus in his life and to go to the Kingdom of his Father (Eternal Life where evil does not exist).
- 2) The person must start a personal conversion process. To seek reality and truth in one's life and set aside evil to try to do good.
- 3) It is better for a person to be baptized humanely by one of Christian movements (the one of his choice). In this way, the person puts a beginning on his Way of conversion. The person will then be part of a group to support him. This baptism is similar to what the apostles called the baptism of water. You must understand that this is only the very first step, "it is a departure." It is a human choice to want to follow the teaching of Jesus in his personal life. If you are told that you will get the {gift of the Holy Spirit} during this baptism, make a big smile and say, "Oh yes, thank you very much!"

On the other hand, for people who do not want **or cannot be baptized** by a Christian movement, it does not matter. You can make this commitment intimately in front of God wherever you want, because He is everywhere. I will prove it to you:

NT	Acts of the Apostles	10,44-47	While Peter was still speaking these words, the Holy Spirit fell upon all those who were listening to the message... Then Peter answered, " Surely no one can refuse the water for these to be baptized who have received the Holy Spirit just as we <i>did</i> , can he?"

(*) Here, people have received the {gift of the Holy Spirit} when they have not yet had the **ritual** of water baptism. We must not confuse the sincerity of the heart with a **ritual**.

During Christian baptism, you will hear approximately this:

The person is committed to learning and following the teaching (the Word) of Jesus. The person agrees not to do evil consciously in his words and actions every day.
The person is committed to belong to Christ (the Son of God) or simply to God if you want. The person lets his life be guided by the teaching (the Word) of Jesus.

In fact, during Christian baptism, who can really accept such commitment from the start? Only very few people! So, during your Christian baptism, do not be scared to say "yes" to every question. Even if you do not understand everything and deep down, you are not ready at all. Some might say, "Should we become a religious person for such a commitment?" **Of course not, am I a religious person?** Many ordinary people have had their {birth of the Spirit} and many religious people have not had it and do not even know it exists. In reality, the {birth of the Spirit} is simply the promise of God to give the {gift of the Holy Spirit} to the one who is ready to receive it!

→ I did not receive an exceptional grace! I received what every Christian must receive in his life...

In summary, the step of Christian baptism is only the beginning of the Way. You take a first step and I hope it will not be your last, because it will not save you!

4) Now you must learn the Word of Jesus (the Gospels). You must put it into practice in your life. The more you have a selfish and libertine nature, the harder it will be. To demonstrate this, you only have to read the Gospel of St-Matthew. St-Matthew was a man who was far from having a righteous life. For him, it was not easy to follow the Way of Jesus and this can be seen in his Gospel. On the other hand, if you read the Gospel of St-John, everything is done smoothly. This is because St-John was fundamentally good and sought the truth in his life even before met Jesus.

You must understand that if you do not have a good human background, you will have to work harder on yourself. A person cannot receive the {gift of the Holy Spirit} if:

- ° He wishes to do evil;
- ° He does not forgive;
- ° He has a deep anger in him.

In short, Jesus said, "I am the Bread of Life from Heaven; I am the Word of my Father; whoever feeds on this Bread (his Word) will never die!" It must be understood that eating means integrating something in oneself. Here, one must integrate the Word (the teachings of Jesus) into oneself every day.

5) When do we receive the {gift of the Holy Spirit} or the {birth of the Spirit}? It is when we have fulfilled all the promises of our Christian baptism.

6) In the end, following the Way of Christ is a matter of personal choice.

To want to obtain his {birth of the Spirit} is the greatest human decision.

You then decide to belong to God so that he gives you his Breath of Eternal Life. Afterwards, you will not be an ordinary human being, you will really be born as a {God's child}. Jesus will be your big brother (Son of God) and his Father (God the Father) will be yours also by adoption and heir to his Kingdom.

To accomplish all these steps is difficult, because it takes perseverance. So, do not wait too long to start if you are interested...

B) What is original sin?

It is an expression very poorly understood by Christianity.

First of all, you should know that the Garden of Eden (at the beginning of the book of Genesis) is a symbolic narrative inspired by God to people with very little science, more than 2,000 years ago. In reality, this famous garden is Earth. Now, in the science of genetics, we know that the human being is made in one block with more than 25,000 sealed genes. So, original sin is not the human condition, because God created us like that.

Original sin is simply not to put ourselves under the authority of God or to put our life in his hand so that he helps us to lead it. It is normal, we are human and we do what we want. Our intentions are not always in agreement with "doing only good!"

→ If you listen carefully to the words spoken at Christian baptism, they are simply the promise to renounce one's original sin.

For more details, see article | 18-C |.

| 12-D | Some factors that can influence our approach to God...

A) If someone is a scientist, can this help?

No.

In any case, for me, it did not help...

Human tendencies with science:

Human tendencies	God's reality
Man likes to shine.	God wants children.
Man only seeks what is visible.	God is immaterial. He is above nature.
Man cultivates a very rational reasoning.	God reads in the heart.
Man needs a lot of evidence to believe.	For God, nature on Earth is sufficient proof.
Man wants to use science to direct his life.	Only God has the Absolute Knowledge of Life.
Man wants to create his own kingdom (regardless of evil).	God wants us to collaborate to His Kingdom (without evil).
Man is self-sufficient.	God is the Eternal. He loves humility.

See chapter | 5 |.

Benefits of being a scientist:

To have more ability to discover the Creator through the perfect laws of nature. Not to be superstitious.

B) If someone is a religious person, can this help?

No.

I am not a religious person and I had my {birth of the Spirit}. On the other hand, many religious people do not have it.

Human tendencies with religion:

Human tendencies	God's reality
Man loves rituals and sacred objects.	God is immaterial and reads directly into us.
Man likes the concept (guru/adepts).	God wants to be in relationship (Parent/child).
Man does not like to change.	God wants humans to make a conversion of the heart.
Man loves great words, great gestures and beautiful ornaments.	God wants humans to apply his teachings daily.
Man likes to use fear to lead.	God is love, freedom and respect.
Man likes to lock himself up in order to hide from evil on earth.	God wants a person to be a light for others even if he has to suffer from it sometimes.

See articles | 9-E | and | 9-F |.

Benefits of being a religious person:

To have more time to get closer to God. To have the support of a group.

C) What are the most important factors in the process?

- ° To choose to do good;
- ° To need our Creator (God);
- ° To put our personal interests aside;
- ° To seek truth and reality;
- ° To make daily efforts in the Way of conversion requested by Jesus.

D) What is the most harmful factor for Christians?

People make the big mistake of trusting their catechesis rather than fully trusting the Scriptures of the Bible (the Word of God).

Jesus said that there is only one Pastor and one Voice (Word), **His own!**

E) What is the worst attitude?

Preconceived ideas; rigidity and fear of change.

F) There are 2 ways to reach God:

1) We do not have the right information. We are fundamentally good. People in our society give us a lot of misery. We seek God to help us. We lay our life in his hand.

→ This is the path I took without knowing it. I could have become **very bitter** and never reach anything!

2) We have the right information and we work hard.

→ This is the path I propose in this book. Because here, getting to the destination is only a matter of goodwill and taking charge of one's own life.

| 12-E | Strangely, I sincerely thank those who have given me misery in my life!

I started making small toys when I was 5 years old because my parents could not afford to buy some. I realized that the more I was attentive and I was looking for reality (truth) and the more successful I was in my small projects. During my studies in science, I used the same principle and I obtained 3 diplomas.

When I started working in the labour market, I realized that very few people were interested in the search for truth and reality. On the other hand, the search for power, appearance and money is very important. So, I was put aside several times and was told that I was idealistic, even a little too honest....

If one does not have a certain ideal, honesty and desire to seek truth and reality, then, how to build something solid in life? I realized that these fine qualities are not very popular in Quebec. It is enough to have followed Charbonneau Commission (Inquiry) on television in 2012 to conclude that I am not entirely wrong...

On the other hand, for God, seeking Truth is essential in order to receive the reward of Eternal Life.

If it were not of the people who gave me misery in my life, I would not have found the most beautiful gift, **God!**

So, I thank them all so much for their "malicious" good help!"

I can tell you that it is easier to find God for someone who knows misery because he asks for help more often and more sincerely.

You see, everything is useful on earth ... even misery!

NT	St-Matthew	5,9-10	"Blessed are the peacemakers, for they shall be called sons of God. "Blessed are those who have been persecuted for the sake of righteousness, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

In Truth, no one succeeds his life if he has not met his Creator.

| 13 | Testimony of my Manifestations and their biblical explanations

In this book, I give information in a progressive way to make your reading as comprehensible as possible. As a result, I had to choose to put the chronology of events in second place. It is important to know that several texts in this chapter | 13 | form the starting point of the book. At first, I did not understand all the details of my Manifestations. From the information of the Bible and from the information gained during my Manifestations, I had to work hard to put the pieces of the puzzle in place...

For additional information:

Article | 15-G | provides the foundations for the {birth of the Spirit}.

Chapter | 35 | uses old and simple concepts.

Chapter | 30 | uses modern concepts.

| 13-A | Introduction

I started praying to God when I was about 6 years old. I asked him some things, but I did not see what he was giving me. I said to myself, "The Lord does not answer what I ask!" I still continued to pray, maybe he would hear me someday...

From the age of 30 to 45, I saw 3 small miracles come true. These are not big miracles, but they let me think about the presence of God in my life. See article | 13-S |.

At the age of 45, I did some research on God to find out if he really existed. I finally found him and about 3 months later, I had my first Manifestation which is my {birth of the Spirit}.

It must be known that when we become a {God's child}, there may be small Manifestations of the Holy Spirit from time to time. Why? For readers who have a child, I ask you a question. Do you leave your child alone all the time? With the Lord, it is the same thing. So to write this book, he helped me...

Warning:

The Holy Spirit does not speak. He is a Wind. To understand his messages, you must study the Gospels (the Word of God). See article | 10-M |.

A) I quickly present to you my 12 Manifestations of the Spirit.

They are divided into 2 groups:

1) A {God's child} will have at least the first 2 Manifestations. See articles | 13-D to 13-F |.

2) The last 8 Manifestations are mainly information for this book.

Every {God's child} will obviously have some Manifestations in his life. I share the 12 gifts I have had. I begin by a summary in article | 13-B |. Subsequently, I make you live my Manifestations through what I felt. Finally, I will explain them to you in parallel with the Bible.

B) I also had a little physical healing.

Here, I do not put the little healing in the list of my 12 Manifestations of the Spirit, because it does not have the same objective. I can compare one of my 12 Manifestations of the Spirit with the Bible. By cons, I cannot compare the little healing I had with anything. See article | 13-R |.

|13-B| Summary of my 12 Manifestations (March 2016 to February 2017)

The 1st Manifestation is my {birth of the Spirit} which occurred spontaneously at night and lasted about 20 minutes. During this experience, I was filled with the Holy Spirit as in the days of the apostles. On the other hand, there was not "a tongue of fire on my head nor a bright cloud in my room" as in the narrative of Pentecost of the apostles. It was night and my eyes were closed. See articles |13-D| and |13-F|.

The 2nd Manifestation is the "seal of Jesus in my chest" from the day after my {birth of the Spirit}. I had a soft pain in my chest area and I could not help but pray. This lasted 3 days. If I stopped praying, I was bored of God. See articles |13-E| and |13-F|.

The 3rd and 4th Manifestations occurred on the last Sunday of June and the first Sunday of July. This happened during 2 Eucharist at mass. Each was the {memorial of the communion with Christ}. It started when I put the host in my mouth. Each lasted about 3 hours. See articles |13-G| and |13-H|.

The 5th Manifestation is a (Message in a dream) during the night for this book. See article |13-I|.

The 6th Manifestation occurred after a prayer to obtain information about the Holy Spirit for this book. See article |13-J|.

The 7th Manifestation is a Perfume. See article |13-K|.

The 8th Manifestation is the Presence of the "seal of Jesus in my chest" on request in prayer. See article |13-L|.

The 9th Manifestation is information about the devil for this book. See article |13-M|.

The 10th Manifestation is about the love of God. See article |13-N|.

The 11th Manifestation is the confirmation of the Breath of God that gives birth from above. See article |13-O|.

The 12th Manifestation is about the {spiritual body}. See article |13-P|.

To write this book is an indirect Manifestation of the {inspiration} that is obviously not of me.

A bonus:

The 12th Manifestation occurred on February 5, 2017. Thereafter, I had another Manifestation 5 months later, in early July 2017. It arrived 2 weeks before completing the French correction of the book. In principle, it would not be supposed to be written in this book, but I decided to add it anyway as a bonus for you. See article |13-Q|.

Did they happen day or night?

By day, these are the Manifestations: 2, 3, 4, 7, 8.

At night, these are the Manifestations: 1, 5, 6, 9, 10, 11, 12.

How did each of the night Manifestations happen?

They took place during the waking up phase. The beginning of the Manifestation starts while I sleep lightly, that I am partially conscious and that I do not think of anything in the dark. It is the Manifestation that provokes my total awakening. I feel the Manifestation very well from beginning to end. The first part (about 40%) is done without I have the ability to analyze what is happening. This happens concretely in me and I do not ask myself questions. The last part of the Manifestation (about 60%) is done while I am fully awake and I still have my eyes closed. I have the perfect ability to reflect and ask myself questions about the meaning of the Manifestation that I am still experiencing.

| 13-C | The step of my truly believe in God

I started my research on the existence of God in October 2015.

After a 3-month search, I realized that it was impossible for God not to exist. **God is there**, but I do not see him! In reality, it is wrong. Take the example of a painting on canvas made by an artist. The artist really exists since we have a painting on canvas in front of us. And that, even if the artist did not lock himself in his painting on canvas! It is obvious to say that the painting on canvas tells us about the talent of the artist by the material, forms, colors and emotions which emerge from it. See chapters | 5 | and | 6 |.

That is it, the proof of God's existence was so simple! His works are everywhere around us on our beautiful planet Earth filled with life! In reality, we have been living in God's garden since childhood and we do not even realize it! We live in his graces every day. So, a little thank you is not too much...

Some will say, "If God exists, why is there evil on earth?" It is that God gives freely, he created the human being free to choose to follow him or to turn away. And there, some others will say, "The animals also do evil!" Everything that surrounds us: insects, plants, trees, animals are part of the necessary functioning of life on earth. These are the gear wheels of the clock. Have you ever seen a clock does evil?

Yes, before, I spoke of God from time to time. But it was an idea a little distant, a God not so present. After this research on God at age 45, there was something changed. It was impossible that God did not exist...

And then, in an instant, I realized... God really exists!

That day, my faith leapt forward. I also understood that it was my human reason and my selfishness that made me a blind man...

In psychology, it is taught that the human being has an instinctive mechanism. A kind of armor so as not to believe. This keeps you safe so you do not change anything. So, if at this moment, you still do not believe me, it is human! **However, this does not change the reality!** So, I hope you dare to do your own research. Jesus said, "Knock on the door and we will open you" and "He who seeks, finds!"

In early February 2016, my search for God was finished. I knew that God exists and that the Bible is true. I said to myself, "Well, I am going to move on, I only have to do my little religion like everyone else, but this time knowing that God really exists..."

Except that I started to pray differently...

Before, I made requests to God a little like a child holding in his hands his famous list of Christmas presents. From there, it was different.

Here are some examples from article | 12-B |:

"Lord, come to guide me."

"Lord, take my life, because I do not succeed much alone."

"Lord, I am scared to live without you, Lord never go away from me."

"Lord, you have given me life and it is yours."

"Lord, I would like to testify that you exist, but I am not able to do it!"

| 13-D | My 1st Manifestation is my {birth of the Spirit}

My testimony:

It was on Monday night, March 14, 2016. I was sleeping in the dark and I was not thinking of anything. This happened throughout my awakening. I felt my breathing deep and too long, much too long... air at the beginning that comes in through my nostrils and, in a moment after, that the Breath of God entered me and I was totally filled with it. There are no words to describe that! I was deeply asleep and I knew that it was the Presence of God in me, I did not have the slightest doubt. I felt the Divine power and the Light enter into me, an incredible and beneficent power! I felt so good, I felt I had received an immense Gift inside my body. A Gift so precious that I wanted to keep it in me forever. Then, in my head, I said to the Lord, "Never separate me from this gift, I want to keep it forever, my life is Yours!" This happened and I woke up slowly. I can tell you that the Lord is so Sweet and so Powerful at the same time. During that moment, I was filled with a Happiness So Strong, it is unimaginable! I was not fully awake yet, I did not have all my consciousness yet and I knew that the Breath of God was in me. I was not afraid, I had no doubts, I had the feeling of hovering filled with the Existence of God! Then, my consciousness increased and a little more reasoning and, at that moment, I trembled with fear and I doubted. Not that God exists, I previously had a firm belief in God, I said that it is impossible that he does not exist. It was rather that God had just visited his child. My conscience told me, "What happened, it is not possible!" I was troubled. Why would God come into me? I am only an ordinary human being, is it a dream? As my heart was pounding slowly and peacefully, I realized that it was my reason that makes me doubt. I felt in the depths of myself this Peace and my filled heart, overflowing in my chest as if my heart was taking up a lot of space. Then, I removed the doubt in my head to feel this Gift of Love, to have it in me, to be able to contain it with my body, so precious as if I wanted to live it every moment by saying to myself, "I live that now and I will think later!" I knew that even my future thinking would never make me say that this is all wrong. I stayed in bed, awake for about 20 minutes, enjoying this Happiness and trying to think as little as possible, to simply feel the Wonderful Gift of God in me. Thank you Lord! I went back to sleep and got up in the morning ... but **different!**

The next night, I watched some Internet videos of the Baptism of the Spirit. I saw that several people got it! On the other hand, it is necessary to be careful, the "speaking in tongues" is not a necessary sign. See the 1st Epistle to the Corinthians, verse (12,30). In article | 13-O |, the Lord confirmed to me the way in which the {birth of the Spirit} is always carried out.

| 13-E | My 2nd Manifestation is the "seal of Jesus" continually present in me for 3 days

My testimony:

The next day, after my {birth of the Spirit}, I was hungry for God, for his Presence in me. I felt that my heart in my chest was dilated like a sweet pain, as if I was hungry for God! It is a special feeling, it looks like hunger pangs in the stomach, but this time it is in the chest, in the heart! So, I understood the pious picture where we are shown Jesus Christ with a heart in flame in the chest. I see now where this picture was inspired! This sign has been continuously present in me for 3 days. It diminished afterwards...

During these 3 days, the seal of Jesus in the chest is continually present. Subsequently during the next 6 weeks, it is present but more weakly. Subsequently during the next 6 months, it turns on weakly from time to time. After 6 months, it disappears completely. By cons, even after one year, it may return slowly during prayer.

Here is this pious image:

Internet Keywords (image)	Sacred Heart of Jesus Christ

| 13-F | Biblical explanations of my 1st and 2nd Manifestations

In the boxes below, I report excerpts from my testimony above.

Let's start:

Excerpt from my testimony:

It was on Monday night, March 14, 2016. I was sleeping in the dark and I was not thinking of anything.

(*) My feeling was to be in the dark without more...

This is the narrative of the dry bones of the prophet Ezekiel:

OT	The prophet Ezekiel	37.13-14	"Then you will know that I am the LORD (1), when I have opened your graves (2) and caused you to come up out of your graves, My people. "I will put My Spirit within you and you will come to life, and I will place you on your own land. Then you will know that I, the LORD, have spoken and done it, declares the LORD."

(1) For this Bible (New American Standard), translators have chosen to use the name (the LORD) for God. Unfortunately we lose the deep meaning of his name. His name is **Yahweh** which means (**the Eternal**). See article | 3-E |.

(2) For God who is **the Eternal**, a human being on earth is already dead until he has received his Breath of Life (his Spirit).

In summary. For God, I was dead in my grave...

This is also what St-Matthew writes:

NT	St-Matthew	24.37-44	" For the coming of the Son of Man will be just like the days of Noah. "For as in those days before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered the ark, and they did not understand until the flood came and took them all away; so will the coming of the Son of Man be. "Then there will be two men in the field; <u>one will be taken and one will be left.</u> "Two women <u>will be grinding at the mill; one will be taken and one will be left.</u> "Therefore be on the alert, for you do not know which day your Lord is coming. "But be sure of this, that if the head of the house had known at what time of the night the thief was coming, he would have been on the alert and would not have allowed his house to be broken into. " For this reason you also must be ready; for the Son of Man is coming at an hour when you do not think He will. "

In summary. This is the Last Judgment. He will come in the night and take one and not the other. See chapter | 29 |.

Excerpt from my testimony:

This happened throughout my awakening. I felt my breathing deep and too long, much too long... air at the beginning that comes in through my nostrils and, in a moment after, that the Breath of God entered me and I was totally filled with it. There are no words to describe that!

There is one surprising detail that I did not mention in the narrative of my testimony. While the Breath of God came into me, **the time in my head had stopped!** I will try to explain to you this non-human feeling. Imagine that you are in front of a clock and you are thinking, but when the Breath enters you, all the hands of this clock do not move at all, even that of seconds! You are still thinking, but time is not moving forward! It is so strange that you have to live it to believe it! I have only one sentence, "This is the Breath of the Eternal." In the Old Testament, God was often called **the Eternal** (Yahweh). Then, I understood a little better what the Eternal meant. For God, time does not exist, he is **timeless**.

In reality, the most important thing is that my feeling was to "be born from above" (like resurrect). Yes, you read it correctly!

This Breath of Life is in the image of the narrative of the birth of Adam in Genesis:

OT	Genesis	2.7	Then the LORD God formed man of dust from the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life ; and man became a living being.

St-Paul said that the person then becomes a new creation. Following the Firstborn, Jesus Christ, Son of God.

NT	Epistle of St-Paul to the Colossians	1,15	He (Jesus Christ) is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of all creation.
NT	St-John	3.3-8	Jesus answered and said to him, "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born again he cannot see the kingdom of God." Nicodemus said to Him, "How can a man be born when he is old? He cannot enter a second time into his mother's womb and be born, can he?" Jesus answered, "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born of water (1) and the Spirit (2) he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. "That which is born of the flesh is flesh, and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit. "Do not be amazed that I said to you, 'You must be born again.' "The wind blows where it wishes and you hear the sound of it, but do not know where it comes from and where it is going; so is (3) everyone who is born of the Spirit."

(1) Here, it is the baptism of water. It is repentance and conversion of the heart of the human being. See article |11-A|.

(2) Here, it is the {birth of the Spirit}.

(3) Here, by the {birth of the Spirit}, it is the liberation of death.

In short, it is the {birth of the Spirit}.

Excerpt from my testimony:

I was deeply asleep and I knew that it was the Presence of God in me, I did not have the slightest doubt.

In short, in the Presence of God, sin (here, **to doubt**) is not possible. Therefore, this is why evil is impossible in the Kingdom of God due to the Presence or the Glory of God.

Excerpt from my testimony:

I felt the Divine power and the Light enter into me, an incredible and beneficent power! I felt so good, I felt I had received an immense Gift inside my body. A Gift so precious that I wanted to keep it in me forever. Then, in my head, I said to the Lord, "Never separate me from this gift, I want to keep it forever, my life is Yours!"

This Gift is also called the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. It is surprising that I felt the "Light entering me" while my eyes were closed! When I felt this Divine power in me, I can tell you that I quickly became very humble. I felt and understood that God is Life and that I, humanly speaking, am really small in all that...

NT	St-John	1,1-4	In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was in the beginning with God. All things came into being through Him, and apart from Him nothing came into being that has come into being. In Him was life, and the life was the Light of men.

Excerpt from my testimony:

This happened and I woke up slowly. I can tell you that the Lord is so Sweet and so Powerful at the same time. During that moment, I was filled with a Happiness So Strong, it is unimaginable! I was not fully awake yet, I did not have all my consciousness yet and I knew that the Breath of God was in me. I was not afraid, I had no doubts, I had the feeling of hovering filled with the Existence of God!

In the Bible, it is said that God is Holy. Well, that is perfectly true! When I felt his Presence in me, it is a really non-human feeling. It is a happiness that I did not even know it could exist. It is as if at my {birth of the Spirit}, I had just discovered another World. Afterwards, I found it difficult not to live constantly in his Presence. I was like a little cat

that we were trying to wean from his mother! It took me about 6 weeks to come back! I can tell you that we humans, without the Presence of God, we do not know that we are not happy. We do not know what True Happiness is!

Excerpt from my testimony:

Then, my consciousness increased and a little more reasoning and, at that moment, I trembled with fear and I doubted. Not that God exists, I previously had a firm belief in God, I said that it is impossible that he does not exist. It was rather that God had just visited his child.

NT	St-John	1,9-12	There was the true Light which, coming into the world, enlightens every man. He was in the world, and the world was made through Him, and the world did not know Him. He came to His own, and those who were His own did not receive Him. But as many as received Him, to them He gave the right to become children of God , <i>even</i> to those who believe in His name,

Excerpt from my testimony:

My conscience told me, "What happened, it is not possible!" I was troubled. Why would God come into me? I am only an ordinary human being, is it a dream? As my heart was pounding slowly and peacefully, I realized that it was my reason that makes me doubt.

In short, doubt is natural and part of the human being.

Excerpt from my testimony:

I felt in the depths of myself this Peace and my filled heart, overflowing in my chest as if my heart was taking up a lot of space.			
NT	Epistle of St-Paul to the Romans	5,5	and hope does not disappoint, because the love of God has been poured out within our hearts through the Holy Spirit who was given to us.

In short, it is the Action of the Breath of God that fills the heart and makes it dilate.

Excerpt from my testimony:

Then, I removed the doubt in my head to feel this Gift of Love, to have it in me, to be able to contain it with my body, so precious as if I wanted to live it every moment by saying to myself, "I live that now and I will think later!" I knew that even my future thinking would never make me say that this is all wrong.

Note: here, it is renouncing sin once more.

Excerpt from my testimony:

I stayed in bed, awake for about 20 minutes, enjoying this Happiness and trying to think as little as possible, to simply feel the Wonderful Gift of God in me. Thank you Lord! I went back to sleep and got up in the morning ... but different!

I was {**born again**}, to a new life.

Excerpt from my testimony:

The next day, after my {birth of the Spirit}, I was hungry for God, for his Presence in me. I felt that my heart in my chest was dilated like a sweet pain, as if I was hungry for God! It is a special feeling, it looks like hunger pangs in the stomach, but this time it is in the chest, in the heart!			
NT	St-John	6,51-57	" I am the living bread that came down out of heaven; if anyone eats of this bread, he will live forever ; and the bread also which I will give for the life of the world is My flesh." Then the Jews <i>began</i> to argue with one another, saying, "How can this man give us <i>His</i> flesh to eat?" So Jesus said to them, "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless you eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink His blood, you have no life in yourselves. "He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood has eternal life, and I will raise him up on the last day. "For My flesh is true food, and My blood is true drink. "He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood abides in Me, and I in him. "As the living Father sent Me, and I live because of the Father, so he who eats Me, he also will live because of Me.

The Holy Spirit is the Breath of Life shared by the Father and the Son. Through the {birth of the Spirit}, God shares with his new child his Breath of Life already on earth by filling his whole body.

Excerpt from my testimony:

So, I understood the pious picture where we are shown Jesus Christ with a heart in flame in the chest. I see now where this picture was inspired!			
NT	2nd Epistle of St-Paul to the Corinthians	1,22	who also sealed us and gave <i>us</i> the Spirit in our hearts as a pledge .

Here, we see the meaning of the "seal of Jesus Christ" in the chest. We must "eat the Word made flesh" in order to have in us its Breath of Life.

Excerpt from my testimony:

This sign has been continuously present in me for 3 days. It diminished afterwards...			

During these 3 days, I only prayed, because when I stopped, I missed God.

As Jesus spent 3 days in the tomb before resurrecting, I really felt that I was reborn. **Even as resurrected already and now on earth!**

In the image of Jesus who is Risen on earth in 3 days. The person is reborn as a {God's child} in 3 days with Christ.

NT	Epistle of St-Paul to the Colossians	3,1-2	Therefore if you have been raised up with Christ , keep seeking the things above, where Christ is, seated at the right hand of God. Set your mind on the things above, not on the things that are on earth.

After my {birth of the Spirit}, I realized that the "sweet little pain" (which does not hurt at all) in my chest is the concrete sign of being filled with the Holy Spirit. This sign can also be seen as the Presence of the Risen Jesus Christ who suffered to save us. This is the "seal" that St-Paul talks about in order to belong to Christ.

During the 6 weeks following my {birth of the Spirit}, I had a strange feeling. First of all, time did not matter, because I felt eternity before me. Secondly, when I looked at the people around me, I felt they were deadly! They were like dead on bail, but they did not know it. In the stores, people wanted everything and they hurried. Yes, their lives are short, so they need to take advantage of it quickly! It made me a bit unhappy for them... After, I cleaned up my mind and that feeling disappeared. They only have to look for God as I did, I do not have to make myself unhappy for that.

Take a good look at what Jesus says:

NT	St-Matthew	8.21-22	Another of the disciples said to Him, "Lord, permit me first to go and bury my father." But Jesus said to him, "Follow Me, and allow the dead to bury their own dead." (2)

(1) Without the Life Jesus gives, every human being is like a death on bail. Yes, they are spiritual deaths.

Quickly, what is the meaning of the 1st Manifestation?

It is the {birth of the Spirit} that makes a person, a {God's child}.

Quickly, what is the meaning of the 2nd Manifestation?

It is the Breath of God that enters the heart so that the human being becomes its temple. Then, the person becomes a {God's child}.

NT	1st Epistle of St-Paul to the Corinthians	3,16	Do you not know that you are a temple of God and <i>that</i> the Spirit of God dwells in you?

The 3 days of prayers with the presence of the seal of Jesus in oneself are the sign of the rebirth or even the resurrection of the person with Christ **and this already on earth**.

NT	Epistle of St-Paul to the Colossians	3,1-3	Therefore if you have been raised up with Christ , keep seeking the things above, where Christ is, seated at the right hand of God ... and your life is hidden with Christ in God.

| 13-G | The 3rd and 4th Manifestations are each one, the {memorial of the communion with Christ}

Subsequently, I had 2 other Manifestations, one on the last Sunday of June and another on the first Sunday of July. This happened during 2 Eucharists on Sunday mass.

The Manifestation began when I put the host in my mouth.

My testimony:

The moment I ate the Eucharistic bread, I realized that there was a "special feeling," similar to a fluid (water or air) starting in my mouth and spreading in my chest and to fill it. Then, I felt a "presence" like butterflies in the area of my chest! It was not a human sensation at all. I did not even make a little jump! It lasted about 3 hours and then disappeared.			

(*) We know that "butterflies" feelings in the chest area are well known **to lovers**. On the other hand, this feeling is difficult to describe. It is not a feeling of happiness. It does not hurt either. This gives the feeling of a sweet suffering. It is like a mixture of 2 feelings. Jesus **suffered** for **love** for us.

NT	Epistle of St-Paul to the Romans	5,5	and hope does not disappoint, because the love of God has been poured out within our hearts through the Holy Spirit who was given to us.

I knew that these Manifestations during the Eucharist were closely related to my {birth of the Spirit}, but there was one thing that I did not understand. Why **2** Manifestations?

I also understood that with the seal of Jesus at my {birth of the Spirit}, I had 3 Manifestations in my chest.

I can tell you that God really loves number 3!

This number 3 indicates that God is Present (Holy Trinity).

Internet Keywords	Bible, what is the signification of numbers in Scriptures?

| 13-H | Now, what is the meaning of my 3rd and 4th Manifestations?

A) First explanation in July 2016.

To make the link between my {birth of the Spirit} at home and the Eucharist at mass.

Since I received the {gift of the Holy Spirit} before my 3rd and 4th Manifestations, this shows the following comparison:

1) By my {birth of the Spirit}, the Holy Spirit entered into me.

And.

2) Following the example of this "bread of life that I eat." I must let the breath of Life of Jesus Christ enter into me.

B) Additional explanation in December 2016.

If the person is truly sincere, the Eucharist is "tangible consent in front of God" in order to receive the {gift of the Holy Spirit}.

Without knowing it, these 2 Manifestations of the Lord were the very first kick-off of this book...

C) Additional explanation on February 12, 2017.

I did not understand why I had 2 Eucharistic Manifestations 3 months after my {birth of the Spirit}. I finally understood it only in February, it is for the {memorial of the communion with Christ}.

1) The first is the {memorial to the Body of Christ}.

2) The second is the {memorial to the Blood of Christ}.

NT	St-Luc	22.19-20	And when He had taken <i>some</i> bread <i>and</i> given thanks, He broke it and gave it to them, saying, "This is My body which is given for you; do this in remembrance of Me." And in the same way <i>He took</i> the cup after they had eaten, saying, "This cup which is poured out for you is the new covenant in My blood.
	1st Epistle of St-Paul to the Corinthians	11.24 -25	and when He had given thanks, He broke it and said, "This is My body, which is for you; do this in remembrance of Me." In the same way <i>He took</i> the cup also after supper, saying, "This cup is the new covenant in My blood; do this, as often as you drink <i>it</i> , in remembrance of Me."
	St-John	6.52-57	Then the Jews <i>began</i> to argue with one another, saying, "How can this man give us <i>His</i> flesh to eat?" So Jesus said to them, "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless you eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink His blood, you have no life in yourselves. "He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood (1) has eternal life, and I will raise him up on the last day. "For My flesh is true food, and My blood is true drink. "He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood abides in Me, and I in him. "As the living Father sent Me, and I live because of the Father, so he who eats Me, he also will live because of Me.

(1) In my testimony, this explains the "special feeling." Similar to a **fluid** (water or air) that starts in my mouth and **spreads** into my chest and fills it with **butterflies**.

| 13-I | My 5th Manifestation is a message for this book

At the beginning of September 2016, I was worried about this book. I was wondering if it would sell...

My testimony:

A few days later, one night, I had a dream. I was sleeping and I had a "flashback" that reminded me of my {birth of the Spirit}. Subsequently, I had these feelings:

- 1) I Am with you;
- 2) The commercial success of this book is unimportant;
- 3) You will not miss anything.

As I said before, there are no words, they are feelings.

The next day, I realized that I did not have to worry about it and write, that is all. Later... I realized that God really wanted this book. Why? In prayer, each time I asked for information for this book, he always made me a little Manifestation on the same night. So, **it is his book**, I am just writing...

A) It was only at the end of writing that I understood why the success of this book is unimportant.

This is because the reader must know the truth even if it may not please him! It is because on earth, God leaves the human free of choice. So, the Lord wanted a Christian book adapted to our time (the 2000s). My job is to make this book **visible** and **available**, no matter if **people read it or not**.

| 13-J | My 6th Manifestation is a request for information about the Holy Spirit

In September 2016, I discovered that there is a lot of information available about the Holy Spirit. But how to take stock of what is true?

- 1) The New Testament says that the {gift of the Holy Spirit} or its reception is tangible, real, physical in the person.
- 2) The holy apostles only baptized adults because they needed the consent of the person.
- 3) Some Christian movements say that the {gift of the Holy Spirit} or its reception is done at Christian baptism.
- 4) Looking at my testimony of my {birth of the Spirit} written in detail 4 days after the event, my narrative followed what the apostles say...

I was really torn, because the {gift of the Holy Spirit} or its reception is one of the cornerstones of Christianity.

So, I decided to ask it to the Lord...

It was on September 21st, here is my testimony:

A) That night, here is my prayer:

"Thank you, Lord, for being in my life. Lord, forgive me for what I do wrong sometimes. Help me to love you more because I am only a human being. You are my Life and it is Yours. Lord, I have a problem with your book. I do not know if the Holy Spirit always has a physical manifestation even at baptism. You know, but I do not know, I am confused. Can you send me a sign whenever you want? Thank you Lord, I love you, good night!"

B) I did not expect anything quickly. Then around 4 o'clock in the morning, something happened...

That night, the weather was nice.

I was sleeping in the dark and I was not thinking of anything.

- (1) I heard like a storm (thunder and a "flash" of light)!
- (2) I was half-awake and wondered what was going on outside...
- (3) Then, a wind started to blow gently on me...
- (4) Then, I realized that there was a wind in my room!
- (5) Then, I felt that the wind came at the same temperature (or heat) than me.
- (6) Then, I felt that the strength of the wind was such that it made me tremble all parts of my physical body. All my interior was trembling like tree leaves in the wind.

(7) I finally understood that it was the Holy Spirit in me.
 (8) I took the time to feel his beneficent Action in me.
 (9) Later, I felt a soft pain in my chest.
 (10) I said to the Lord, "Thank you, you are very kind!" Then, I fell asleep.

After this Manifestation, I had to work for a long time to understand. The Lord likes that we work a little. I did not understand the message until 4 days later. In reality, it was simply necessary to look in the New Testament.

So, I discovered the narrative of Pentecost...

To make a comparison, I put each line number of my **testimony** in the narrative below.

NT	Acts of the Apostles	2,1-4	When the day of Pentecost had come, they were all together in one place. And suddenly (1) there came from heaven (sky) (2) a noise like a violent rushing wind, and it filled the whole house (4) where they were sitting. And there appeared to them tongues as of fire (5) distributing themselves, and they rested on each one of them (6). And they were all filled (8 and 9) with the Holy Spirit (7) ...

(2) Here, there is a small translation problem in this Bible. For the Jews, the heaven is simply the sky above them.

There, the Lord has confirmed it!

Yes, there is always a Manifestation when the Holy Spirit is Present!

Reflecting a little, the word Spirit means "Wind or Breath." The word Holy means "without any evil, which is only proper to God." So, how can we receive the Wind or the Breath of God without feeling it? This comes from our misinterpretation of what the word spirit means. In Greek language, a spirit is a wind. On the other hand, our usual idea is that spirits pass through us without feeling them...

It is impossible to receive the Wind or the Breath of God without actually feeling it in us...

Even St-Peter (the leader of all Christian movements) has no power over the Holy Spirit:

NT	Acts of the Apostles	10,44	While Peter was still speaking these words, the Holy Spirit fell upon all those who were listening to the message.
		10,47-48	"Surely no one can refuse the water for these to be baptized who have received the Holy Spirit just as we <i>did</i> , can he?" And he ordered them to be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ.

It is easy to see that no Christian movement makes the {gift of the Holy Spirit} through Christian baptism. It is God alone who makes this gift.

I was ready and the Holy Spirit came to Visit me quite simply.

God will do the same for you when you are ready too...

| 13-K | My 7th Manifestation, a Perfume

My testimony:

At the end of September 2016, one evening when I finished my prayer in my room, I felt an "orange perfume!" I could smell this "perfume" for about 5 minutes. Yet there was no smell of orange anywhere! While taking the time to breathe several times, I realized that the smell of this "perfume" was in my head, in my brain and not elsewhere! It is like I felt it, not with my nose, but inside my head!

In neuropsychology, we know that our nose is just an odor sensor. However, there is an odor interpretation center in our brain. The Lord had simply put this Perfume directly there! God thus shows the human being that he is our Creator. It is well known that the Manifestation of a Perfume is associated with the Presence of the Holy Spirit.

As I told you in article | 10-E |, "So, it takes a means of communication between the 2 world/World. It takes a means of exchange or transfer. This means of transfer is the Holy Spirit! Everything goes through him..."

Here, even prayer goes through the Holy Spirit!

| 13-L | My 8th Manifestation, the seal of Jesus in the chest on request in prayer

After my {birth of the Spirit}, I felt a sweet little pain in my chest in the region of my heart. I knew that this was the mark of the {gift of the Holy Spirit} in me. Reading St-Paul, I realized he was talking about it.

NT	2nd Epistle of St-Paul to the Corinthians	1,22	who also sealed us and gave <i>us</i> the Spirit in our hearts as a pledge .

This Manifestation of the seal of Jesus in my chest is still available to me when I ask it in prayer. This is very comforting, because I know that God accompanies me by his Presence in my everyday life.

In this verse, the choice of the word "pledge" **needs an explanation**. In reality, St-Paul meant here that the process of resurrection begins on earth with the {gift of the Holy Spirit} and is finalized after our human life. St-Paul sees this gift as a deposit on the inheritance of the Kingdom of God. See chapter | 30 |.

| 13-M | My 9th Manifestation, information about the devil

A) Jesus uses the term "Satan" but not really the term "the devil."

Satan means only "Opponent of God." For Jesus, anyone who does not do the Will of the Father (who is only to do good) is somehow a "little Satan." This explains why Jesus could see "Satan(s)" everywhere around him on earth! On the other hand, we must not take fright and see ourselves and others as such anyway. God alone is perfectly good. How many parents in Quebec use the following affectionate expression for her child, "Where is she hiding, the beautiful little love demon of her daddy?"

We know that the idea of the devil had a dazzling thrust around the 1500s. People of that time were very superstitious and saw demons everywhere...

If we do research on the Internet, what do we find? Many Christians still believe in the devil and many others do not believe him at all. I even found an exorcism on the Internet filmed seriously by religious people. Yes, this film makes you think! See article | 18-J |.

In addition, I have seen various filmed testimonies from people who have a near-death experience (NDE). Some saw a light at the end of a tunnel. Some people saw Jesus in front of them. See article | 6-O |. On the other hand, other people who have had a bad life talk about having seen or gone to hell with demons. See article | 18-I |.

I am absolutely convinced that all these people have seen what they say. I do not even doubt it for a second, because to tell such an experience, you must have been deeply distressed! So I do not take anything away from them.

NT	St-John	5.28-29	"Do not marvel at this; for an hour is coming, in which all who are in the tombs will hear His voice, and will come forth; those who did the good <i>deeds</i> to a resurrection of life, those who committed the evil <i>deeds</i> to a resurrection of judgment . (1)

(1) Excerpt from the New American Standard.

Here, I am giving you **my own English translation** of the same verses but from the Bible (Jérusalem de 1956 des Éditions du Cerf):

NT	St-John	5.28-29	Do not be surprised, the hour is coming when all those who lie in the tomb will come out at the call of his voice; those who have done good will be resurrected for life, those who have done evil, for damnation . (1)

(1) In French, the exact expression is: "**pour la damnation**."

On the other hand, being a scientist, there is something illogical. If we take into account that there is really the "Last Judgment at the end of time" and that everyone is there, **then why did these people see hell directly without any judgment?**

In psychology, the only valid explanation I see is a disturbance of the brain during the process of death. I will discuss this subject in more detail in chapter | 16 |. In psychoanalysis, the idea that we have of the devil has been well defined. It is **the death drive** that every "normally formed" human being has in his head in a natural way. We can see this **drive** as the fear of dying. In a way, the devil is "the personification of death or the actor who brings us to death!" Yes, it is scary, for sure!

Scientifically, I have all the solid evidence that God really exists. By cons, I do not have any solid evidence that the devil exists. In addition logically, he cannot exist, I explain myself:

- 1) How to freely choose good or evil if our Creator leaves this "Tempter" around us?
- 2) It would be illogical that God (being alone Eternal) to maintain the life (existence) of his "Great Adversary."

This is what Jesus said:

NT	St-Mark	3.24	"If a kingdom is divided against itself, that kingdom cannot stand.

So, God does not maintain the existence of the devil!

3) This would also be against the observations of science. We know that the laws of nature (physics, chemistry, etc.) are mathematically perfect and regulated like a Swiss watch. If the devil existed, he would have disturbed these laws and made them random, even to understand nothing about them. Which is far from being the case, they are perfect!

After this reflection, my research on the devil was over. I said to myself, "I will surely not pray the Lord to show me whether the devil exists or not!" I am willing to write this book for the Lord and for you, but it does not tempt me to see the Horror! Let's say I am a little scared...

B) I will tell you something that happened last night (October 15, 2016).

You should know that a person does not write a book in one shot like that. There are many phases (research, draft, etc.). Yesterday, I was at the end of a step and I said to myself, "It would be interesting to push a little more the story of the devil, but I do not have any solid information to do it." It was 10 pm, I went to bed without praying because I was tired. You know how in the middle of the night our brain make us dream about our worries the day before. You are going to laugh...

My testimony:

I was asleep, and dreaming for a moment here and there that I was possessed by the devil! Yes, it was pretty "terrifying" at times, but I was telling myself through other waking moments that my brain was playing tricks on me. Thereafter, suddenly around 4 am, I felt a sweet wind on my whole body that woke me up completely. My brain then calmed down and the wind on me stopped only a few minutes later. This wind was as if someone had just lit a fan on me. In fact, I had blankets all over my body up to my neck, so there was no real breeze.

(*) You will tell me, "What is this?" Well, that is the answer I was looking for. I told you, the Lord always hears us. He answers his {children}.

Here is the explanation:

When I fell asleep, my brain stirred up ideas about the devil, so Evil and Possession, etc. My brain played tricks on me a part of the night. Suddenly, the Holy Spirit Blows on me to make my fears disappear.

So what is the message?

- 1) Jesus Christ drives out demons. This, the Gospels do not stop saying it. So, this is not the message.
- 2) We must not play with our fears in our heads, because our brains accumulate unnecessary stress and can play tricks especially at night. That is what is taught in psychology. So, this is not the message.
- 3) The Holy Spirit is there to Blow our fears out of us in order to make us feel good and at peace.

A well-mastered message:

In addition, I realized something important during my Manifestations. When the Lord makes a message in the head of a person, every small detail of the thought is important. In reality, the Lord perfectly controls the experience.
→ Thereafter, it is only a matter of reflecting in order to discover the meaning of the message.

To confirm this box, see the bonus Manifestation of article |13-Q|.

In the experience, where was the devil? In my head. It was my fear of death and the Breath chased it away.

→ **So, the message received is: "the devil is the fear of death in our head and Jesus has the power to drive it away by giving us Eternal Life."**

For skeptical readers who say to themselves, "But this does not prove that the devil does not exist!" Yes, you are absolutely right...

Except that:

- 1) To prove that something exists is feasible. For example: it is all about finding a single cat on earth to prove that cats exist.
- 2) On the other hand, to prove that something does not exist, it is impossible! Why? We would have to rake the whole universe to make sure that what we are looking for is nowhere! **Who can do that? No one!**

C) Conclusion on the message I received.

For me, the message I received is clear.

Moreover, in the months that followed, I did not have any other Manifestations of the Lord in order to correct my conclusion. **So, my conclusion is good.**

I thank the Lord greatly for his enlightenment!

| 13-N | My 10th Manifestation, the Love of God

Yesterday (October 30, 2016), a hearing-impaired young woman who does not speak much has gone to my home to sell me a CD of music. To encourage her, I bought it. Listening to the music on the CD, I realized that it is she who sings and is accompanied by musicians. It is normal that she does not sing very well, but I found that she had great courage to sell her records from house to house. I said to myself, "I do not have half of her courage!"

My testimony:

In the middle of the next night, when I was sleeping in the dark and I was not thinking of anything, I felt a "beneficent vibration" inside me for about 5 minutes. The strength of this "beneficent vibration" came from the inside and not from the outside. It made me vibrate inside my body like the turbulence of a flame, but at the temperature of the body. Then, I said, "Thank you, Lord, I love you!" **At the same time, "the turbulence of the beneficent vibration" has become at least twice stronger for about one minute!** Then "the turbulence of the beneficent vibration" diminished and stopped. After, I felt in myself as if the inside of my body was still vibrating a little. This sensation lasted most of the night.

1) First sense of this Manifestation:

→ God loves us and shows it to us. Thank you Lord!

2) Second sense of this Manifestation:

You must know that the Lord does not make a Manifestation that has only one meaning. It is a bit like watching a rainbow, there is not just one color...

→ There is a link between this Manifestation and that of February 5, 2017. See article | 13-P |.

| 13-O | My 11th Manifestation, the confirmation of the Breath of God that gives the birth from above

Yesterday (December 6, 2016), I was wondering whether the {gift of the Holy Spirit} can be received in any other way than by the "Breath of God in the nostrils." I was thinking that there are surely other ways according to the person who receives it and according to the message that God wants to give. I thought that this information was missing in this book...

My testimony:

The same night, I made this prayer:

"Lord forgive me for what I do wrong sometimes. Lord, your book is going well. Lord, I need your help to finish it. Good night!"

In the middle of the night, when I was sleeping in the dark and I was not thinking of anything. I felt a "Wind enter in my nostrils." I began to breathe deeply through my nostrils. No matter how I breathed, the wind was continually entering. I realized that I inhaled and expired in a human way, but that the Wind continued to enter through my nostrils. I knew very well that it was the Holy Spirit. I finally thanked the Lord for his help.

Behold, the Lord has confirmed it!

The {gift of the Holy Spirit} or the {birth from above} is always done in the same way for everyone.

The {birth of the Spirit} is always done by: "the Breath of the Presence of God which is really long in your nostrils."

This Breath is really long because it is the Breath of the Eternal (God). This Breath is wonderful because God shows you his Glory. This Breath completely fills the inside of your body. Afterwards, it gives you the feeling that your chest is dilating a bit because the Breath of Life has filled your heart and you are now a temple of God. This Breath brings you to a new life.

The 3 Persons of God are in this "Breath that gives the birth from above." To go further, see article |30-G|. It is the **Glorious Breath** of the **Eternal**. 1) The **Eternal** is the Father. 2) The **Breath** is the Holy Spirit. 3) The **Glorious** is the Son.

See article |10-I|.

This Breath of Life is in the image of the narrative of the birth of Adam in the book of Genesis.

OT	Genesis	2,7	Then the LORD God formed man of dust from the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living being.

This time, it is not the first breath of biological and mortal (human) life on earth, but the second Breath of Eternal Life for the Kingdom of God.

St-Paul says that the person then becomes a new creation. Following the Firstborn, Jesus Christ, Son of God.

NT	Epistle of St-Paul to the Colossians	1,15	He (Jesus Christ) is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of all creation.

I remind you of the chart of article |3-D|.

I give you here a small chart summarizing the general concepts defined mainly by St-Paul:

The 2 forms of life		The principle of life	The envelope
1st form of life	The mortal life on earth (An autonomous life, not united to God)	The soul or the psyche (1st breath, mortal)	The human body The psychic body (1)
2nd form of Life	Life in Heaven (A united Life at the Eternal Source, God)	The Spirit (2nd Breath, Eternal)	The Spiritual Body (2) (Unveiled at the end of time)

(1) St-Paul calls "the psychic man or the **natural** man," the person who does not have his {birth of the Spirit}. He only has the first breath.

(2) St-Paul calls "the spiritual man," the person who has had his {birth of the Spirit}. He got the 2nd Breath.

|13-P| My 12th Manifestation, the {spiritual body}

Important note:

I have not yet given the necessary notions to explain this Manifestation.

Here, I give only my testimony of my Manifestation on February 5, 2017.

My testimony:

I was sleeping in the dark and I was not thinking of anything. Suddenly, I felt a weak vibration in my body, but a strong enough vibration in my face that woke me up. I recognized one of the signs of my Manifestations of the Holy Spirit as in many others. However, there was no Wind or even a message. I said to myself, "There is no message in there, what is this vibration for?" Anyway ... and I went back to sleep.

There is a link between this Manifestation and the one that occurred on October 30, 2016. See article |13-N|.

→ The explanation of this Manifestation will only be given in article |30-F|.

| 13-Q | Another Manifestation, a bonus for you

At the beginning of July, I had about two weeks left to complete the French correction of this book. I had not had another Manifestation of the Spirit in about 5 months. I thought to myself, "I hope the Lord is satisfied with his book!" A few days later, I had a little Manifestation.

My testimony:

That night, I was dreaming of one of my old friends. I had lived in his home during my studies in the 1990s. In my dream, I spoke to him and there was a very light and continual breath coming out of my mouth and going towards his direction. However, my friend tried to avoid this breath. I felt that the breath did not come from me, but from inside me and that I was just trying to direct it towards him. Afterwards, I woke up softly and **felt that there was actually a continual Breath coming out of my mouth** for a few more minutes! Then, I recognized the Manifestation of the Spirit, and I was not even surprised. But I wondered, "Why this friend in particular?" I cannot talk to him about this book because he died about 10 years ago!

I did not understand the meaning of this message until a week later:

- ° I know that this friend was a good person;
- ° I cannot do anything for him anymore, because he is dead;
- ° We see that this friend is reluctant to receive the word and breath;
- ° We see that personally, I am only an instrument to transmit the word and breath that do not come from me.

If I make the link with this book:

- ° No one is saved by his own good deeds, but for following the Way of Christ.
- ° We have the time of our human life to receive the Breath of Life of God, after which it is too late.
- ° Of course, many readers will be reluctant to believe and make efforts;
- ° I transmit to the reader the {inspiration} that I received.

Note:

This is my first Manifestation in which I do not receive the Breath, but I transmit it. So, I got the answer to my question. The book is ready for its distribution and the Lord is satisfied.

(*) Thank you Lord for answering me!

| 13-R | A small physical healing

A) At the beginning of October 2016, I was already working full-time on this book for 2 months.

Those who write a lot on computers know that neck pain is inevitably felt. I told myself that I would like to have a little chiropractic session to relax vertebrae of my neck. The only difficulty is that a physiotherapist told me several years ago that I could not because I had a dislocated vertebra in my neck. So, a chiropractor would only stretch that same vertebra further without relaxing any of the others. For those who do not know what I am talking about, when I turned my head, a person next to me could hear a "tac."

So I prayed to the Lord for some help. I told him that I am ready to write his book, but I have pain in my neck all the time...

Well, a few days later, I had a little healing:

In the middle of the night, when I was sleeping in the dark and I was not thinking of anything. Then, I had a feeling of vibration in my spine (from the middle of my back and over the entire length of my neck). The vibration lasted for about 5 minutes. Then, the vibration disappeared, and I felt that my neck was less tense. I immediately thanked the Lord for his help.

About a month later, I realized that my symptom (the famous "tac" in my neck) no longer existed at all. All I had to do was some exercise to remove fatigue. We must understand that the Lord gives a good help, but that he does not do everything for us...

So for people who are suffering, you see that there is always hope with the Lord! See article | 17-C|.

| 13-S | Other small miracles in front of my eyes...

Before my {birth of the Spirit}, I witnessed 3 little miracles.

A) Around the age of 32.

It was Easter Sunday morning. I was visiting my parents in the countryside. At this time of the year, early in the morning, the fields are covered with snow with a thick ice crust on the top. The ice crust is so thick that a person can walk on it without breaking it. That morning, I went for an ATV ride (all-terrain vehicle, 4 wheels) on the crust. I was about 2 km from the house when I found myself in an area where the crust did not support the weight of the vehicle. The wheels of the vehicle then broke the crust. I put the vehicle into reverse, and the wheels still broke the crust. To remove some weight, I decided to walk next to the vehicle. My feet broke the crust and I had the snow practically at the hips. If I try to move forward, the wheels were breaking the crust. If I try to move backward, the wheels were still breaking the crust. There had holes everywhere like a Gruyere cheese! I then made a small prayer to the Lord. I asked him for help, "Lord, I will not be able to go to Easter mass if you do not help me!" Well, after my little prayer, the wheels of the vehicle no longer broke the crust at all. I went around the holes and went back home! But that is impossible! The wheels passed on the remaining crust between the holes which, of course, has no strength to support the wheels! At mass, to thank the Lord, I put a nice \$ 20 bill in the quest basket. Thank you Lord!

B) At the age of 34.

I had just started a new job in Lévis. I had been in room and board for 3 months already. I was looking for a reasonably priced apartment, but I could not find one. One evening, I prayed to the Lord. I told him that I was not able to find an apartment and that I needed his help absolutely. Well, the next day in the nearby street, there was a sign for an apartment for rent! I went to work at 8 am, I made a phone call to the owner. At 9 am, I was visiting the apartment and decided to take it!

From these 2 little miracles, I understood that we start by doing our best to solve the problem. Then, if we ask him, the Lord helps us to make the missing part...

C) During my research if God really exists at 45 years old.

Around November 2015, my expensive print cartridge (\$100 for 1,000 copies) indicated 0% ink. It continued to print a little, but the result was pretty pale. During the rest of my search for God, I printed at least 500 additional pages with the same empty ink cartridge! Subsequently, the day I told myself that my search was over, **that very same day**, the cartridge stopped working all of a sudden. **Pretty surprising!** As if the Lord provided ink...

I give you here the reference of a testimony of a sister (a nun). She said that her convent had no money to buy 2,000 liters of heating oil needed to survive the winter. Well, the convent started the winter with 500 liters and ended the winter surprisingly with the same 500 liters!

Internet Keywords (small video testimony)	1) Saint Joseph and the testimony of an amazing miracle. 1) Saint Joseph et le témoignage d'un miracle étonnant.

| 14 | Testimonials of other people

| 14-A | Introduction, synergy

In chapter | 13 |, I gave you my testimony for 16 wonders.

By cons, I am not alone to be a {God's child}. There are many others. Of course, not all {God's children} necessarily want to give testimony. As I told you, Christianity is a relationship between a person and God. In writing this book, I realized that it is a joint work, it is a synergy. I wanted to write this book well and the Lord wanted to {inspire} it. In a certain way, the will of the person is united with that of the Lord. The Lord never imposes anything, because it is a relationship. I never imagined writing such a book in my life! The Lord and I worked very hard to make you **this gift of Truth**. Who has not noticed that truth is not easy to find in our beautiful human society of power and artificial kingdoms? In any case, our beautiful little blue planet (Earth) and nature are currently suffering a lot of it...

| 14-B | Listen to other testimonials

To do this, I propose 2 methods (A and B).

A) By your own search for testimonials on the Internet.

Here are:

1) From one of the following Internet search engines:

Google	YouTube	Vimeo	Dailymotion	or other

2) I suggest the following Internet keywords:

Baptism of the Spirit	Holy Spirit
Outpouring of the Spirit	Spirit of God
Testimony of the Baptism of the Spirit	Testimony Holy Spirit
Testimony of the Outpouring of the Spirit	Or other combinations of these words

3) A good search tip.

By doing your research, when you have a first testimony, in the side window, the Internet will offer other testimonials. In this way, you can go from one testimony to another. There are always beautiful discoveries to make.

B) You can also go to the website of this book for the suggested resources.

See article | 0-I |.

It must be understood that a visual testimony is very difficult for the one who testifies. This is a great gift that requires a lot of respect from the viewer (us). No one makes a testimony of the heart to have fun to become a star! Often a person who testifies is not even thanked. So no one testifies for himself, but for the Lord...

So, the Lord thanks you all for your testimonies, because they are always very precious for him and for all of us!

Note for skeptics:

You have to be realistic and understand that there will always be people playing comedy. To find out: look at their eyes; their sincerity; their messages and you will recognize those who are telling the truth. Most people are sincere. In any case, you lose absolutely nothing to seek, because I assure you that God really exists and that the Holy Spirit is a real Manifestation. ***Search and you will find...***

| 14-C | In summary, here is what you will discover in these testimonials...

These are all very nice and generous people.

We can see sincerity in their eyes.

Their encounter with the Holy Spirit changed their lives. They are all much happier.

Some have had the {gift of the Holy Spirit} during the day and others at night like me.

Some testimonies are very recent, because they show with their hands the {gift of the Holy Spirit} that fills the heart.

Some people thought that their life was really over (drugs, prison, alcohol, illness, etc.). Then, they shouted from the bottom of their hearts to the Lord. He came to them and gave them a {second life}. ***Congratulations!***

Some have even been cured of an illness.

I have even seen the testimony of some religious people. After the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, they realized that in reality, although they had big diplomas, they missed the principal, the encounter with the Lord...

NT	St-John	14,26	"But the Helper (the Paraclete), the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in My name, He will teach you all things, and bring to your remembrance all that I said to you.

So, good discoveries to all!

| 15 | To be born again

I invite you to look at the charts of chapter | 35 |.

| 15-A | Why is it necessary to be born from above?

Let's go logically. You are on earth because you were **born** on earth. Therefore, we can have access to earth only if we were **born** on it. When the Son of God came to earth, what did he do? He incarnated and was born on earth as a child (Jesus). On earth, Jesus gave himself the name of "Son of man." On the other hand, the Son of God existed before being humanly born on earth. I could say that the word birth has much more meaning of "**to have access to a world**" than to start to exist as such.

Since there are 2 world/World, there are also 2 types of births.

NT	St-John	3,1-7	Now there was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews; this man came to Jesus by night and said to Him, "Rabbi, we know that You have come from God as a teacher; for no one can do these signs that You do unless God is with him." Jesus answered and said to him, "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born again (*) he cannot see the kingdom of God." Nicodemus said to Him, "How can a man be born when he is old? He cannot enter a second time into his mother's womb and be born, can he?" Jesus answered, "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born of water and the Spirit he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. "That which is born of the flesh is flesh (1), and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit (2). " Do not be amazed that I said to you, 'You must be born again.'

(*) In the Jerusalem Bible (French), the expression is: "**to be born from above.**"

On earth, we are born as a baby and then grow up. Jesus says, "**That which is born of the flesh is flesh**" (1). In short: what is born humanly is mortal and remains on earth.

St-Paul gives this revelation:

NT	1st Epistle of St-Paul to the Corinthians	15.50	Now I say this, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God;

In the excerpt from St-John, Jesus states that to go to the Kingdom of God, a human being born on earth must this time be born again by the Breath of Eternal Life of God (the Holy Spirit). Jesus says, "**That which is born of the Spirit is spirit**" (2).

I have already said that after my {birth of the Spirit}, a "New World" had just opened up to me. This New World is for me a reality in my consciousness even though I am not able to touch it or show it. I give you an example to try to make you understand my thought. Suppose you have never been an astronaut and that is my case. We do not know the reality of space and weightlessness. By cons, for a person who has already been an astronaut, all this is a reality that he has lived and felt and **this will always be present in his mind for the rest of his life...**

| 15-B | What happens after his {birth of the Spirit}?

We become a witness of the Risen Jesus Christ. God is no longer a belief, but a certainty because he is now part of our life. This allows the person to follow the teachings of Jesus much more easily.

The person becomes a {God's child}. It is not an idea, it is real. In a pictorial way, the person who had both eyes on earth now has one eye on earth and the other in Heaven. Over the next 6 months, the person will have to adapt little by little because his values will change. The person understands that God never leaves his {child} alone. Like me, the person will probably have small Manifestations from time to time as needed. Like me, the person will feel the "seal of Jesus in his chest" for a few hours when he asks it in prayer.

It must be understood that the {birth of the Spirit} is **the greatest Gift** a human being can receive on earth. All the gold of the world cannot buy a place with God! So, be very happy to have your {birth of the Spirit} because you have to work on yourself to get it. In reality, the true purpose of our existence on earth is to obtain our {birth of the Spirit}. Why? On earth, life is about 100 years old. In Heaven, Life is Eternal!

After my {birth of the Spirit}, it was easy for me to understand that the Holy Spirit changed things in me. I am more at peace; I am calmer; I am less worried about life; objects are less important; my life has a real meaning.

St-Paul said that the person is renewed after his {birth of the Spirit}. **He was not wrong!**

NT	Epistle of St-Paul to the Colossians	3,8-10	But now you also, put them all aside: anger, wrath, malice, slander, <i>and</i> abusive speech from your mouth. Do not lie to one another, since you laid aside the old self with its <i>evil</i> practices, and have put on the new self who is being renewed to a true knowledge according to the image of the One who created him

To tell you that the {birth of the Spirit} is a concrete Manifestation in us, I will tell you something. After my {birth of the Spirit}, my interior became quite sensitive (not emotionally, but physically) for about 6 weeks. I give you examples:

1) Before, I used to play a bit of my electric guitar with distortion effect (metal sound). Afterwards, I was no longer able to support the guitar with this aggressive sound against my chest. It hurt me, inside me! So I continued to play, but without distortion.

2) Before, I was able to speak sometimes aggressively. After that, I no longer felt aggressive in myself, as if it were just a memory.

Subsequently, my human nature came back a bit and I became less sensitive.

|15-C| To win good and to lose bad

A) Here is what I won:

- ° My life has taken on a real meaning;
- ° To feel the Presence of God (his Breath) in me;
- ° To know the Goodness of God, to feel loved by him and to know that he is always there for me;
- ° To know that my life is connected to God;
- ° To never feel lonely;
- ° To love God really;
- ° To be less in a hurry, for with God we have Eternity;
- ° To have peace in my mind;
- ° To find Christian songs on the Internet that are very pleasant, see article |26-D|;
- ° To know how to pray naturally, see chapter |26|;
- ° To be more patient with nature, animals and people;
- ° To have a dozen Manifestations of the Holy Spirit and {inspiration} for this book.

B) Here is what I lost:

- ° **My fear**, my life is not only in my hands, God accompanies me;
- ° **My solitude**, God is always there to listen to me;
- ° **My human death**, God has already made me feel my resurrection with Christ;
- ° **Sometimes, feeling a little lost in life**, God always has plans;
- ° **My impatience**, God is a good teacher, because he has created life on Earth in some billions of years;
- ° **My lust**, when you have God in your life, you have everything.

| 15-D | Here is what I do not find easy as a {God's child}

Mainly the attitude of incredulous people...

Why?

They are often very aggressive and impatient in their words and actions. Many times, they would like to have finished something before they even start.

They often run after consumer goods. They want to have a lot, but rarely have time to use their "beautiful accumulated objects."

They have a life on earth, but they do not have time to stop to live it or really feel it.

They want at all costs to succeed in their earthly life. They want to be admired.

They do not realize that God has given us a beautiful garden (Earth) so that we can be happy together.

The Incredulous people say that {God's children} are strange. For once, I agree with them perfectly. Can we be elegant when we have one eye on earth and the other towards Heaven?

Jesus said:

NT	St-Luc	12.16-20	And He told them a parable, saying, "The land of a rich man was very productive. "And he began reasoning to himself, saying, 'What shall I do, since I have no place to store my crops?' "Then he said, 'This is what I will do: I will tear down my barns and build larger ones, and there I will store all my grain and my goods. "But God said to him, 'You fool! This <i>very</i> night your soul (1) is required of you; and <i>now</i> who will own what you have prepared?'
		12.29-31	"And do not seek what you will eat and what you will drink, and do not keep worrying (2). "For all these things the nations of the world eagerly seek; but your Father knows that you need these things. " But seek His kingdom (3), and these things will be added to you.

(1) The word "soul" means the breath of human life. In reality, the word "life" is more appropriate here.

(2) For the things of earth.

(3) Jesus asks us to work first to obtain a place in the Kingdom of God rather than to accumulate objects on earth that are only ephemeral.

| 15-E | For those whose {birth of the Spirit} is recent

Congratulations and welcome to the family of God!

A) Are you a little lost in all the information available?

You have just experienced your {birth of the Spirit}:

- ° The Internet says things;
- ° The Bible says things;
- ° Religious people say things.

It is normal to be a little lost...

Since it is useless to convince you that God exists, that the Bible is true and that the catechesis received is lame, I will talk to you **in a very direct way**.

B) There is absolutely nothing scary about what I am going to say...

1) The Plan of God is very simple, I make you an image:

God created earth as a garden of flowers. There are flowers of all kinds, from the wildest to the sweetest. The Son of God (Jesus) came to earth to gather flowers for the house of his Father. Since you had your {birth of the Spirit}, it is because God has recognized in you a pleasant flower. Other flowers that are not pleasant stay in the garden of earth. They got their reward from their lives here and will not go further than that.

2) All the rest is human confusion that does not exist:

- ° The devil;
- ° Eternal hell;
- ° The return of the Son of God at the end of time with holy angels to lock up demons in hell;
- ° Souls of purgatory;
- ° Ghosts.

C) Why all this confusion?

There are many factors:

1) We will see in chapter |16| that the base of our brain is naturally mythical. The good fairy, the witch and the devil are all mythical beings that come from **our psychic reality**. The more superstitious a person is, the more these beings become present in his consciousness. It is our imaginary fear that activates them, because we then need to identify the danger.

2) Throughout history, humans have used these natural myths to scare, to obtain power and riches. The Greeks were champions of mythology.

3) Although the Bible is true, some authors have been influenced by Greek mythology. In addition, the Jews were limited in their words and they did not have a language as rich as the Greeks.

4) Many texts of the Old Testament are inspired by God through patriarchs and prophets. On the other hand, one must be realistic, there are some texts that have invented from scratch by people of power without any scruple in order to frighten the people and to obtain sumptuous temples. They had even invented the false idea that if a person was poor or sick, it was because God had abandoned him.

5) 200 years B.C., there was a translation of the Hebrew Bible into Greek language, it is the Septuagint. The problem is that the Greeks put their mythological grain in it. Even now, Jews do not use the Septuagint. On the other hand, some ideas of the Septuagint were introduced in the New Testament. The most beautiful example is the book of Revelation (Apocalypse) written by (John of Patmos) and not by (the apostle St-John). See article |20-B|.

6) Before Jesus came to earth, the Jews were waiting for a "messiah of wrath" to get rid of their invaders, the Romans. Subsequently, the early Christians were martyred by the Romans as well. It was unthinkable that God would leave their executioners without punishment! After the Resurrection of Jesus and his Ascension to his Father without punishing anyone, it was then necessary to caress the idea that the Son should come back at the end of time to clean that all up.

7) Unfortunately in all its history, Christianity has been free of expression only since the 1960s. So about 60 years out of 2,000 years of history. At the very beginning, the early Christians were persecuted. Afterwards, they hid in the catacombs. Subsequently, from the 300s, royalty came to take all the place and sowed more fear of the devil than the love of Christ. When one thinks about it, it is miraculous that the Scriptures of the apostles and the 4 evangelists still survive!

It is its mystical (which means mysterious) form that has allowed the Scriptures to pass through time. Fortunately in the course of history, since humans alone (without the Holy Spirit) do not have the capacity to understand the

mystery, they no longer have the capacity to modify it. So, we end up with Scriptures of very sufficient quality. It is true that a footnote of the Jerusalem Bible tells of some inconsistencies about the Last Judgment in the Gospel of St-John. See chapter |29|. It is also true that a footnote of the Jerusalem Bible tells of a modification of some verses at the end of the Gospel of St-Mark made by some "ms." Personally, I believe that for 2,000-year-old Scriptures it is miraculous that there are no more problems than that!

D) To take stock.

1) Before the {birth of the Spirit}, at the step of truly believing in God, the idea that the devil could really exist arises in thought. This is a mirror effect in the human psyche that is false. See chapter |16|.

→ If the individual of Good exists (God), ~~then there is also an individual of Evil (the devil).~~

2) After the {birth of the Spirit}, the idea that eternal hell could really exist arises in thought. This is still a mirror effect in the human psyche that is false.

→ If there is a place for the individual of Good (Heaven), ~~then there is also a place for the individual of Evil (hell).~~

3) After the {birth of the Spirit}, the person will feel that Eternal Life has been granted to him, but that the people around him have a limited life in time. In a way, they are dead on bail (borrowed time). It is only that they do not know it and do not want to know it. During the first 3 months, when I was looking at people, that feeling was very present, and then it disappeared.

NT	St-Matthew	8.22	But Jesus said to him, "Follow Me, and allow the dead to bury their own dead."

(*) It is Jesus who gives the {new birth}. Without it, our life is limited to the time of our human body.

Why do you think these 3 ideas are in the New Testament? It is simply because their authors had their {birth of the Spirit} also...

Note:

All this does not frighten the person who has had his {birth of the Spirit}, because he has his ticket to Heaven. No, it scares him only for other people around him who have not had it. In short, his fear is not for himself, but for others. I give you the example of a viewer watching the movie "The Titanic," he is not scared for himself, but for those who will sink with their boat!

4) Give yourself time to properly organize the information in your mind. Our society loves tangible things and what you have experienced involves realities that do not come from earth. I have not only written this book for the people who do not have their {birth of the Spirit}, but also for those who have had it like you. I was trained in science to dissect what may seem complex in order to make it understandable and orderly. In short. Yes, our Creator really exists. Yes, he hides and does not perform miracles in abundance, because he does not want to influence people in their choice of life. Yes, Earth is his garden of culture in order to get his {children} for his House. Yes, you are lucky to have your place like me. So be happy of it, and if others do not believe you, this is their problems...

E) Here are my tips:

1) You now have a tangible confirmation that God really exists since he has Manifested himself to you.

2) With this Manifestation, you are no longer quite the human person you were before. So, you need to take the time to adapt to your new reality of {God's child}. Breathe through your nose and take the time to enjoy the Peace of God in you.

3) If suddenly, you began to think that the devil and eternal hell exist, it is normal! Read chapters |16| and |18|, this will help you become calm again and smile again.

4) If you are a little lost in the catechesis that you have learned, it is normal! I searched for 4 months. The problem is that there has been too much human power in history. Tell me sincerely, how a religious person can guide his followers

by saying that the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is a reality when he did not receive it himself! In Christianity, this problem is generalized and absolutely insoluble. In Quebec, I do not believe that there is more than one Christian in a thousand who has received the {gift of the Holy Spirit} and I am optimistic. It must be known that {God's children} are all humble, so it is obvious that their calls have never been heard very loudly...

5) Every day, always be happy to have received this **Gift from God** even if people do not believe you. That is their problem and not yours. You already have your ticket to Heaven! So, you do not have to make yourself unhappy for people who do not want to make efforts! They will simply end up in the ground like everything that is born on earth. You, you are now "born from above" as Jesus says so well (St-John: 3,3).

6) Talk about what you live only to those who can take it.

7) It should be known that some Christian movements have taken in the past very firm positions in their ways of doing things and their **dogmas** and nothing and no one can make them change their minds. That is why this book has been written to get the message straight to those who want to hear.

8) We must understand that our human brain was born on earth and that it likes the realities of earth. Let's be realistic, God exists, but earth exists too! We must accept to live with a compromise, to have one eye in Heaven and the other on earth at the same time. **But the priority is God.**

9) If you ask yourself, "Should I become a religious person?" This is not required in the Gospels. Moreover, I do not know any testimony in which the Lord asks to be a religious person. Even the Blessed Virgin does not ask for it in her Apparitions. On the other hand, you have your {birth of the Spirit} and many religious people do not have it! You are already part of the {assembly of God's children}, so you have already succeeded in your life.

10) How do you know if the Lord has a project for you? He will ask you this clearly and give you his support. **Do not do anything without him because you are going to face problems.** Do not try to save the world, Christ has already passed and they crucified him! I give you an example with this book in article |13-I|. Basically, the message that I got from the Lord is: "whether this book sells or not, reads or not, my role is to give this message and that is it!" The purpose of this book is not that the reader believes me. No, the goal is to give him the opportunity to walk towards the Truth (Jesus). A reader can look at this book for an hour and then close it, because it scares him and puts it back in his library. Two years later, this same reader can experience a difficult event and reopen this book to go one step further. The way to the Lord may be short, it may be long and sometimes it may never be completed. The difference between success and failure depends only on your sincerity and your effort. If a person does not succeed, it is either because he does not believe enough in God, or because he has other things more interesting to see. But as the proverb says, "God helps those that help themselves."

F) In summary:

- ° Thank the Lord;
- ° Take good care of yourself;
- ° Do only what you can do with respect and freedom of others;
- ° Do not take fright.

|15-F| If my testimony scares you, know that it scared me long before you...

When I had my {birth of the Spirit}, a New World opened to me. I was very excited! However, there was a feeling in me that scared me! Not for me, but for other Christians. I had felt the Breath of God who had already resurrected me on earth. At the moment, I did not tell anyone, because it was a truth far too heavy to bear...

Why do you think it took me nearly 3,000 hours to write this book? In this book, I give you everything you need to know and do, I cannot do more for you...

How many will consult it? How many will begin a real search for God in their life? How many will truly believe? How many {will be born of the Spirit}?

John Baptist said, "I am a voice of one crying in the desert (or in the wilderness)." In French, the expression: "to speak in the desert" is synonymous "to talk to the wind" or "to preach to deaf ears." In any case, I hope this book will not do the same thing...

| 15-G | How to explain the {birth of the Spirit}?

In this article I do not go further than the base of the revelations of Jesus. I do not build a model. **I only give the facts...**

One of the earliest texts of the New Testament and therefore one of the closest to the direct thought of Jesus is the 1st Epistle of St-John dated around the year 0040. Here are the points:

- ° There are many Persons in one God.
- ° God the Father is the Eternal;
- ° God the Son is the Word who pronounced the Creation;
- ° The Word was incarnated (Jesus Christ) on earth;
- ° Some important recommendations on the Way of Christ;
- ° Jesus is the propitiation for our sins;
- ° The anointing that Jesus gave to his disciples and which dwells in each of them;
- ° The Spirit of God who dwells in a {God's child} as in a temple and teaches him the truth;
- ° Unity between the Father, the Son and {God's children};
- ° Eternal Life.

→ On the other hand, St-John is unable to say what form of life a {God's child} will have at his resurrection and when all this happens.

Let's go with what we have...

God the Father is the only Source of Eternal Life.

The Father sent his Son (Jesus) to earth to teach a new religion based on the heart. Christianity is the practice of honesty, goodness, truth and charity. This is the Way of conversion taught by Jesus for 3 years (the Gospels). The person must belong to God or Jesus as his Master.

By his death on the cross, Jesus obtained from his Father:

- ° Forgiveness of sins for his disciple.
- ° The power to give Eternal Life to his disciple and to have access to the Kingdom of God.

If the disciple sincerely fulfills the Way of Jesus, he then obtains from his Master **a spiritual anointing**. See article | 12-A |.

NT	1st Epistle of St-John	2.27	As for you, the anointing which you received from Him abides in you , and you have no need for anyone to teach you; but as His anointing teaches you about all things, and is true and is not a lie, and just as it has taught you, you abide in Him.

(1) This spiritual anointing is also called the {gift of the Holy Spirit}.

This spiritual anointing is a **tangible mark in the chest** that Christ gives to his disciple. His disciple then bears the name of {God's child}.

This anointing is a **permanent miracle** in the chest of a {God's child}. During the first months, the anointing is constantly felt. Thereafter, it is felt only during prayer. This anointing does not hurt, it looks like a sweet pain. This anointing is very reassuring for a {God's child} because he knows that God accompanies him every day of his life. Jesus said, "I will be with you until the end of time."

Due to its mortal condition, the human being has a short breath. The anointing is done by the inspiration in one's nostrils of the long Breath of Eternity of God (the Holy Spirit). This Breath fills the whole body. Subsequently, the Breath gives the impression of dilating the chest a bit, which makes the spiritual **anointing** appear. This Breath brings the disciple to a new life as a {God's child}. He is assured of the inheritance of the Kingdom of God at the end of his pilgrimage on earth. He does not have to fear death on earth. Jesus said, "When the Spirit of God dwells in a temple, this temple cannot be destroyed."

Now there are 3 questions left unanswered:

- ° How does the resurrection happen?
- ° Where is the Kingdom of God?
- ° When will all this happen?

St-John does not know because Jesus did not say it. Jesus assured his disciples that all this is in the hands of the Father only. The Power of God does not need to be explained or even understood. ***When God promises, He always acts!***

So, a {God's child} must live with hope and must trust in his Father, that's all!

In this article, I will not go any further. In reality, the reader has everything that is necessary to know.

Why does not Jesus talk about the 3 questions above?

Only because the Jews of the time of Jesus were not ready to hear the answers! The Jews were very keen to resurrect with their human bodies on earth. So to resurrect, it was obviously necessary to wait for the end of the world and that Jesus comes back on earth to do the cleaning and to throw the evil and the death in the lake of fire. Jesus could not tell the Jews that they would not come back to earth, that the Kingdom of God is spiritual as angels. The Jews followed Jesus during his mission because they were waiting for a "messiah of wrath" to throw the Romans out of Israel. Jesus could not say too much. It was up to people to make their own discoveries. In his Epistles, St-Paul understood that the person does not resurrect with his human body. For St-Paul, the person would receive a spiritual body at the end of time.

Now, for readers who would like to go further and get an idea of this mystery, I present 2 models:

1) The modern model is given in chapter 30 . This is the most complete model. I used the Bible and modern science to build it. In this model, the human being has a body and a consciousness. This model is quite complex and requires some knowledge of science.

2) The old model is given in chapter 35 . It is based on the modern model, but this time I use the old point of view of the time of St-Paul. In this model, the human being has a body and a soul. This model is more basic and requires no notion in science.

Psychology notions

| 16 | Some useful notions of psychology

In order to go further in our search for the Truth, it is necessary to look at some basic notions of human thought. The major difficulty in finding the logic of the Bible is related mainly to the idea of the devil. It is therefore necessary to acquire some notions to see clearly in all this. Before the 1900s, science of psychology was not advanced enough to understand what was happening with people who saw demons. Now, psychology helps to better understand and differentiate between reality and imaginary.

| 16-A | Consciousness

More than 100 years ago, people thought they had a kind of light in their head that we called a "soul." At death, the soul floated like a ghost in the air... This thought was very common and is still a little today. But with modern science, this thought is no longer realistic at all! It has been discovered that the human brain has over 100,000,000,000 living cells interconnected like a telephone network. Our brain is a living organism that functions autonomously. Even Jesus 2,000 years ago knew it, because here is what he says:

NT	St-Matthew	16,15-17	He said to them, "But who do you say that I am?" Simon Peter answered, "You are the Christ, the Son of the living God." And Jesus said to him, "Blessed are you, Simon Barjona, because flesh and blood (1) did not reveal <i>this</i> to you , but My Father who is in heaven.

(1) The human being is made only of flesh and blood. His interior (or his soul) is as deadly as his body.

When you read this book, you are in your consciousness. It is your brain that makes your consciousness. If your brain dies, your consciousness stops too. Do you want proof? Where are you when you sleep very deeply? You can sleep 8 hours as if the night had lasted only 10 minutes. We say to ourselves, "Not already in the morning!"

| 16-B | Reality or imagination?

To better understand our human brain, here I am doing a small introduction to a fundamental basis that is the difference between reality and imaginary.

First, there is the "**external reality**" that surrounds us. This is what really exists around us. Example: the trees of our street.

Secondly, without knowing it, we make ourselves a "**mental image**" of this external reality, because we interpret reality through our 5 senses (sight, smell, hearing, taste and touch). We make a mental idea of reality. For example, a tree is tall, green, and does not move on its own. This mental image serves to define external reality. This gives us some reassuring landmarks.

Except that:

1) The "**external reality**" around us is one thing.

AND...

2) Our "**mental image**" of this reality is another.

On the other hand, we try to make the two coincide as much as possible.

A) I give you 2 examples:

1) The cat of the neighbor really exists (the mind, the mental image), because I have already touched it, it was purring (the external reality).

→ Conclusion, cats exist.

2) A witch does not really exist (the mind, the mental image), because I have never met her (the external reality).

→ Conclusion, witches are just stories of fairy tales.

B) I give you 2 other examples:

1) A human being knows (the mind, the mental image) that a rainbow exists, because he sees its colors (the external reality).

→ Conclusion, rainbows exist.

On the other hand...

2) For a dog (the mind, the mental image), the rainbow does not exist, because it does not really see colors (this is an incapacity of its sense of sight).

→ Conclusion, rainbows do not exist.

We find here a major problem, because we have 2 opposite conclusions for the same reality. Man sees what dog does not see. We find here that our belief can be different from the true reality.

C) Here is an example of history:

You must have seen the movie about the Titanic tragedy (a boat that sank off Newfoundland in 1912). We, the spectators of the movie, we know the story, the boat will sink and it is for us a (true reality). But at that time, Titanic's passengers firmly believe that the boat is "unsinkable" (the mind, the mental image). What caused the disaster is not (the reality) of the boat that can really sink. No, what caused the disaster is (the mind, the mental image) that it is impossible for the boat to sink. So for the futility of arriving at the port of New York in record time, the crew of the Titanic sailed without fear at high speed and in the middle of the night through the icebergs. As a result, the Titanic hit an iceberg and sank quickly, resulting in about 1500 deaths.

D) So, it must be understood that there are 2 distinct things:

1) The true **reality**.

AND...

2) What we **think** is real.

The difficulty is that there is not a direct link between the 2!

An example:

3,000 years ago, some people thought the stars were angels. Now the stars are nuclear furnaces. But it is always the same reality, the same stars.

So for the same **reality**, there can be several **thoughts** (the mental image) according to the time.

The major difficulty of the human being is that he firmly believes (his mental image) and not (the reality). Unfortunately, we see reality through our "own psyche." It is for this reason that although pollution is very obvious on earth, our society does not really care about it.

A last example:

A person who has never been to war can find it very exciting. Fighter planes, rifles, power, etc. But for someone who has been there and came back alive, that can be very traumatic. So much so that he can spend his nights screaming!

E) Conclusion:

Our mental image does not guarantee the true reality that surrounds us.

It is therefore necessary to discern the difference between the 2 otherwise we are subject to:

- 1) To mentally believe that a **true reality** is **false**.
- 2) To mentally believe that a **false reality** is **true**.

That is why I introduced the detective's method in article |5-F|. It is a powerful way to search for the true reality and correct our mental image.

|16-C| Let's take a first step in the development of the child's brain

To discern the difference between the true reality and our thought, it is necessary to acquire some notions of the development of our brain. Our brain begins its construction baby and finish it after adolescence.

The younger a child is, the more his brain develops its fundamental parts. I am asking you a question. What is the foundation of the human being? To answer it, remember the questions you ask when a mother gives birth to a baby.

- ° Is the baby alive?
- ° Is the baby healthy?
- ° Is the baby a girl or a boy?

The first two questions are about life and death. The third question concerns reproduction. The bottom of our brain is primarily concerned with staying alive and secondly with reproducing. In psychology, it is said that our brain is basically psychosexual.

Now, let's take a first step in building our brain...

A) We know that a baby is born with his eyes closed.

He is innocent and has no mental idea of the world around him. His life is connected to his mother who takes full care of him. At this age, the fundamental part of his brain is "total security."

At first, the baby (the self or the ego) and his mother (the other one) together make only one person in the baby's head. This is what we call "being in fusion." To represent the whole, I draw a rectangle below. This rectangle is the "mental safety" of the baby.

Here is the chart:

The whole
The self or the ego (the baby) and the other one (the mother) merged

In psychology, the will or desire of a person is simply called: drives or urges.

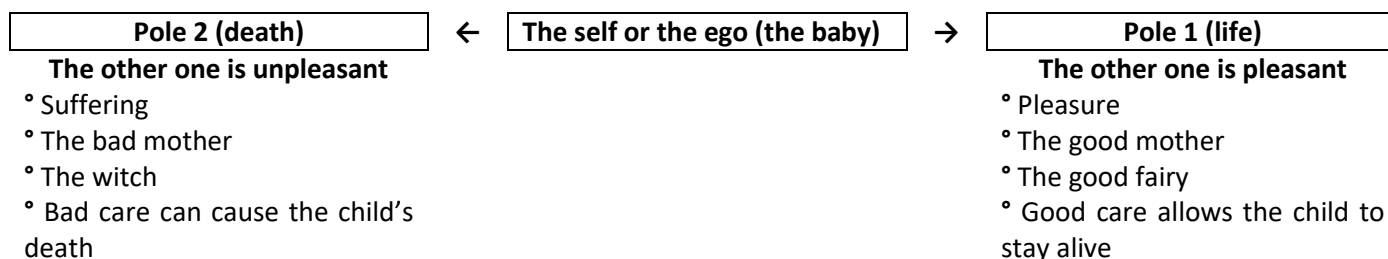
For the baby, all the drives (desires) are mixed in his head. Everything is possible, he has not yet classified his drives (desires) in the drawers of his head.

B) Afterwards, the baby will realize that he and his mother are 2 people.

This will happen around the age of 8 months. In psychology, this is called: the mirror stage.

There is the self and the other. For the first time, the baby will make a classification in his drives (urges). A new mental (psychic) arrangement will then be built. There is the self and the other. The other one (the mother) can bring to the baby pleasant sensations (pleasure) and unpleasant sensations (suffering).

Here is the chart:



At this stage, we see that the child is totally dependent on the other one (his mother). Depending on the care or lack of care, he may live or die. This is the first time the baby is scared. He is scared of dying and it is really terrible for him! It is the love of his mother that will give him the security needed to continue to develop mentally.

On the other hand, the reality is:

Sometimes the mother is very pleasant because breastfeeding is at the right time.

Sometimes the mother is very unpleasant because breastfeeding is done too late.

Notice (above) the two **poles (1 and 2)** on the right and on the left.

The 2 very simple thoughts on the other one will form.

The pole 1 is the pleasure symbolized by **the good fairy**.

The pole 2 is the suffering symbolized by **the witch**.

We see the fundamental concepts: (pleasure/suffering); (good/bad); (good fairy/witch).

Let's not forget that there is a lot of dependence between the baby and his mother. This link is of an extreme strength that is connected to the 2 poles (life/death).

In psychology:

The pole 1 is called the (life drive).

The pole 2 is called the (death drive).

The pole 1 invigorates the body to move forward and make plans.

The pole 2 unbalances the body and makes it depressed.

The will to live comes at the same time as the fear of dying. This is mainly the explanation of the fervor for extreme games. When we approach death, this is also where we hold the most to life.

C) Later, when the child will really know his father.

Instinctively, the mother will transmit to the child that the father is stronger than she physically. The child will make a mental association once again very exaggerated...

The pole 1 representing the good fairy will be associated with (the exaggerated masculine strength) to become the image of the super good father who can be effectively associated with "God the Father."

The Pole 2 representing the witch will be associated with (the exaggerated male strength) to become the image of the super bad father who can be effectively associated with the "**devil**." Now you understand why the image we make of the devil is masculine.

It is not uncommon to hear in Quebec, "When I was young, my father was criticizing so much in the house that he looked like the devil. In any case, it was hell!"

For the brain, these 2 poles (life/death) are indissociable like the 2 ends of the same stick.

For fans of horror movies, authors have used the arsenal of fear of the brain of the child under construction:

- ° The great **link of dependence** of the child on the other one;
- ° The **evil of the witch**;
- ° The **exaggerated male power**.

All this to create **terror** or **evil possession of the devil**! Yes, it is obviously terrifying, but it is in our head...

Be careful, what I am explaining to you is not the reality about the devil.

No, I only show you the construction of our thought (the mental image). This has nothing to do with (the true external reality). That is what every human being has recorded in the back of his brain.

On the other hand, you can see that **I proved that God really existed** in chapter |5|, whereas many adults in our society believe he is a fairy tale...

But then, you will tell me that the devil exists too! **Now it is your brain playing tricks on you.** Why? As I explained, the true reality and our mental image are 2 separate things. The structure of our thinking when we were children does not guarantee the exact reality of what surrounds us. See article |16-B|.

When a person begins to truly believe in God as real, the logic of the brain naturally intervenes like a mirror. He wonders then if the opposite of God exists, so the devil. In a way, if white exists, black exists. **Not necessarily**, white is the presence of light and black is the absence of light. If hot exists, cold exists. **Not necessarily**, there is air with a lot of thermal energy that produces hot air and there is air with little thermal energy that produces cold air. If life exists, death exists. **Not necessarily**, death can be seen as the absence of life.

Do not forget that our thoughts are not a guarantee of the true reality, we must seek a little...

|16-D| Superstitions or realities?

In addition to article |9-F|.

Are you superstitious? No, are you really sure? There is often a close relationship between rituals and being superstitious. People who are superstitious like mysterious objects and their powers...

For millennia, humans have had superstitions about the afterlife.

A) How to know the truth in all this?

It is simple:

I proved in chapter |5| that our Creator (God) really exists. **So it is a fact.**

In chapter |18|, we will discover that the devil does not exist as a "supernatural being of Evil." However, let's not go too fast with a simplistic conclusion. The devil really exists as a fundamental "psychic concept" in our head that is our natural fear of death. It is for this reason that the devil is so present in the Bible. The devil is **the personalization of a reality of our psyche**. This reality is natural and necessary for everyone to defend themselves and stay alive.

It is for this reason that a "supernatural being of Evil" is widely spoken in Christianity as in many other religions. This is because the fear of death is natural for all humans.

Jesus told us that the human being is only mortal. Jesus told us that a person only resurrects in unity with God. So there are no floating souls and no ghosts. These are just superstitions.

The only promise of God is to send our Intercessor (the Holy Spirit) on earth. **There is nothing more!**

In the Old Testament, there were messengers of God, the angels. In the New Testament, angels are very little spoken. Why? Because it is the turn of those who have received the {gift of the Holy Spirit} to make the messages as in this book.

B) In summary, the real messages come from 2 possibilities:

1) The Holy Spirit who makes you a Manifestation.

The Holy Spirit presents himself as a pleasant Breath or Wind.

He does not speak because his Messages are directly related to the Word of Christ (the Gospels) that every Christian must know.

2) A human person who has received the {gift of the Holy Spirit} and who speaks to you as I do in this book.

Everything else does not exist for real, it is not complicated.

Whatever it is:

- ° Ghosts walking in your room or floating on the ceiling;
- ° Souls of purgatory;
- ° Death fumes;
- ° Demons.

*If you see these kinds of unpleasant characters, go see your doctor without delay.

See also article |16-E|.

C) Your brain can play incredible tricks on you if:

- ° You are too exhausted;
- ° You have not slept for some time;
- ° You are taking strong medication, drugs or a lot of alcohol;
- ° You live in constant fears or in superstitions;
- ° You have a personality disorder (neurosis, borderline, psychosis, etc.).

D) However, do not worry with trivial problems.

1) Sometimes, a person lying down, feels that there is an individual or something that goes up on his bed. By checking, he finds nothing. The explanation is simple. These are the legs of the person who have small involuntary muscle spasms. The brain always first looks for an explanation outside of himself to try to identify the danger, hence the impression that something goes up on his bed.

2) It may happen that a person lying down wakes up and feels paralyzed for a few moments. He may think that there is "something" that holds him in place. The explanation is simple. When we fall asleep, our brain starts by deactivating the consciousness and then the motor function of the body. When waking up, if the motor function is still not reactivated before the return of consciousness, the person will feel as if he is fixed for a little while.

↑ (Essential articles)	They are necessary for understanding the next chapter.
↓ (Optional articles)	They give additional information.

| 16-E | Let's take a second step in the development of the child's brain

At the age of 3 or 4, there is a second stage of development in the child's head. Once again, the drives (or the urges) will be classified in 2.

In psychology, this is called: the division of aggressive and sexual drives.

Here, the word "aggressive" has no meaning of "wickedness."

The aggressive drive (the pole 3) is the complex name for the desire to socialize (family and friends).

The sexual drive (the pole 4) is the complex name for the desire to reproduce.

For the observant parents. It is also at this age that the child will "have fun with his little body alone." So the parents are going to say, "What is my little girl doing under the table with her hands in her panties?" Children (girls or boys) all do so at this age. This is part of normal brain development.

A) What does the Bible say about sexuality?

It says that people have to be married to have sex. Yes, here we are talking about relationship. This involves 2 people. In reality, it is a question of responsibility. A man and a woman must absolutely commit themselves, because all the children need parents. In addition, sexual diseases must not spread. It is not very complicated to understand...

On the other hand, the Bible never talks about individual sexuality (masturbation). Why?

1) First, it is mostly men who wrote the Bible. For them, this is part of their normal life from the age of about 12 years old. So, why address this natural subject?

2) Second, whether we like it or not, children aged 3 to 5 years old all have a childish sexuality.

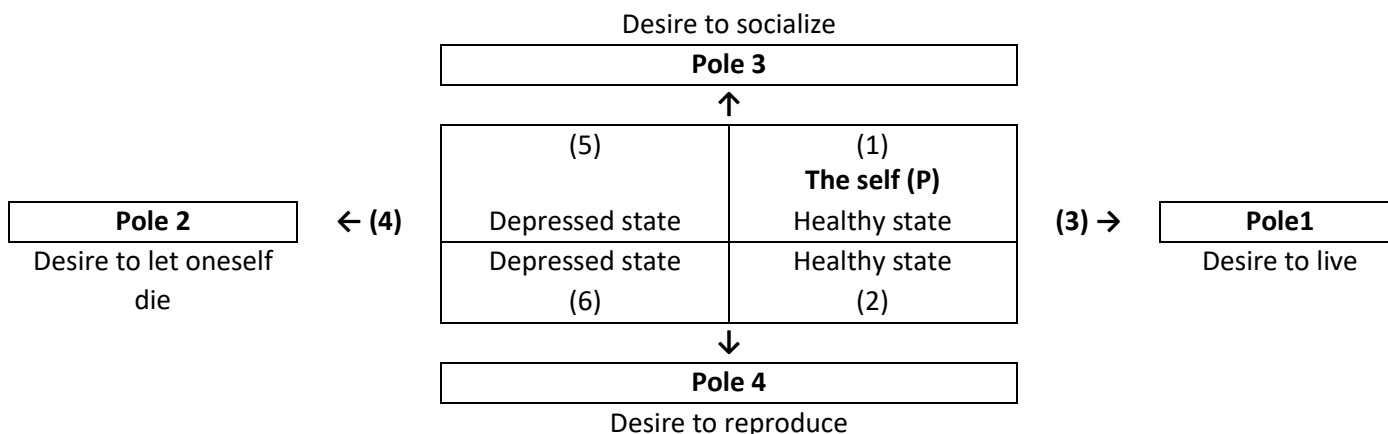
Individual sexuality (masturbation) is natural.

B) To go in the same direction.

The neuropsychologists and gynecologists recommend this practice to singles (men or women) for the maintenance of their health. We have to accept things as they are.

C) Now, I take the last chart of article |16-C| and I add the 2 new poles.

Here is the chart:



This chart roughly represents the different possibilities (zones) of our human thought.

Our current thinking is the point "P" in the chart. We know that our thinking is constantly changing. Our point "P" can move on the chart.

Here are the different areas of the chart:

- (1) The zone of friendly thought.
- (2) The area of passionate thought of lovers (sexual love).
- (3) The line of the desire to live (existential love).
- (4) The line of the desire to die (depression).
- (5) and (6) The zones of thought of depressed people (personality disorders).

D) It is said in psychology that the human brain is fundamentally **psychosexual**.

This means that human thought is inevitably connected to a sexual dimension. We see it even in very young children. Boys and girls do not think the same way and do not have the same needs.

Trying to remove the sexual dimension from a human being is like making him suffer and destroying his brain. On second thought, who is the great actor of suffering and death? **Yes, the devil.**

Now, you understand better why the human sexual dimension is not a game.

|16-F| Celibacy

NT	Genesis	2,18	Then the LORD God said, "It is not good for the man to be alone; I will make him a helper suitable for him."

We only have to think about St-Peter who was married and had children. Before the year 1000, several religious people were married. Currently, many married pastors have said that their family relationship allows them to better understand and help their followers. I believe that the charge of religious people is difficult enough like that without spending their life alone. I think it is time for mentalities to change a little...

On the other hand, personally, it would be nice to see women having the right to the function of priest. Women have strong interpersonal skills. At the time of the apostles (which means missionary), their work was very physical (walking

long) and dangerous. Whereas only men were mandated for this work, this was understandable. But currently with civil laws and technology, I am convinced that women could very well have their place...

| 16-G | How should one determine his love for God?

The best place is on **line (3)** of the chart of article | 16-E |.

Why? Because God is Life. Our personal life comes from him. Therefore, we must love him with a **love of life**.

This Love is first. It is, of course, before all other forms of love, because God is the Creator of our existence. Without him, we would not exist, and so would the others.

In the prayer of the "Our Father," Jesus asks us to love God as a Father. Here, he asks to love God in the **zone (1)** of the chart, because God does not want us to be scared of him.

On the other hand, some people may feel attracted to being passionately in love with God or Jesus. Here, we must pay attention to the passion of love, because this is the **zone (2)**. I have nothing against passion. The difficulty is the extremely complex and involuntary reality of the functioning of our human brain in this **zone (2)**. We know that God is not sexual, but the human being is. In our brain, there is a natural law prohibiting love within the family. This is not to allow ourselves to be in love with our father or our brother. So, if someone tries to love God (Father or Son) in this way, there could be a conflict of thought.

So, begin by loving God in the **zone (1)** and if afterwards your love for him increases, simply go on the **line (3)** (the love of life).

| 16-H | The complexity of human thought

Throughout human history, people have always tried to firmly control their thoughts.

Recently, neuropsychology (the science of the internal brain study) has put an end to this misunderstanding. Human thought is a process, a path. It starts in the very low and unconscious part of our brain that we call "the brainstem." It ends in the very high and conscious part of our brain called "the cerebral cortex."

You will understand that our conscious thoughts are then the product (the end) of the process that we do not really control. To try to control our thoughts, we can then do 2 things:

1) Trying to remove our thoughts from our head by saying that we do not want them. Of course, eventually our brain will make other thoughts that may not please us yet. Then, we fight with our thoughts for a while! It is a little exhausting, but we all know this reality inside us.

2) If we think about it, in the end, it is we who make the decision of our actions. We can do only what is moral and throw the rest of our thoughts in the trash without feeling too guilty.

On the other hand, the science of genetics has discovered that human beings have been built as they are again now. From the beginning, the human being has always been like you and me. Since it is God who made the human being, he knows very well what he has put in him and he must surely not expect us to have ever angelic thoughts!

So do not worry too much about your thoughts. But you have control over what you do.

NT	St-Matthew	21,28-31	"But what do you think? A man had two sons, and he came to the first and said, 'Son, go work today in the vineyard.' "And he answered, 'I will not'; but afterward he regretted it and went. "The man came to the second and said the same thing; and he answered, 'I <i>will</i> , sir'; but he did not go. "Which of the two did the will of his father?" They said, "The first."

(*) For Jesus, what is really important is not our thoughts, but our actions.

In conclusion:

Pay attention to your brain. When it feels safe, it works very well. When it is afraid, it is programmed to flee. What is the utility of the mythical idea of the devil? Escape from danger as quickly as possible to stay alive! Hence the popular expression in Quebec (in French), "He ran so fast ... as if he had the devil on his heels!"

Psychoanalyst Jean-Jacques Lacan said that, "The human brain is structured like a language."

I give you 2 examples of our language.

1) Here is a simple example with the word "love":

A woman is seeing (with her eyes) her husband.	She is experiencing feelings of love for her husband.	She is imagining her husband as her "prince charming..."
↑	↑	↑
The true external reality	Our psychic reality	Our imagination

2) Here is a complex example with the word "devil":

He does not exist concretely.	This terrifying and gripping character exists as a fundamental concept in our head that is our natural fear of death. This is necessary in order to defend oneself and stay alive on earth.	He is the ideological symbol of the supernatural being of Evil. He is the imaginary actor who brings us to biological death.
↑	↑	↑
The true external reality	Our psychic reality	Our imagination

| 16-I | A small summary of personality disorders

I do not intend to make you specialists in psychology. On the other hand, when we search for reality, it is better to have at least a small reference point to situate personality disorders.

See the chart of article | 16-E |. Personality disorders are found in the depressive state, the **zones (5) and (6)**.

A) Here is this little useful reference:

1) If a person **has a personality disorder**, what he experiences in his head **will always be impregnated with suffering**.

2) On the contrary, if a person **does not have a disorder**, what he experiences in his head **will not be impregnated with suffering**.

B) Now, let's look very briefly at the main personality disorders.

I give here only an overview. To go further in the search, simply use **the words** that I indicate and go to see on the Internet or in books specialized in psychology.

1) In article | 16-C |.

I have already talked about stage 1 of brain development: it is the mirror stage.

The child must complete stage 1 to go to stage 2.

If the child does not succeed, there is a blockage.

Then, it is the **infantile psychosis** that begins without delay.

2) In article |16-E|.

I also talked about stage 2: it is the division of aggressive and sexual drives (urges).

The child must complete stage 2 to go to stage 3.

If the child does not succeed, there will be blockage.

Then, it will be the **adult psychosis** that will begin in adolescence.

3) Let's go a little further...

I have not talked about stage 3 of development yet.

Stage 3 is the "resolution of the Oedipus complex" which happens from the age of 4 to 10 years approximately.

The resolution of the Oedipus complex is simply "the place the child holds" in his relationship with his parents (father/mother).

There are 3 possibilities:

a) Is the child important for parents or not? So, does the child exist or not?

If the child does not feel (inside, in his psyche) sufficiently exist, there will be blockage.

Then, it will be the **obsessive family neurosis** that will begin in adolescence.

b) Is the child asked to assume child or adult responsibilities?

If the child is asked to take on adult responsibilities, there will be a blockage.

Then, it will be the **phobic family neurosis** that will begin in adolescence.

c) Is the child a girl (like her mother) or a boy (like his father)?

If the child does not feel (inside, in his psyche) enough (girl or boy) as the case may be, there will be a blockage.

Then, it will be the **hysteria family neurosis** that will begin in adolescence.

4) Last step, adolescence.

After his Oedipus complex has been sufficiently solved, the child will be able to pass the last stage of his adolescence to become an adult.

Unfortunately, if the child suffers significant physical abuse (especially sexual), there may be a **borderline personality disorder** that will begin in adolescence. This disorder is called "borderline" because it is between the neurosis and the psychosis.

C) In general, how can we identify a personality disorder?

→ **It is absolutely necessary to have a diagnosis of a psychotherapist.**

By cons, I give you 3 basic benchmarks:

1) **A neurotic** person knows that he has an emotional problem, but feels unable to solve it. He often has great paralyzing fears that may seem much exaggerated.

2) **A borderline** person often has big addiction problems (drugs, alcohol, etc.). He is between the disorder of the neurosis and the psychosis, it depends on the moment.

3) A **psychotic** person does not know that he has a problem. On the other hand, you will perceive it if you are careful to let him speak without judging him. You will find that there is a strange feeling that emerges, as if the meanings of the words used and the feelings generated are not completely connected.

| 16-J | Take the right Way with Jesus...

A) What Jesus asks:

- 1) To renounce evil and do good.
- 2) To learn and apply the Word of Jesus in his everyday life. The thought of God must accompany you in your actions and your decisions.
- 3) To make your conversion from the heart to become a good person, upright, honest and charitable.
- 4) To belong to God
- 5) There are 3 commandments that are: to love and respect God; to love and respect other people; to love and respect oneself.

In one sentence, what is asked is to be sincere and that God is the priority in your life.

B) Here is what Jesus does not ask:

It is not asked to be a religious person.

The apostles were mere workers.

Note:

The Holy Spirit teaches everything as St-John says so well. Christianity would be supposed to be a nation of prophets, but it is very far from being the case, because the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is rare.

It is not asked not to have sexuality.

St-Peter was married. Religious people had the right to marry until the year 1000 approximately.

Note:

The total absence of sexuality is harmful for the regeneration of the brain. The person may then feel haunted by his thoughts or become impatient or even bitter.

→ The consultation of a sexologist is recommended.

It is not required to make big sacrifices.

Jesus asks us to do our human conversion.

Water represents the human purification that one does on one's own by following the Way of Jesus.

The Holy Spirit is the purification that God alone gives when we are ready to receive it.

Note:

The Holy Spirit provides a lot of "gifts" that far exceed the qualities that can be cultivated by oneself.

It is not asked to believe in the devil.

Fear does not help to love God. See chapter 18 .

Note:

If you really see ghosts; if the TV is talking to you, etc.

→ The consultation of a doctor is recommended. Usually it is a psychotic personality disorder.

On the other hand, it can also be the taking of strong medications or drugs.

It is not required to withdraw from the world or to lock up oneself.

Jesus asks to be little lights for others and to help them.

Note:

If you are scared of everything; if you need to do rituals in order to calm down, etc.

→ The consultation of a psychologist is recommended. Usually it is a neurotic personality disorder.

It is not asked to spend his day in adoration.

The human is purchasable, but God is not.

Kings have always needed adorators, but God is a loving Father.

Note:

God is real, you do not need to dream. On the other hand, if you desire your {birth of the Spirit}, you will have to concretely work on your conversion.

It is not asked to own anything.

If a person is rich and his wealth is not a hindrance to his Way to Jesus, there is no problem in that. Jesus only said it was harder for the rich.

Note:

To prove it to you, in the book of Acts of the Apostles in chapter |10|, the Roman centurion named Corneille did receive the {gift of the Holy Spirit} when he was rich...

It is not asked to hurt yourself.

It is even against the teachings of Jesus to harm oneself and not to respect oneself. At the time, it was not the holy apostles who martyred themselves, they were picked up and dragged away by force.

Note:

If you like to hurt yourself.

→ The consultation of a doctor is recommended. Usually it is a borderline personality disorder.

Conclusion.

We must put aside excessive thoughts and extreme behavior. God does not ask anyone to suffer for all the people of the whole world or to walk barefoot in the street!

C) Respect for others.

No one is obliged to follow Jesus! This person will have no punishment for that. See chapter |29|. This person will simply not have the Eternal Life Reward.

Christians must respect the choice of religion of other people as well as those who want to remain atheists.

|16-K| For readers who want to go further into the world of psychology

I give you a small starting point searching by yourself.

It should be known that psychology is a very broad field that includes several great schools of thought. Each uses its own tools to understand. In simple, it is a bit like looking at an individual. You can see him from the front. You can see him in profile. You can see him from behind. But it is still the same individual...

I give you here a small chart to situate you:

Psychology schools	The point of view on human mind
Psychoanalysis (Psychodynamics)	Human thought is analyzed through different stages, from the baby's brain development into adulthood. This in order to find the blockage.
Behavioral (The cognitive-behavioral approach), CBT	It uses a great principle that is the close connection between: our thinking and our behavior. Here are: A) If we change our thinking → we change our behavior. B) If we change our behavior → we change our thinking.
Humanism	Most psychology books in the market today are from this school. The patient is the only specialist in his life, and the psychologist is only his guide. Basically, the human being is a being of happiness and love. Then, the great tensions create traumas that block his proper functioning. It is necessary to reconstruct the way of thinking of the suffering person so that he is more in harmony with his real needs.
Transpersonal	Psychoanalyst Carl Jung is its main root. In his research, Carl discovers what he calls "the collective unconscious." It is a close link between the human being and a "Force" that takes care of the human being. In short, without wishing to name it, he found traces of the Actions of our Creator.
Sexology	The human mind is fundamentally psychosexual. It is impossible to remove the sexual dimension of the human being without destroying him.
Neuropsychology	This is the study of neurons and brain glands in connection with our mind.

| 17 | To get a healing or a miracle

| 17-A | Suffering on earth/good and evil

A) What is good or evil?

The difference between good and evil is a concept that we do not understand very well.

It is for this reason that Jesus gave us his Word (the Gospels) to follow it. In reality, there is only God who is perfectly capable of differentiating between good and evil.

Why? This is because the Thought of God is Absolute and our thought is only referential.

If we look at our own human notion of good and evil, what is it based on? Psychology will say that it is about the notion of what we feel: joy and suffering. The human being does not like to suffer, so suffering is interpreted as evil. The human being loves joy, so it is interpreted as good.

On the other hand, if we look closely at the Word of Jesus, we will discover that the notion of good and evil has as a central piece, respect for **life and the unity** of the people.

1) To love others.

2) Do not do to the other person what you would not want done to you.

3) Jesus suffered on the cross. It hurts, that is for sure! Yet, Jesus redeemed every human being who wants it from death for Eternal Life, so it was good.

4) The 3 Persons of God are so united that they are only One.

Reflecting on it a little, **unity** is not so far away from nature on Earth. Ecology has shown us that all beings on Earth (animals, trees, plants, insects, etc.) live for billions of years in **union** (photosynthesis, water circulation, biological recycling, etc.). We see once more who our Creator is and what is important to him, **union and life**.

In short, for God:

- ° Good would be the union that builds life;
- ° Evil would be the indifference that destroys life.

B) Why suffering exists on earth?

In the past, many people have imagined that by becoming a Christian, God would give them divine protection on earth. Have you ever heard the phrase, "The Kingdom of God begins on earth?" Then Christians thought that suffering would disappear and that God would protect them from everything! No more problems...

Since this has not happened, many people have concluded that God does not exist!

All this comes from human confusion...

1) For the phrase, "The Kingdom of God begins on earth." This is done simply through the {gift of the Holy Spirit} or the {birth of the Spirit}. As few Christians get it, then that does not make a visible change in our society.

2) We are in a world where we have a choice to make. This involves having several options and being free to take the options that interest us.

Then God created us an autonomous world so as not to interfere in our choice. On earth, everything is possible and we do our experiments. Doing experiments does not say that they are always happy. A child who learns to ride a bicycle sometimes falls and gets hurt.

Nature is beautiful, but it can be very wild at times. Why? Being autonomous, nature has mechanisms of survival, cleaning, recycling and regulation. Examples:

- ° Animals like vultures are cleaners.
- ° Insects are recyclers.
- ° Microbes and viruses regulate populations so that they are not too numerous and do not unbalance the ecosystem.

Yes, it is true that we are in a garden that can be quite dangerous if we are not careful...

So, we need:

- ° To pay attention to our health.
- ° To pay attention to others.
- ° To help each other.

Therefore, in an autonomous world of choice as here on earth, suffering and death are inevitable.

Jesus promised Heaven as a reward for those who follow His Way. Heaven is without evil because taking the Way of Jesus already requires the choice to renounce evil on earth and to be guided by God.

| 17-B | Link between the capacity to love and the capacity to suffer

A) The feeling of loving in a general sense.

In psychology, there is a close connection between our capacity to suffer and our capacity to love. Why? It is because in our brain, all our feelings (joy, love, and suffering) pass through the same channel to our consciousness. The more we do not want to suffer, the more we block this channel also for our feelings of joy and love. Since feeling these feelings of happiness regulates hormones, a person with a blockage will be more tense and prone to depression. At the limit, there are people who have suffered so much that they are no longer able to love at all.

B) Let's connect with our society.

It is no secret to say that our society has an allergy to suffering. Thus, little capacity to suffer equals little capacity to love. So that is why selfishness is so much felt....

C) Here, I will make you discover something important.

Now, I am asking you a question. Who has the greatest capacity to love?

You will tell me... It is God!

So, God Loves us so much that he Suffers so much!

Yes, on earth, we suffer from evil of others. But have you ever thought that God suffers from evil we all do together? It is easy to understand that our human suffering is very little compared to his own.

To become a {God's child} is also to understand that our Heavenly Father Suffers much more than we do...

| 17-C | Much more than hope for people who suffer, but a certainty!

I know there are a lot of readers who are currently suffering:

- ° Disease;
- ° Depression;
- ° Lack of work;
- ° Despair;
- ° Feeling of not succeeding his life;
- ° Etc.

Yes, these feelings of insecurity and helplessness prevent us from being happy on a daily basis and making plans for our lives. I know that all this hurts and I understand, because I too am human and life is not easy for anyone.

Here, I will give you much more than hope. I will give you a rock, a reality that will never fail you.

We know that our society has high success criteria:

- ° Money;
- ° Career;
- ° Power;
- ° To be important;
- ° To have a lot of goods;
- ° To be beautiful;
- ° To be in great physical shape;
- ° Etc.

We have all been educated since our childhood with these performance criteria to such an extent that we believe that they define our own personal worth. Moreover, if we do not meet these criteria, we feel excluded and unhappy. It is important to know that the financiers of our society need that we believe strongly in these performance criteria to enrich themselves. Why do you believe that our society has made God disappear when I have been able to prove that God really exists in chapter | 5 | alone? I am not smarter than anyone else, it is only that I have been searching for the true reality...

NT	St-Matthew	6,24-25	"No one can serve two masters; for either he will hate the one and love the other, or he will be devoted to one and despise the other. You cannot serve God and wealth. "For this reason I say to you, do not be worried about your life, <i>as to</i> what you will eat or what you will drink; nor for your body, <i>as to</i> what you will put on. Is not life more than food, and the body more than clothing?

Contrary to what people believe, we cannot pass the examination of our human life if we use our society's performance criteria. Take a good look at what Jesus says:

NT	St-Matthew	16,24-26	Then Jesus said to His disciples, "If anyone wishes to come after Me, he must deny himself, and take up his cross and follow Me. "For whoever wishes to save his life (1) will lose it; but whoever loses his life (2) for My sake will find it. "For what will it profit a man if he gains (3) the whole world and forfeits (4) his soul? Or what will a man give in exchange (5) for his soul?

(1) It is a life with the criteria that our society offers us. Yes, at the time of Jesus, there were essentially the same criteria as today to be important in the eyes of humans.

(2) This is the Way of life that Jesus proposes to us towards Eternal Life. On earth, that does not mean to have anything at all or to starve! This means that God must be our first priority.

(3) It is human life with the criteria of our society.

(4) If he loses Eternal Life.

(5) The human with all his money and power cannot buy Eternal Life. We must follow the Way of Jesus, because it is He who saves the person that He wants for the Kingdom of his Father. All the gold of the world does not buy that.

What is this rock or this certainty?

In reality, you are on earth only to make a choice of life. If you find your Creator (God) and you choose him, **you have succeeded in your life**, it is as simple as that. Otherwise, you have unfortunately failed, even if you are beautiful, rich and powerful...

What is important is that you know that you need your {birth of the Spirit} to say, "I achieved what my Creator asked me to do in the mortal life that he gave me on earth."

Now, good news, you are still alive so there is hope! In addition, you have in your hands a fantastic asset ... your suffering! **So, use your suffering as a cry from the heart to find God and take his Hand!** On the day of your {birth of the Spirit}, you will say to yourself, "Fortunately I have suffered in my life and the Lord has given me this book because I did not know that I was lost!"

NT	St-Luke	15,24	for this son of mine (1) was dead (2) and has come to life again (3) ; he was lost (2) and has been found.' And they began to celebrate.

(1) For God, he has only children (son or daughter).

(2) In this parable, "to be lost" or "death" represents the inability to recognize the importance of God.

(3) There is only God who is the Source of all life.

On our Way to Him, the Lord always makes small wonders here and there to encourage us and increase our faith.

In article |13-S|, I told you about 3 little miracles that I had well before my {birth of the Spirit}.

In article |13-R|, I told you about a healing that I had afterwards.

In article |6-K|, I told you about the miraculous water of Lourde still available today. There have even been healings of blind and paralysed people.

I can assure you that if you seek him ardently, the Lord will give you a gift (small miracle, healing, etc.). He did it for me, you are no less important to him! So, in your prayer (or request), have confidence. You will be surprised that the day you do not expect anything, the Lord will come to your aid. On the other hand, know how to recognize his help even if you doubt a little. It is better to thank the Lord for something he did not do than not to thank him for a grace granted. It is wiser to thank now and clean up your doubts later. In this book, I told you about more than 16 wonders that I have had. So, you do not absolutely waste your time with the Lord, he really exists! He is next to you now and reading this book with you. Why? Because you are important! Because you already have a miracle of him, you are reading **his book**. See article |13-Q|. To prove to you that I am right, in article |30-F|, during the writing of his book, it happened to me that I miss a piece of information so I could not go further. At first, I did not tell it to anyone. I only wrote in the page that I could not go further. I did not pray to the Lord for help because I was thinking that it was good like that. However the following night, I received the missing piece of information! So, that means the Lord reads what I write over my shoulder now! So, he is doing the same thing for you right now too...

So thank you Lord ... You are a Love!

Now, what are you waiting for to confide him your miseries, he listens to you and loves you!

The difficulty is not to reach God. No, the difficulty is that we do not want God to reach us. This barrier is ours, so he respects the choice of our silence and he makes silence with us...

Reach out your hand to him, you cannot imagine how great the Love of his Presence is. See article |13-D|.

In closing, I give you a precious help for prayer in chapter |26|.

Satan and the devil

| 18 | Yes, it is the devil who has mixed us all up!

Without knowing it, the biggest hindrance to understanding the Bible is the idea of the devil as a real being with supernatural power.

- 1) With this supernatural idea of the devil, the Plan of God is incomprehensible.
- 2) Without this supernatural idea of the devil, the Plan of God takes on a very simple meaning.

Obviously, for readers who do not really believe in God, the idea of the devil is not a problem. But the day when you will be totally convinced that God really exists, then you will have to clean up your thoughts. That day, you will not be so sure that the devil and eternal hell do not exist either...

In reality, this famous idea of "the actor of death" is not that bad! To get your {birth of the Spirit}, you will have to go through the step of knowing what you want to do with your life:

- 1) To trust God and put your life in his hand for Eternal Life.
- 2) To keep your life for yourself and face sooner or later "the psychic and natural actor of death, the devil."

I will now deal with the subject of the devil by different methods in order to define him.

Let's go!

| 18-A | Many current Christian models are outdated...

Currently, the majority of models in Christianity date mainly from the 1500s.

Since Christian movements are not unanimous, I have no choice but to give you a short summary as best as I can. Do not hold it against me if it is not exactly what you have learned...

First of all, to better understand what I am writing, you must imagine being in the evening in front of a beautiful starry sky.

Note:

The people who wrote the Bible did not know that we were on a small blue planet...

A) Here are the main lines:

1) The idea of the heavens (the sky above them).

The angels were in the "sky" with the stars. Some even saw the stars as angels.

The Kingdom of God was at the "**Most High**." It was far, far beyond the stars in the sky. People saw the "Most High" as a "Big Cloud with wind, fire and lightning." It is the Scriptures of the prophet Ezekiel that give the best picture, see chapter | 22 |.

2) On earth, there were two types of humans.

There was the perfect and innocent human in the Garden of Eden. It is the earthly paradise, somewhere well hidden.

There was also the ordinary human on earth, a bit like an animal.

3) Lucifer.

In the heavens (sky), an angel rebelled against God. His name was Lucifer. He wanted to take the place of God. He tried therefore to climb the sky to the Most High in order to make himself equal to God and take his Throne.

Lucifer was also in the earthly paradise (the Garden of Eden). He took the form of a snake and tempted the perfect and innocent human. This is the narrative of Adam and Eve. Then, the perfect human disobeyed the regulations (the Law) of God.

4) God has banished the perfect human from the Garden of Eden.

The perfect human, now fallen, has been driven out of the earthly paradise and found himself on the surface of the earth where ordinary humans resided.

5) God has banished Lucifer from the heavens (sky).

Lucifer, now fallen, has been called Satan, which means "the Adversary of God." He took with him the other fallen angels, called demons. God made them fall from the heavens (sky) on the earth and they burned down, a little like shooting stars. Their ashes penetrated into the ground and death appeared. The world of Satan and his demons is called "**the abyss of the Sheol.**" We also call it "hell" which means: very deep under the ground. See article |3-D|. Since that time, Satan is prowling on earth to tempt humans to do evil. It is the Scriptures of the prophets Isaiah and Ezekiel that give the best picture, see chapter |22|.

Let's take a minute to go further in this idea...

In article |3-D|, we saw the old concept of body and soul. The body is an envelope, and the soul is the life principle inside this envelope. We can imagine that this concept is similar for Lucifer. The angelic body of Lucifer was burned when he fell from the sky and his soul entered the ground. It is the same for other fallen angels (demons). Since Lucifer (Satan) no longer has an angelic body, this explains why he only has the role of "tempting" the human. Since a demon no longer has an angelic body, this explains why he only remains for him to possess a human body in order to continue doing evil.

6) Reproduction (sexuality).

The once-perfect human (Adam and Eve), now fallen, has known reproduction. They had 3 sons.

Cain, one of the sons, killed his brother Abel. He became the first murderer.

On the other hand, as adults, the sons of Adam and Eve married ordinary humans and had children. So the once-perfect human and the ordinary human have mixed together.

7) The human has done more and more evil.

Subsequently, humans became worse and worse. God repented of having made them and this is the narrative of Noah (the Flood). Subsequently, the good humans repopulated the earth. The human has still perverted himself (to do evil) and this is the narrative of the Tower of Babel. This being the project of the human to go up in a tower to proclaim himself equal to God. A little like Lucifer had done before in the heavens.

8) The Son of God (Messiah).

Subsequently, the Son of God came to earth (Jesus) to Save humanity of eternal death under Satan's control. By his death on the cross, Jesus obtained from his Father, the forgiveness of the sins of humanity.

9) Until the end of time...

In the meantime, the souls are at the Sheol (the abode of the dead).

The Son of God will return with his holy angels to fight the Forces of Evil (Satan and his demons) and throw them into the lake of fire (eternal hell).

Subsequently, all souls will present themselves for the Last Judgment. Jesus will separate the souls. Good souls will go for a resurrection of life. Bad souls will go for a resurrection of judgment, so in the lake of fire with the devil.

10) A New World.

Eventually, God will rebuild a "New World" where evil and death do not exist. God will take the good souls and give them a new body.

Finally, the New Creation will live happily with God for eternity.

To go further:

You can use the words I have given in order to search on the Internet. Some Christian movements have a website for their catechism.

B) Another more realistic and modern model please!

In the Bible, we now know that the first narratives (the Garden of Eden, Cain and Abel, Noah, the Tower of Babel) are symbolic and inspired by God to people with very little science.

In the model presented above in **A)**, there are insurmountable problems:

- 1) Jesus affirms that there is nothing eternal in man. The human being is made of flesh and blood.
- 2) Jesus does not say that he has come to save all humanity, but only those who follow his Way.
- 3) Jesus says that there is only God the Father who is Eternal (Immortal). To live forever, a person must unite with God through his Breath of Life (the Holy Spirit). So, this suggests that entities (ghosts, demons, devil, etc.) cannot be immortal and by the very fact, the idea of their existence is questioned.
- 4) The eternal hell is a concept of Greek mythology. It does not come from the Jews.

In this perspective, the model presented above in **A)**, is much more inspired by Greek mythology than the revelations of Jesus...

So, we must work to build a model that meets the revelations of Jesus.

To do this, I had to extract the basic concepts of the Bible and modern science.
The model I discovered is much simpler and less terrifying. **See chapters | 31 and 32 |**.

| 18-B | An old model of more than 500 years made with some words that have confused everything

A) A bit of confusion right from the start...

1) We must be realistic, in the Old Testament, there are not only texts that come from true prophets sent by God. There are also texts made from scratch by some dishonest chief priests who wanted to scare the people and get rich. Why do you believe that God was seen as an avenger and punisher when in reality he is without any evil? If you want to be confused, you only have to read the book of Job where God is counseled by his lawyer (Lucifer) to his Heavenly Court!

2) The Jews had been invaded by the Roman Empire. The soldiers had no pity. Revenge is human and can also be written in the texts of the Bible...

3) 200 years B.C., there were already many Scriptures that passed by the hand of the Greeks. The most beautiful example is the Septuagint. The Greeks were very strong in mythology. They had a bundle of invented words that did not follow the thought of the Jewish people whom Jesus taught. Subsequently, some interpretations and translations obviously added a little bit of trouble.

The confusion was the main reason for the crucifixion of Jesus. People were falsely waiting for a "messiah of anger." It is obvious that dishonest chief priests and the Romans wanted to quickly get rid of this possible "threat!"

B) "The Judgments of God."

One of the biggest sources of error was thinking that God is punisher and avenger. The Jews held this idea firmly. We see that this idea was able to make its way also in the New Testament with the book of Revelation (Apocalypse).

C) "The Gehenna of Fire."

As for the famous Gehenna that burns forever. In fact for Jesus, the Gehenna was a simple real dump at the exit of the city that burned everything. Sulfur was added to make it burn better. This is where the famous idea of the sulfur smell of hell came from...

D) The expression "at the end of time."

This expression did not exist in Hebrew at the time of Jesus.

In reality, the expression used had no connection with the end of anything. The expression meant:

- ° For the time it lasts;
- ° When it will be the moment;
- ° When God will have decided it.

E) The word "soul."

In the days of Jesus, the word soul meant: "the breath of life or the human breath."

On the other hand, the Greeks thought that the human was of double natures: the mortal body and the immortal soul. For them, the soul was a part of the human being who came out from his body at death like a ghost. Again there were obviously confusions in interpretations and translations.

Currently, we know that human life is autonomous on Earth without God. The human being has a biological body that is mortal and that creates its equally mortal consciousness. When you read this book, you are in your consciousness and it is active. When you sleep, your body is at rest and your consciousness is at rest too.

F) From yesterday to today...

The body and the soul follow a philosophical model. There is the container and its contents. The container being our human body. The content being our soul. In philosophy, the soul is an "essence." An "essence" is a non-palpable life principle that operates autonomously, but does not require a body. We could say that the soul, the ghost, the spirit and even the devil (the spirit of evil) are "essences." The difficulty is that they are not palpable! So, what do we do to prove that they exist or not? We cannot catch them, put them in a box or even analyze them with measuring instruments...

People have always seen "spirits" in 2 contradictory ways:

- 1) On the one hand, we cannot feel a "spirit" because it is not palpable and it passes through us without even noticing it. Before my {birth of the Spirit} in March 2016, when I went to mass and religious people said that I had received "the Spirit of God" in me even if I had not felt anything, I could not contradict them because a "spirit" does not feel ...
- 2) On the other hand, according to some religious people, we can be possessed by a "bad spirit." A ghost can even move objects in a haunted house.

So, are "spirits" palpable or not?

Are they palpable when it suits us and not palpable when it does not suit us anymore?

I have always believed that a "spirit" was not palpable until the day of my {birth of the Spirit}. In article |13-J|, the Lord made me discover that the Holy Spirit is always palpable. So, if the other "spirits" (ghosts, demons, etc.) really

exist, they are palpable too! When a person says it was the devil who blew him to do evil, then the person would have actually felt the "devil's breath" in his ear. What I strongly doubt!

It is easy to understand that there is only one reality and many superstitions. So, we have some cleaning up to do...

| 18-C | What is the idea of the devil in the Bible?

A) Generally in the Bible.

Christianity whose root is Judaism is a **monotheistic** religion. This means that there is **only one Godhead**. God being Holy (without any evil), it has always been difficult to understand where evil comes from. Basically, **the great Inventor of evil** is called by different names: the devil, the evil one, Satan, Belzebul, Lucifer, etc. It is important to understand that **he is not a divinity of evil**, because we would come out of monotheism. See article | 18-F |.

B) In the Old Testament.

For the Jews, the human being could only be good since created by God. There could be no evil inside the human being. Then evil came from outside the human being. The evil one was an ancient creature of God, a fallen angel (Lucifer) long ago. So in the days of Jesus, people really believed that the evil one (or devil) existed. The evil one tempted humans to do evil. The human doing evil was doomed to death because he did not respect the Law of God. To guard against the evil, the Jews practiced purification rituals with water. This was to ensure that unclean spirits do not enter into them.

C) The New Testament.

Jesus arrives with new and disturbing ideas...

Jesus told people that to obtain Eternal Life, one must first make a Way of conversion from the heart, from the bad human being to the good human being.

The Pharisees are the ones who oppose this idea of Jesus the most. They have always practiced purification rituals, so they can only be righteous, without sins. Jesus tells them that their rituals of purification are useless. Jesus tells them that evil comes from their inner self, from their lust, and therefore from themselves.

Jesus uses the name "Satan" more than other names. Satan is a symbol that means "the Adversary of God."

The evil one is associated with death, some even call the evil one, the Death. The human body has succumbed to the temptation of the evil one, so the human body must die under the ground.

Jesus is the Messiah (the Savior). Only Jesus was able to not succumb to the temptation of the evil one. He has conquered Death. He is the Resurrection. In following his Way, his disciples receive an {anointing} which is the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. This {anointing} is a real mark in the chest of the person, it is not abstract. St-John says in his Epistles that this {anointing} preserves from the devil therefore that the person is preserved from sin too. On the other hand, St-Paul says in his Epistles that sometimes he does the wrong thing he does not want to do, and sometimes he does not the good thing he wants to do. Personally, I know that St-Paul's thinking is more realistic. A human always does a little evil, it is inevitable.

Jesus does not reveal how and when the resurrection will take place. He simply says to trust the Power of his Father. See article | 15-G |.

On the other hand, the book of Revelation (Apocalypse) of John of Patmos (not St-John) will imagine the end of the world. At the end of time, Jesus will return to separate the Living from the dead. Jesus will use this mark (the anointing) which is inscribed in the "book of life." Those who are not enrolled in the "book of life" will be thrown into the lake of fire with the devil and demons. The Death will be destroyed. Those who are enrolled in the "book of life" will live eternally in the Peace of God on earth, which will then be renewed (without any evil).

D) In the Bible, where does evil come from?

1) The Bible has never been very clear about the exact identity of Satan. **On the other hand, it says very well where does evil come from!**

2) If we look at an excerpt from the narrative of Noah (the Flood) in the Old Testament:

OT	Genesis	6,5-6	Then the LORD saw that the wickedness of man was great on the earth, and that every intent of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually. The LORD was sorry that He had made man on the earth, and He was grieved in His heart. (1)

(1) Here, we see that evil is coming out of the human.

3) If we look at 2 New Testament texts:

NT	Epistle of St-James	1,13-15	Let no one say when he is tempted, "I am being tempted by God"; for God cannot be tempted by evil, and He Himself does not tempt anyone. But each one is tempted when he is carried away and enticed by his own lust. Then when lust has conceived, it gives birth to sin; and when sin is accomplished, it brings forth death. (1)

(1) Here, we see that evil is coming out of the human.

NT	St-Matthew	15,16-20	Jesus said, "Are you still lacking in understanding also? "Do you not understand that everything that goes into the mouth (1) passes into the stomach, and is eliminated? "But the things that proceed out of the mouth come from the heart, and those defile the man. "For out of the heart (2) come evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, slanders. "These are the things which defile the man; but to eat with unwashed hands does not defile the man."

(1) The Jews of the time of Jesus were very superstitious. They believed that there were **unclean spirits** outside of them. Before eating, they washed their hands or if you want, they purified their hands of these unclean spirits. This so as not to bring into themselves these unclean spirits and to be tormented by these demons that caused human malice and various diseases. Now with biology, we know that these unclean spirits are somehow microbes and viruses and that there are no demons in there.

(2) Jesus teaches that the evil we do is actually from ourselves and not from unclean spirits.

4) If we look at an excerpt from the prophet Ezekiel:

OT	Ezekiel	36,24-27	"For I (God) will take you from the nations, gather you from all the lands and bring you into your own land. "Then I will sprinkle clean water on you, and you will be clean; I will cleanse you from all your filthiness and from all your idols. "Moreover, I will give you a new heart and put a new spirit within you; and I will remove the heart of stone from your flesh and give you a heart of flesh (1). "I will put My Spirit within you and cause you to walk in My statutes, and you will be careful to observe My ordinances.

(1) Ezekiel already said that the new religion of God would be a matter of the heart.

E) A tempter in freedom...

So how can God ask us to be responsible for ourselves, if he leaves this powerful "Tempter" at liberty around us?

F) Who is Satan?

The Bible never says clearly who Satan is. Nor in the text of the Garden of Eden. Nor in the 14th chapter of the book of Isaiah. Nor in the 28th chapter of the book of Ezekiel. For more details, see this book in chapters | 21 and 22 |.

Satan simply means "the Adversary of God." So every human being who does not do the Will of God (to do only good) is somehow his adversary. Unfortunately, we then see all humanity! We now understand why the Son of God (Jesus) saw little "Satans" everywhere on earth...

Jesus even compared St-Peter to Satan ... so do not worry too much!

NT	St-Matthew	16,21-23	From that time Jesus began to show His disciples that He must go to Jerusalem, and suffer many things from the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and be raised up on the third day. Peter took Him aside and began to rebuke Him, saying, "God forbid <i>it</i> , Lord! This shall never happen to You." But He turned and said to Peter, "Get behind Me, Satan! You are a stumbling block to Me; for you are not setting your mind on God's interests, but man's."

G) What is the meaning of the original sin of the human?

See also article | 12-C |.

In the Bible we see the concept of original sin through the narrative of the Garden of Eden. God forbade Adam and Eve to eat the forbidden fruit, the famous apple. In reality, the apple is the symbol of "doing evil." Basically, it means: to revel in (eat) the "fruit of evil" or "to love to do evil."

Did you know that the word "perversion" simply means "to love to do evil?" It has no sexual significance at all. It is our society that has made the connection between the two.

Let's go back to the text of the Garden of Eden. It is easy to see the great rigidity of the Hebrew thought of about 3,000 years ago. A simple little woman (Eve) naked and innocent in a garden. She does only a small disobedience by eating an apple and this is the **terrible Disaster!** God is Angry and humanity is banished! We are very far from the forgiveness of the Father that Jesus reveals to us ... Then we see well the mentality of the author in this narrative...

In reality, the meaning of the original sin is simple...

The human has a free and autonomous life on earth that is not united to the Will of God (which is to do good only). So from birth to adulthood, the human is able to pervert himself on his own (to do evil).

The original sin simply has the following meaning: "not to want to ally oneself on earth with the Will of God in order to do only good."

1) We see it with Jesus:

NT	St-John	6,38	"For I have come down from heaven, not to do My own will, but the will of Him who sent Me (God the Father).

2) We see it with the Blessed Virgin Mary:

It is said that Mary did not have her original sin when she gave birth to Jesus. Look closely at the text below:

NT	St-Luke	1,34-38	Mary said to the angel, "How can this be, since I am a virgin?" The angel answered and said to her, "The Holy Spirit will come upon you, and the power of the Most High will overshadow you; and for that reason the holy Child shall be called the Son of God. "And behold, even your relative Elizabeth has also conceived a son in her old age; and she who was called barren is now in her sixth month. "For nothing will be impossible with God." And Mary said, "Behold, the bondsman of the Lord; may it be done to me according to your word (1)." And the angel departed from her.

(1) Mary had renounced her original sin by doing the Will of God.

To receive the {gift of the Holy Spirit} or his {birth of the Spirit}, the person must renounce his original sin. Why? This is because the person cannot be assisted by God if he wants to lead his life alone. In a certain way, the {birth of the Spirit} is made by giving his human life to his Creator (God) so that in exchange, he gives us his Eternal Life already on earth.

On the other hand, if we look at the promises of Christian baptism, it is also to give up one's original sin.

- ° To renounce evil;
- ° To be guided by the Word;
- ° To belong to Christ (the Son of God).

Note:

For those who want to go further, I will begin the explanation of the title of the Immaculate Conception of Mary in article | 30-C |. Subsequently, I will complete the explanation in article | 34-B |.

H) Why did not Jesus just explain everything?

Jesus tried well, but for this, people had to be ready to hear and understand! But the Jews of the time of Jesus had a very rigid mentality and Jesus had to work with that. Even the apostles understood the meaning of the mission of Jesus only after His resurrection. It would not be an exaggeration to say that during the first half of his mission, the disciples of Jesus followed him much more for the idea of "the messiah of wrath" than for their conversion from the heart. At least 2 of his apostles out of the 12 were true revolutionaries, Simon the Zealot and Judas Iscariot. They were not all sweet like St-John. It needed men determined and tough, because they were going to be persecuted...

I) In short:

In the Bible, there is no clear indication of where the devil came from. No author of the Bible is able to define it. The general idea is associated with:

- ° Physical illness;
- ° Psychic illness;
- ° Suffering and evil;
- ° Superstitions;
- ° The lack of knowledge of the people of the time.

| 18-D | What does modern science say about the devil?

A) Physics.

The devil has not been found, either under the ground, in the sky, or even in space.

B) Biology.

We know that human genetics is sealed. The human body is as it is now and for 35,000 years. The human being has not evolved. God created the human body like that. So, **the human body cannot be bad**. The human being has an independent life. He is born innocent and he needs to be educated. Without education, he can do good or evil without any problem. The center of the human brain must ensure its survival and is focused on itself from birth. By nature, the human being is selfish. It is his mother's affection and education that makes him loving and sociable.

In neuropsychology (study of the brain), we know that the human brain has more than 100,000,000,000 living cells interconnected. There is more communication in a single human brain than there is in all phones on Earth together! It is then unthinkable that a being (the devil, the fallen angel, etc.) having not built the human being can have access to such biological complexity. Mentally, it is almost impossible for human beings to have outside influences. Only the Creator can have access to human consciousness.

We know that it is through the activity of our human body that our consciousness is produced. The human being has a consciousness as mortal as his body. Through genetics, we know that life is spreading on Earth from parents to children. God has made autonomous living beings in the past who have spread themselves without him until now. It is easy to see it in another way. Animals also have life. Do they have an "immortal soul" that ascends to God? Before the 1800s, superstition was very common. It is science through observation that has brought logical thought. Modern science has proven that life on Earth is autonomous. It spreads alone. In reality, God only makes a few miracles here and there to prove his existence, and science sees in it only a few inexplicable exceptions. I am sorry, but in science there are no exceptions! If we are unable to explain something, it is because we have false concepts in our heads. Unless finding our Creator disturbs our lifestyle...

C) Psychology.

In chapter | 16 |, we have already identified the idea of the devil.

I make a summary:

The human brain has a (life drive) and a (death drive). During the construction of the child's brain, his life depends entirely on his mother.

Good care allows the child to stay alive. Bad care leads to death. The good mother is associated with the fairy (sweetness). The bad mother is associated with the witch (suffering).

The vital need of the child for his mother gives rise to the idea of a great dependence.

Subsequently, the child associates his father with a being: male; outside; not very well-known; of great strength (power); having an influence on his mother and therefore on himself.

Since the child's life is very dependent and the child has no real knowledge of the outside, the exaggeration or the myth will appear naturally to define the danger.

Now let's do the list of important words: death; bad; suffering; dependence; male; outside; not very well-known; power; influence; exaggeration; myth; danger.

If you only have one word to summarize everything, which one would you use? I only see one, **the devil!**

|18-E| One of my Manifestations of the Holy Spirit about the devil

In rereading article |13-M|, the message of the Lord was: "the devil is the fear of death in our head and Jesus has the power to drive it away by giving us Eternal Life."

A) If we go a little further...

More fully, we could say that the devil is the mental (psychic) personification of the actor who leads us to biological death.

Finally, in psychoanalysis, we could say that the devil is the personification of the (death drive) that is natural.

B) Then why does Jesus on earth have the devil as his adversary?

- 1) The devil is the actor who brings the human being to death in the ground.
- 2) Jesus is the Actor who brings the human being to Life in the Kingdom of his Father.

|18-F| A little logic and conclusion of the research

A) The possible and the impossible.

As already stated in article |13-M|:

- 1) It is possible to prove that something exists.

For example, it is enough to find a cat to prove that this animal really exists.

In chapter |5|, I proved that God really exists.

- 2) On the other hand, it is **impossible** to prove that something → does not exist.

It is simply because we would have to search every corner of the universe to make sure that "this something" is not there anywhere...

→ So, it is impossible to prove that the devil does not exist!

On the other hand, we have seen in article |5-Q| that there is no incoherence in the laws of physics (that govern our world, the universe and Earth). Therefore, our world has only one Author in the image of his **perfect** laws. This gives us proof that Satan is not a divinity of evil as stipulated in article |18-C|. Moreover, we also see that even if Satan existed somewhere, **he has no influence in our world**. Why? It is obvious that a "supreme being of Evil" in our world (having perfect laws) would take a "nasty pleasure" in trying to destroy the balance in all of this. What modern science has not yet found after more than 100 years of research.

B) Who finances life?

For Jesus: God is the Creator, the only Perfect One and holds the Eternal Life.

So logically, since the devil is destructive, he would destroy himself...

Do you want proof?

- a) The history of nature on Earth has been working without humans for about 4,000,000,000 years.
 - b) The current human is about 35,000 years old, which represents only 0.0001% of the history of nature.
 - c) Industrialization is about 200 years old, which is less than 0.000 01% of the history of nature.
- Environmentalists keep repeating to pay attention to nature. Otherwise, the human extinction awaits us in 100 years... So we can see that destruction does not make anyone live long!

At that moment, for the devil to exist, God would have to finance the existence of the devil. In this case, God would give himself misery, it makes no sense!

Here is what Jesus said:

NT	St-Mark	3,24-25	"If a kingdom is divided against itself, that kingdom cannot stand. "If a house is divided against itself, that house will not be able to stand.

Impossible to break the deadlock...

See articles |18-A| and |3-D|.

The only solution would be that the "soul" of Satan is immortal.

→ But this time, we would go back to Greek mythology...

C) Where is the freedom to live?

From this influence of the devil, the human would not be responsible for himself before his Creator. This is an important problem, because **God's greatest law for life is its freedom.**

D) Research conclusion:

- 1) The human is the only one responsible for evil on earth.
- 2) The devil comes from the normal and necessary psychic construction of our human brain.
- 3) The devil is the personification of our fear of death in our head.
- 4) This fear is natural and structuring so that the human being defends himself and stays alive.
- 5) In our society, we have police officers to keep the bad guys on the right track. On the other hand, police officers did not always exist (as in the days of the early Christians). So, it was essential to have something powerful, everywhere, invisible to ensure this function. Yes, the fear of the devil was very practical!
- 6) At worst, if the devil really exists somewhere, he has no influence on us anyway...

|18-G| Very important warning!

One of the purposes of this book is to help you get your {birth of the Spirit}. So you have to be careful not to go too fast with "the idea of the devil that does not exist," **because it could really harm you...**

I repeat:

- 1) The devil as a "supernatural and immortal being of Evil" does not exist.

On the other hand...

- 2) The devil as "the natural actor who brings us to human death" **really exists**, because all humans die one day.
- 3) The human is the only one responsible for evil on earth.

Finally:

For a person to have his {birth of the Spirit}, he must go through a step called "repentance."

In fact, this repentance is organized around the realization that without the Forgiveness of God, a person will definitely die in the ground.

Since awareness of the **possibility of dying** is there, then it is inevitable that the idea of the devil (associated with the fear of death) is also present in the head of the person.

So, the idea of the devil is not bad at all!

On the contrary, it is an idea that allows us to stay alive on earth and gives us a very good help to get Eternal Life...

↑ (Essential articles)	They are necessary for understanding the next chapter.
↓ (Optional articles)	They give additional information.

|18-H| What does history say about the devil?

From all eras and civilizations, humans have thought that there is a being of Evil. He is represented in different forms. The best-known form is the one with the ugly human appearance with horns and a forked tail.

In history, where is the climax of evil? Yes, wars!

We know that the Second World War was the most devastating. Hitler had even been called the Antichrist.

It was recently published that Hitler and his soldiers were all drugged, among others, with amphetamines. They had brains like "zombies." After taking these drugs, some plane pilots even served as human bombs against strategic military targets.

Who does evil? Still the human!

For go further:

Internet Keywords	Combat Drugs; Hitler; amphetamine; drugged troops.

|18-I| The near-death experience (NDE) that involves demons

Important note to readers:

For those who are sensitive, I advise you not to read this article. It is not necessary in order to understand this book.

A) The near-death experience (NDE) to hell.

Some people (who have had a near-death experience) have seen demons. You can see testimonials on the Internet.

Internet Keywords	1) Near-death experience; hell exists; income from hell; testimony; NDE.
Video (Google, YouTube)	1) Expérience de mort éminente ; mort imminente ; l'enfer existe ; revenu de l'enfer ; témoignage ; EMI.

Personally, I am absolutely convinced that these people have seen what they say and it was very scary!

Here, I give 2 explanations. The first is based on my personal knowledge of God. The second is on the basis of science.

1) Based on my personal knowledge of God:

Before continuing reading, start by reviewing article |13-M|. This is one of my Manifestations of the Holy Spirit concerning information about the devil. The conclusion was: "the devil is the fear of death in our head and Jesus has the power to drive it away by giving us Eternal Life."

On the other hand, there is something very important. The experience of "fear of death" is very stimulating to understand that deep down we do not want to die at all. It is normal, we are living beings who struggle to stay alive.

God being our Creator and Life and knowing that he is very intelligent and loves all of us, so here is something I see. God could simply give an ultimate boost during a (near-death experience) to help the person return to the right way and finally discover God. It is when we pass near to lose something (here our mortal life) that we discover all its importance (God is the Life). Remember that God is a Parent and that without knowing it, he does a lot for us every day. We only have to look at our beautiful planet Earth (the garden God has given us). The misfortune here comes from us humans.

2) On the scientific basis:

The best explanation resides in how the brain works. When a person dies, he is very poor and extremely afraid! It is normal for myths (devil, demons and vampires) to appear in the person's mind to identify the opponent. This gives an incredible boost in the body to fight and stay alive!

| 18-J | Exorcism

Important note to readers:

For those who are sensitive, I advise you not to read this article. It is not necessary in order to understand this book.

A) For people who are scared of exorcism.

It is important to know that with every Christian baptism, there is one without knowing it. Here I give you an excerpt from St-Paul sometimes used during a Christian baptism.

NT	Epistle of St-Paul to the Colossians	1,13-14	For He (1) rescued us from the domain of darkness (2), and transferred us to the kingdom (3) of His beloved Son, in whom we have redemption, the forgiveness of sins.

(1) God

(2) The devil and hell.

(3) Eternal Life with God.

B) For exorcism, I give you here 2 titles on the Internet.

1) Here is the title of an authenticated video that deals with this subject.

→ It is true that this video is quite impressive.

Internet Keywords Video (Google, YouTube)	1) True Exorcism filmed and authorized by the Church. 1) Véritable Exorcisme filmé et autorisé par l'Église. 2) The only authentic Catholic exorcism filmed for TV. 2) Le seul exorcisme catholique authentique filmé pour la TV.

2) Here is the title of a video that is not authenticated.

→ Personally, I do not know if this video is just a montage or not. However, it is well documented and impressive. It gives a good overview of the subject of exorcism.

Internet Keywords Video (Google, YouTube)	1) Exorcism, devil and demons, paranormal documentary. 1) Exorcisme, diable et démons, documentaire paranormal.

C) To look for explanations.

In chapter | 16 |, we have looked briefly at the stages of structuring the human brain from childhood.

In reality, there are many possible "personality disorders" to explain the symptoms that are found in possession cases. Whether it is a psychic blockage or even taking substances (drugs, strong medicines, etc.).

→ The hysteria neurosis seems to be the most targeted cause by medical specialists.

I give you some basic references if you want to go further in this search.

Internet Keywords	1) Wikipedia Hysteria neurosis 1) Wikipédia Hystérie 2) Wikipedia Exorcism 2) Wikipédia Exorcisme
Internet Keywords Video (Google, YouTube)	1) Hysteria, body language. 1) L'hystérie, langage du corps.

D) In short:

There are so many "personality disorders" of all kinds that have been discovered by science (psychoanalysis, psychiatry, neuropsychology, etc.) for the last 100 years that all these testimonials and videos cannot prove (without any doubt) that the devil really exists.

Introduction to the Scriptures

| 19 | The Bible

It is very important to read the Gospels (New Testament) at least once a year. People often think that they are too big to do it. That is not true, the smallest one is St-Mark's with about 20 pages and the other three are about 40 pages each. If a person wants to read the most complete Gospel, he can take the one of St-Luke and then continue with the book of Acts of the Apostles that follows it. Originally, these two texts formed only one Gospel.

On the other hand, the Epistles (New Testament) are very valuable and sometimes provide important information on understanding of the Gospels.

It does not matter if you do not understand everything precisely, but it is important to read them because these texts are inspired by the Holy Spirit. If you want to receive the {gift of the Holy Spirit} one day, you have to make an effort.

For this book, I have included 4 chapters with important explanations. Chapters | 21 and 22 | deal with the essentials of the Old Testament. Chapters | 23 and 24 | deal with the essentials of the New Testament.

| 19-A | General plan of the New Testament

The New Testament is made by assembling different books (or texts).

A) The Epistles.

They are letters to nascent Christian movements. They come from St-Paul, St-Peter, St-John, St-James, etc. In general, the Epistles of the apostles are older than the Gospels.

St-Paul was a man of action both Jewish and Roman. St-Paul wrote to give courage to the early Christians who were persecuted. His Scriptures have often been interpreted for exaggeration or poetry. Although his Scriptures on the mystery surrounding Christ present strong images, the fact remains that the foundation is very real.

On the other hand, there is very little talk about St-James. He was one of the Twelve who spoke most directly (without mystery). He has a clear thinking and comes out downright of the thoughts of Judaism of his time. He explains that evil comes from the bottom of the human being. He explains that God does not tempt anyone to do evil. He explains that God is Holy (without any evil). He explains that a person cannot have received the {gift of the Holy Spirit} and not act (to do works). He explains that the word "to believe that saves" mentioned by St-John does not mean "to think," but rather to really engage as a disciple of Jesus.

B) The 4 Gospels (St-Matthew, St-Mark, St-Luke, St-John).

Each of the Gospels is the work of many years to write **the oral tradition** that Jesus transmitted to his apostles.

- ° The Gospel of St-Mark is the oldest. It is dated around the year 0060;
- ° The Gospel of St-John is the most recent. It is dated around the year 0100;
- ° The Gospels of St-Luc and St-Matthew are dated around the years 0070 to 0080.

C) The Acts of the Apostles.

This text is simply the continuation of the Gospel of St-Luke. At the beginning, they formed together only one text. It was separated in the New Testament for some reason. St-Luc was a Greek converted by St-Paul. St-Paul was one of the greatest pillars of the nascent Christian communities because it was he who founded the largest number.

D) The book of Revelation (Apocalypse).

It is a text that should not have been in the New Testament. See article | 20-B |.

| 19-B | We can separate the Gospels into 3 themes

A) Jesus said, "I am 1) the Way, 2) the Truth, 3) the Life."

1) The Way of conversion of the heart → It is to follow Jesus by becoming one of his disciples. It is to convert to his teachings. It is giving up evil. It is looking for the realities from above. It is also to become humble in order to obtain the Forgiveness of one's sins. It is to make God the central point of his life. Finally, it is giving one's life to God so that he helps us to lead it, because there is only God who does no evil (Holy). **The Way** is made by human action that must be sincere.

2) The Truth → God really exists. Jesus is the human Incarnation of the Word (Son) of God on earth.

3) The Life → Jesus offered his human life. He died on the cross to pay the price of the sins of every saved human being. He is the one whom the Father Resurrected and Glorified. He is the one who gives "His Bread of Life" to every saved human being by the {birth of the Spirit}. Subsequently, it is to live as a {God's child} on earth. It is beginning to receive the inheritance of God that will continue after life here on earth.

B) Where are these 3 themes in the Gospels?

The Gospels of St-Matthew, St-Mark and St-Luke have substantially the same content. The first was written by St-Mark who was the secretary of St-Peter. The other two are an adaptation according to the people to whom it was addressed. St-Matthew wrote for the Jews. St-Matthew was originally a person of bad life. So he worked very hard on the Way of conversion and this is reflected in his Gospel. St-Luke wrote for the Gentiles (non-Jews, Greeks). These 3 Gospels mainly deal with themes: **1) the Way and 2) the Truth**.

The Gospel of St-John is very special. It is the revelations about the deep reality of Jesus. It deals mainly with the themes: **2) the Truth and 3) the Life**. St-John being a very good man, he talks very little of the theme: 1) the Way of conversion. This is the most recent Gospel. Since the Way of Conversion has already been treated by the other evangelists, he has concentrated his efforts to talk of the mystery surrounding Jesus.

The book of Acts of the Apostles is the second part of the Gospel of St-Luke. This text tells the story of how the Gospels were put into **practice** in the life of the early Christians. These are not beliefs but real actions on the ground.

| 19-C | Background of the New Testament

A) A difficult time.

Let us not forget that these Scriptures come from the time of the persecution of small emerging Christian communities. You had to be very determined to become a Christian, because some people could even be put to death!

Moreover, the Jews of the time formed family clans around their religion. If a person became a Christian, he would certainly be rejected by his family. Then, the apostles formed Christian communities to welcome and hide them. They were all brothers and sisters in Christ. **Their Scriptures are as hard as the reality they have lived.**

B) An adapted interpretation.

We cannot interpret these Scriptures properly without giving a basic idea of the political and religious context in which the events unfolded as well as the mentalities of the time. It is for this reason that these texts are difficult to read for people of our time.

C) I give you here a general image to situate you.

The Romans were conquerors. These are the first in human history to have a professional army. The soldiers were not farmers or traders. In times of peace, soldiers trained in war and built roads to enlarge the Empire. Rome lived on the tax collection of its conquered peoples. Basically, the Roman Empire was the largest parasite of the time.

God's people were Israel. The people had been conquered by the Roman Empire about a century before Jesus was born. For the Romans, the people of Israel were very difficult to govern because there were many revolutionaries called Zealots. So to contain them, the Roman guard was very numerous, pitiless, intolerant, murderous.

The people of God also had a king named Erode, whose ideas of greatness had to be maintained. The people reproached the king and his court for not respecting the Law of God and consequently for bringing misery upon the whole people. It must be remembered that the First Covenant of God is established with Abram for the whole people. It is only the 2nd Covenant established by the Son (Jesus) that is between God and a particular individual.

The religion of the time was very strong and governed the whole life of the people. The chief priests were rich and had a sumptuous Temple, that of Jerusalem. The most important religious party was the Pharisees. They had a set of extremely rigid laws (about 600) that Jesus had repeatedly opposed. Jesus even told the Pharisees that they lay the burden of these laws on the people, but that they themselves do not respect them. Jesus even called them hypocrites...

There was too much to pay: Roman taxes; the taxes of their king; gifts and offerings to maintain the rich people of the Temple (chief priests). Then the people lived in the greatest poverty. It is for this reason that the people followed Jesus with his wonders. The people did not have much to eat and many of them were sick: lame; blind; paralytic; lepers; etc. I am making a little parenthesis for the case of the "so naughty prostitutes" of the time. We have to get back to the context. The majority of these women did not do this out of cheerful heart. A woman without her father, husband or family was without any resources. So, they had the choice between prostituting themselves or starving!

The mentality of the time about God was falsely maintained for the benefit of the powerful. God is a king who loves glory. God is punisher and avenger. The beloved ones of God are rich and healthy. They are his righteous ones. The unloved ones of God are poor and sick, because God has abandoned them to their miseries, they are sinners.

In this context, the poor people are abandoned by all, even by their own God!

In addition, the people are very superstitious. Without a purification ritual, a person could even absorb an unclean spirit while eating. A person could be possessed of one or more demons. Diseases came from their own sins or those of their parents. These people lived in constant fear. In reality, they did not live, but rather tried to survive in all that...

They need hope!

This hope, they find it in the ancient Scriptures that tell of the coming of a messiah (a liberator), possibly like Moses once. The people are waiting impatiently to restore order in Israel and to expel the Roman Empire. The people care more than anything for this idea of the messiah who will solve all their problems. For them, it will be a "messiah of anger with the sword in his hand." It is for this false perception of the messiah that Jesus was crucified. Jesus is not the messiah that the people wanted. In the beginning, even the apostles were misled by this false idea. In the beginning, the apostles follow Jesus, because this one talks about a kingdom that comes and whose apostles want a place. Afterwards, Jesus will bring them to make a "3-year conversion Way of the heart," these are the texts of the Gospels. At the end of the mission of Jesus, the apostle Judas Iscariot does not want to give up this false idea of the "messiah of wrath" and delivers Jesus to the chief priests for Jesus to explain himself and for God to intervene with "the fire from heaven (sky)" to the favor of Jesus. What God will not do, because he is Holy (without any evil). Jesus is then put to death and his apostles are disoriented. Jesus was abandoned by God, so he cannot be the expected messiah! The apostles will hide, because there is no hope. The apostle Judas Iscariot even goes to hang himself. The disciples of Jesus having the most faith are the holy women. The Apparitions of the Risen Jesus are first made to them.

After the Apparitions of the Risen Jesus, the apostles ask Jesus the moment when he will return to restore order to Israel. The idea of the "messiah of wrath" is well encrusted and does not let them go even when Jesus is about to leave them for his Ascension to his Father. Later, this idea (well encrusted) will be the inspiration of the strange text of the Revelation (Apocalypse) by "John of Patmos" which has nothing to do with the apostle St-John. See article |20-B|. The vision is that Jesus will return to earth at the end of time with his angels to fight the Evil Forces (the devil, demons and damned human beings) and to throw them all into the lake of eternal fire.

→ The next articles in this chapter are important in order to reframe the Scriptures for us now.

|19-D| 1st important key to understanding the Scriptures (justice for the poor)

To understand the Scriptures, you **need keys** that simplify everything.

Let's start:

A) In everyday life, a person could have a thousand excuses for not finding Jesus Christ:

- ° He did not have enough education;
- ° He did not have the chance to acquire knowledge;
- ° When he was a child, he was not in the right religion;
- ° He had a life of misery.

So here is what Jesus answers:

NT	St-Matthew	5,2-10	He opened His mouth and <i>began</i> to teach them, saying, "Blessed are the poor in spirit (1), for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. "Blessed are those who mourn, for they shall be comforted. "Blessed are the gentle, for they shall inherit the earth. "Blessed are those who hunger and thirst for righteousness, for they shall be satisfied. "Blessed are the merciful, for they shall receive mercy. "Blessed are the pure in heart, for they shall see God. "Blessed are the peacemakers, for they shall be called sons of God. "Blessed are those who have been persecuted for the sake of righteousness, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.
		11,25-30	At that time Jesus said, " I praise You, Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that You have hidden these things from <i>the</i> wise and intelligent and have revealed them to infants. " "Yes, Father, for this way was well-pleasing in Your sight. "All things have been handed over to Me by My Father; and no one knows the Son except the Father; nor does anyone know the Father except the Son, and anyone to whom the Son wills to reveal <i>Him</i> . "Come to Me, all who are weary and heavy-laden, and I will give you rest. "Take My yoke upon you and learn from Me, for I am gentle and humble in heart, and you will find rest for yours souls (1). "For My yoke is easy and My burden is light."

(1) Here, the meaning of "**spirit or soul**" is our human interior, our deepest feelings.

To support what is written in the Gospel of St-Matthew, I will tell you about a testimony that I saw on the Internet. A guy in prison, said his life was over. He said that his conversion had been difficult, because he had done a lot of evil in his life and he blamed himself. Subsequently, he shouted from the bottom of his heart to God. The guy said, "God came to visit him in prison." I know that the Presence of God is the Holy Spirit. During his testimony, he pointed to his heart in his chest. For me, here is a sign that says a lot... It is the mark of the "seal of Jesus" for the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. On the other hand, this guy did not give me the impression of knowing what he had really received ... Yes, the Eternal Life!

You see, it depends on us only. In misfortune, we approach God as Jesus said. So misery does not take us away from God, it brings us closer! Those who go away are those who do evil and not those who are in misery...

The message is: God rewards those who are thirsty for peace and justice.

Personally, if I had not had some misery in my life, I would not have had my {birth of the Spirit}. See article | 12-E |.

B) In short:

The injustice and misery created by our human world are, without knowing it, "a stepladder to reach out to God." With God, everything makes sense! Without God, nothing makes sense...

| 19-E | 2nd and 3rd important keys (only God is Holy and Living)

A) God alone is Holy.

In the Bible, everything you read about God that is not: "Love, Holiness (without any evil) and Forgiveness." This is not the reality of God, but the human thought of that time about God. Only Jesus came to set the record straight on the knowledge of his Father.

B) God alone is Living.

A very important notion is that God alone is Life. Without God, life does not exist on Earth. If you are alive right now, it is because God has deposited life here in the beginning. There is no life or Life without God, for he is the only Source.

The closer you come to God, the closer you get to Life.

On the contrary, if you move away from God, you also move away from life, so you go in the direction of death.

| 19-F | 4th important key (God does not punish the bad one, but reward the good one)

A) Judgments.

In the Old Testament. Judaism easily had the "Judgments of God" in its mouth. God always punished the bad one. Christianity has sometimes carried this bad perception of God with it. We only have to think of the famous vision of the "Last Judgment" in the Revelation (Apocalypse), where Jesus will return with his angels to throw the devil, the demons and damned human beings in the lake of fire (eternal hell). The problem is that it does not go with the revelations of Jesus about the Holiness of his Father.

Here is the reality. From the New Testament, Jesus gives the revelation that God does not punish the bad one, but reward only the good one!

Let me explain. God alone is Living. God alone is Holy (without any evil). So, how to punish a person? There is only one solution! Simply not to allow this person to live indefinitely. In short, God does not eternally finance the lives of people who do evil. It is for this reason that the inheritance of human life is at most 120 years old. To obtain more than that, one must take the Way of the Son of God to Eternal Life.

I believe that in fact, God has never really punished anyone. In the Old Testament, sometimes the Hebrew people did not do what God asked. So, without knowing it, the people surrounded themselves with false gods and riches which were the envy of the invaders. If the people had only a poor little stone temple and no wealth, this would not have interested the invaders. The people could have lived in peace on their lands...

B) 1st Covenant (Old Testament)

This Covenant (with Abraham) was, to obtain a territory and some earthly protection for the Hebrew people **if they did what God asked them to do**. But the people began to kill the prophets sent by God and to pray to idols. The people did not respect the Covenant, God has simply removed his protection. It must be understood that this was not a punishment of God, but a consequence of the decision of the people to abandon God!

C) 2nd Covenant (the New Testament)

This Covenant (with Jesus Christ) is still very poorly understood by Christians today.

This Covenant is not to save a people or a nation or even to save the whole of humanity. **It is a Covenant between God and any particular human being who desires it.** In short, the Covenant is simply between God and a disciple of Jesus.

- ° It is the human commitment to follow the Way indicated by Jesus;
- ° Subsequently, the {gift of the Holy Spirit} on earth;
- ° Finally, the reward of Eternal Life after biological death.

Unfortunately, Christian movements made promises to their followers that had absolutely nothing to do with it. They imagined that being a Christian came with divine protection on earth or assurance for all our little misfortunes! So, there are Christians who are still angry with God for their little everyday misfortunes. They say to themselves, "If God really existed, there would not be so much evil on earth!" In truth, they have understood nothing! No, if humanity did what God wants (to do good only), there would not be much evil on earth... I repeat, on earth, every human being has a choice to make. The choice between doing good or evil. And this in complete freedom in front of his Creator (God).

Let's look at a small part of the history of the apostles...

They have all been martyred and God did not "hit" their attackers! 1) But where are their attackers now? They are in dust (in the ground). 2) Where are the apostles? They are in the Kingdom of God.

You see, God only rewards the good one of his Eternal Life. For the bad one, all that remains for him is to finish his inheritance of mortal life on earth, his choice being made!

| 19-G | Why does Jesus often speak in parables in the Gospels?

- ° So that those who want to understand the teachings of Jesus ask questions, inquire and seek;
- ° So that those who do not want to understand leave on their own and thus do not create problems.

NT	St-Matthew	13.10-16	And the disciples came and said to Him, "Why do You speak to them in parables?" Jesus answered them, "To you it has been granted to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it has not been granted. "For whoever has, to him <i>more</i> shall be given, and he will have an abundance; but whoever does not have, even what he has shall be taken away from him. "Therefore I speak to them in parables; because while seeing they do not see, and while hearing they do not hear, nor do they understand. "In their case the prophecy of Isaiah is being fulfilled, which says, "You will keep on hearing, but will not understand, you will keep on seeing, but will not perceive; for the heart of this people has become dull, with their ears they scarcely hear, and they have close their eyes, otherwise they would see with their eyes, hear with their ears, and understand with their heart an return, and I would heal them." "But blessed are your eyes, because they see; and your ears, because they hear.

Jesus said that one of his missions on earth was to tangibly fulfill the Scriptures. Here, it was to fulfill a prophecy of the prophet Isaiah quoted by St-Matthew.

In short, Jesus says that a person must begin by wanting to hear his Word. Later, through his commitment and inner efforts, he must succeed in his conversion from the heart. From this point, Jesus will be able to heal the person from death to Eternal Life.

| 19-H | Why did Jesus come to earth and die on the cross?

A) His coming on earth.

Jesus is the human Incarnation of one of the 3 Persons of God. He is the Word of God made flesh on earth.

God had prepared the Hebrew people (the Jews) for his coming into the world. Jesus is the Messiah announced in the Old Testament. St-Paul said that the whole Bible tells us about God's plan and the coming of his Son on earth.

The patriarchs and the prophets began the teaching work of God. They formed a people and gave it operating laws. Jesus came to finish the teaching and to put the Law of God in their hearts. This is done by the {gift of the Holy Spirit} or the {birth of the Spirit}. This explains the "seal of Jesus" in the chest. See article | 13-E |.

The Incarnation of the Son of God (Jesus) has demonstrated to people of Judaism that:

- ° The **human body** is not fallen (bad);
- ° God is not punisher and avenger, but God loves every human being and can forgive him;
- ° God also suffers from evil that humans do on earth;
- ° God comes to earth to share our joys as our sorrows;
- ° God comes to earth (humanly) to show, by his example, how to live as a child of God on earth.

B) The death of Jesus on the cross.

1) I begin with the very short explanation.

This is related to the perfection of God. God can only render a Judgment if the proofs are also perfect. Since God alone is perfectly good, humans must do evil directly to God himself so that the Judgment of God is perfect.

2) I repeat the same explanation, but with more depth.

Jesus was crucified to demonstrate the wrongdoing of humans. This is to demonstrate perfectly (divinely) the guilt of humans. Humans doing evil to a person (the Son of God) who has never committed evil (Holy).

The day the chief priests of the Sanhedrin concluded that Jesus should die. It is by this same conclusion (at death) that the Father has made his own Judgment identical for humanity. Jesus said, see the lower reference of St-John, "If I had not come (here on earth) and spoken (Jesus is the Word) to them, they would not have sin." At that moment, all humanity was condemned to death in the ground.

Remember in the book of Exodus with Moses. It was by the judgment pronounced by Pharaoh himself that God returned exactly the same judgment against the people of Pharaoh. Jesus said, see the lower reference of St-Matthew, "For in the way you judge, you will be judged!"

Afterwards, Jesus went to Calvary to take, not his condemnation, but to take our human condemnation and die for every human being who longs to be Saved by Christ.

For the divine injustice of his sacrifice, his Father gave him a (divine) reward as great, that of giving the "Breath of Eternal Life" to every human being whom Jesus wants (to each of his disciples).

NT	St-Matthew	7,1-2	"Do not judge so that you will not be judged. "For in the way you judge, you will be judged ; and by your standard of measure, it will be measured to you.
	St-John	15,21-26	"But all these things they will do to you for My name's sake, because they do not know the One (1) who sent Me. "If I had not come and spoken to them, they would not have sin (2), but now they have no excuse for their sin. "He who hates Me hates My Father also. "If I had not done among them the works which no one else did, they would not have sin; but now they have both seen and hated Me and My Father as well. "But <i>they have done this</i> to fulfill the word that is written in their Law, 'they hated me without a cause.' "When the Helper (3) comes, whom I will send to you from the Father, <i>that is</i> the Spirit of truth (3) who proceeds from the Father, He will testify about Me,

(1) Humans do not want to recognize their Creator (God).

(2) By the death of Jesus (Holy), humans perfectly prove their guilt to do evil in front of God.

(3) The Holy Spirit will confirm that Jesus is telling the Truth.

NT	St-John	3,14-18	"As Moses lifted up the serpent (1) in the wilderness , even so must the Son of Man be lifted up; so that whoever believes will in Him have eternal life. "For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes (2) in Him shall not perish, but have eternal life. "For God did not send the Son into the world to judge the world, but that the world might be saved (3) through Him. "He who believes in Him is not judged; he who does not believe has been judged already (4), because he has not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.

(1) At the time of the Exodus (Moses), the Hebrew people (at that time in the desert or **the wilderness**) were sometimes bitten by snakes. Since people were dying, God had made a permanent miracle for the people. Moses had **lifted up** a stick in the form of a bronze snake (**the serpent**) in the desert. If a person was bitten, he only had to look at the bronze snake and by his faith in God he was healed and would not die. Here, Jesus who was lifted up on the cross is compared to this bronze snake that heals from death. If a person has faith in Jesus and his Father, he will not die.

(2) The word "believe" of St-John is all that must be done in order to obtain his {birth of the Spirit}. This is not the modern term that looks like "I think."

(3) The work of Jesus is to save the person for Eternal Life.

(4) A person who is not saved by Jesus is already judged. Yes, to die in the ground since we are all born mortal. It is for this reason that one must {be born of the Spirit}.

3) In short:

a) To demonstrate in a perfect (divine) way the malice of humanity before the Goodness of God. In fact, that day, it was not Jesus who was sentenced to death. But the whole humanity that has been judged before his Creator for his crimes committed against himself.

b) To demonstrate the freedom of humans on earth to commit evil on their own. To demonstrate also the respect of this human freedom by his Creator (God) who has suffered the consequences.

c) To remove from the mind of Judaism the false idea that God is punisher and avenger.

C) Jesus did not suffer alone on the cross.

1) In the Gospel of St-Matthew, at the death of Jesus, there is one of his words that is surprising.

NT	St-Matthew	27,46	About the ninth hour Jesus cried out with a loud voice, saying, "Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani? that is, "my God, my God, why have you forsaken me?" (K)

Some people thought that God had abandoned his Son. But sometimes, it is good to see what is written at the bottom of the page of the Bible (Jerusalem 1973 Editions du Cerf). In (K): "Real cry of distress, but not of despair, this complaint borrowed from Scripture is a prayer to God and it is followed in the Psalm by the joyful assurance of the final triumph."

2) It is necessary to know that God is the Perfect Trinitarian Unity (Father, Son, Holy Spirit). **When one suffers, it is God (in its entirety) who suffers.** Then everyone understood the suffering of the Son (Jesus) on the cross, but who understood the suffering of his Father during the event! I give you a simple example. In a hospital, when a child is suffering, parents suffer just as much!

Explanation of the Scriptures

|20| Properly interpret the Scriptures

In chapter |19|, I gave you 4 fundamental keys. In this chapter, I prepare you even more for reading the most important texts of the Bible that will be addressed in the next 4 chapters.

|20-A| Help of the Holy Spirit

Without the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, we can only do simple interpretations of the Bible. Why? Because the Bible was inspired by God and therefore, one must be guided by his Spirit to understand with precision.

So no one should interpret the Bible strictly without his {birth of the Spirit} because the risk of misinterpretation is inevitable. This can even have serious consequences, here are some examples...

A) To take fright and exaggerate the strength of the Scriptures.

- 1) To lock yourself in order to cut yourself off from the famous temptations of the world.
- 2) To cut any sexuality that the brain needs to regenerate itself, see chapter |16|.
- 3) To fear the idea of the devil to such a point, to create constant and unsustainable psychological fears. In the past, we know that some Christians even went so far as to self-injury, believing falsely that their bodies were bad.

In this way of exaggeration, how many people have suffered needlessly?

B) To minimize the meaning of the Scriptures.

- 1) To intellectualize the scriptures and become emotionally cold. This is the opposite of what Jesus asks.
- 2) To miss out on what is important as the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is always a real Manifestation. This minimization has put many Christians to sleep (as I was), thinking falsely that they have little to do to go to the Kingdom of God.

By this minimum path, it remains only to continue to sleep forever...

|20-B| Some Bible texts need filtration

It is very important to acquire some basics to read the scriptures. If you see a piece of text where God seems punisher and avenger, well this piece of text is Judaism and not Christianity. Jesus said that there is only God who is Good (Holy). This piece of text is simply tainted by human darkness. God never takes pleasure in making a person suffer, even a bad person.

A) In the Old Testament.

- 1) For the texts of Genesis.

The first texts of Genesis (until Abraham) are symbolic texts inspired by God to people more than 2,000 years ago. These people had no knowledge of modern science. The narratives of Creation; the Garden of Eden; Cain and Abel; Noah (the Flood); the Tower of Babel are not historical facts, but symbolic texts. From Abraham, we know that these are historical facts with people who have truly lived.

On the other hand, it is necessary to be careful to put aside these symbolic texts by saying, "It is not that at all!" On the contrary, these texts are super important! Each of these texts represents a reality of human history. These texts are not the beginning of history, but the symbolization of entire human history, from the beginning to the end! I give you two examples. God walking in the Garden of Eden is Jesus in the year 0030! The "tree of life" in the Garden of Eden is the Holy Spirit! This is the inspiration I got when I prayed to the Lord to help me with the narrative of the Garden of Eden.

We must be careful about the mentality of the Bible writers. Some believed that God was punisher and vengeful while Jesus gave the revelation that God is only goodness.

2) For the texts of the Exodus (Moses).

This text is very beautiful, but there is something that is illogical in the center. We read that when Moses went to deliver the Hebrew people from the hand of Egypt, Moses begins by obtaining a prodigy of God, it is one of the 10 plagues of Egypt. After the 3rd prodigy, Pharaoh then wants to release the people in slavery and there strangely, God does it on purpose to harden the heart of Pharaoh who does not want to let the people go now! Thereafter, the cycle begins again, a punishment and a hardening of the heart of Pharaoh. As I told you, God is only goodness and has no malice! So, how to explain this strange cycle (punishment/hardening)? It is simple, it is normal that people in slave (for 400 years) dream of revenge and that it is reflected in their texts. It is also normal that Pharaoh does not want to let hundreds of thousands of Hebrew slaves (who work for free) leave because the Egyptians will have to start working.

On the other hand, in the same text of the Exodus, I have seen the great patience of God for the Egyptian people. God does one prodigy at a time, he does not crush the Egyptians! They only have the consequence of their decisions and their own stubbornness. In the end, Pharaoh will even order a cruel punishment for the Hebrew people, the death of the first-born children. This will turn against Pharaoh and the Egyptian people. Later, Jesus will say that we should not judge anyone, because it is by our own judgment that we will be judged ourselves.

B) In the New Testament.

1) For the Epistles of St-Paul.

As already mentioned in article |1-E|, how can we talk about the Way of Jesus without referring to the misinterpretations that some have made of the Epistles of St-Paul? I dedicated article |20-E| only on this subject.

2) For the text of Revelation (Apocalypse).

Over the centuries, this text has always been enigmatic. Some people contested it. In my study before writing this book, I looked at this text that I had heard about, but that I had never read. After only a few pages of reading, I realized that this text was too strange. There was too much hate! This did not match the values of goodness of Jesus.

a) St-John was the sweetest apostle, he could not have written this text...

b) From my experience of my {birth of the Spirit}, God is only Goodness...

c) In the book of Acts of the Apostles, which is the continuation of the Gospel of St-Luke, it is said that even Jesus does not know the details of the end of the world. So, how could this John know it by visions that Jesus would have given him?

NT	Acts of the Apostles	1,6-7	So when they had come together, they were asking Him, saying, "Lord, is it at this time You are restoring the kingdom to Israel?" He said to them, "It is not for you to know times or epochs which the Father has fixed by His own authority;

Reading the first pages of the book of Revelation (Apocalypse) and feeling them, it gave me the impression that the author was a Christian tortured in the depths of a dungeon who lived martyrdom! So, I closed this text and I did some research...

Internet Keywords	1) Interbible, the Revelation or Apocalypse does not come from John 1) Interbible, l'Apocalypse n'est pas de Jean

Here, around 1950, theologians finally realized that this text of Revelation (Apocalypse) was written by a single author who is John of Patmos in the year 0095. The apostle St-John being died in the year 0043, so he could not be the author of it!

By cons in article |29-D|, I will still take a look at the Revelation (Apocalypse) for you...

|20-C| Introduction to the 5 symbolic narratives of Genesis

For the 5 charts presented below:

- 1) I give on the left, bits of sentences that we can read in Genesis.
- 2) I give on the right, simple explanations of these bits of sentences.

A) Creation, the very beginning.

Bits of sentences	Simple explanations
Everything comes from nothingness	We can see it before the Big Bang. Physicists say there was absolutely nothing before the Big Bang. There was no energy, no material, no time (timeless).
The Spirit of God is a Wind.	The Father is the Will. The Spirit is the Breath (or the Wind). The Son is the Word.
God creates everything in 6 days.	In science, we know that nature on Earth has taken at least a few million years to form. Here, the Jews who wrote this narrative based the creation on the time of a week. Afterwards, God rested like them on the Sabbath day. Chapter 5 has proved that Earth and nature are truly a creation. Afterwards, we know that beings on Earth are free and that life spreads itself. This is what we call the ecosystem and we know that it regulates itself.
God is resting on the 7th day.	God is resting, so the human must do the same. It is the Sabbath of the Jews.
God creates the human in his image.	The human is the representative of God on earth. The human is the only one with the consciousness of himself. He is responsible for himself. The human receives from his Creator a world of which the human has named himself king.

B) The Garden of Eden, the earth when the human had not yet done evil.

Bits of sentences	Simple explanations
God takes the dust (the clay)	It is the inert matter or inanimate or non-living matter that was the soil.
God breathes into his nostrils the breath of life	God makes alive or animates this inert matter. He makes living beings.
God took a man's rib to make the woman	The man and the woman are inseparable.
The Gardener	God is the Educator of the human. It is also Jesus who walks on earth in the year 0030.
Adam and Eve	The symbol of humanity.
Innocence	The human is like an innocent born child who needs to be raised, educated, cultivated.
The tree of life	The symbol of Eternal Life. The Holy Spirit.
Recommendation to Adam and Eve	The symbol of the Law of God. The symbol of freedom (the choice) of humans.
The tree of knowledge of good and evil	The symbol of the possibility of doing evil because the tree is there.
To eat the fruit (the apple)	The symbol of doing evil. Love to do evil. It is human perversion.

The other trees in the garden	The symbol of the freedom to do all the good things we want.
The snake	The symbol of human lust. It is childlike behavior to put one's own responsibility on another being. The symbol of "the adversary of God," Satan. It is the imaginary bad friend of the human on whom the blame is laid. The symbol of the lack of maturity of the human in front of his Creator.
The disobedience	The symbol of human freedom given by God, making the human capable of doing evil.
The fall	The symbol of the consequence of doing evil. To be deprived of the direct help and the Presence of God, his Creator.

C) Cain and Abel, the first murder.

Bits of sentences	Simple explanations
God helps the human to settle on earth	God educates the human.
Offerings to God	The beginning of religion.
The murder	The human takes away life and freedom from the other one. A serious fault against God, because he is the Life.
The blood spilled in the ground	Soiling of evil in the ground. The first announcement of hell that means to die under the ground.

D) The Flood, the end.

Bits of sentences	Simple explanations
The human who is perverted	The symbol of the fact that the human becomes wicked by itself.
God who destroys every human being who does evil.	The symbol of the punishment of the one who does evil to die in the ground.
God who saves every human being who does good.	The symbol of the project of God, to keep the human being who is good to make him live.

E) The Tower of Babel, the human who rebels against his Creator.

Bits of sentences	Simple explanations
The human, his know-how	The symbol of science and technology.
The human who wants to be god himself	The symbol of the arrogance of the learned human.
The human who rebels against his Creator (God)	The symbol of the human who rejects God. The symbol of Satan, the adversary of God.
God who annihilates the project of rebellion of the human against him	The symbol that God does not long finance the lives of those who do evil.

Note:

We see in the Garden of Eden that the human (then innocent) puts his fault on the snake (the devil). Subsequently, the following narratives mature and here in the narrative of (the Flood), it is the human who is responsible for his fault.

| 20-D | A few words and basic expressions of the New Testament

One must pay attention to the words and expressions of the New Testament. Why? Because they depend on the translation of 2,000 years Scriptures with a mentality and a culture very different from ours.

See article | 3-D | for meanings in the Bible of: 1) the spirit, 2) the soul and 3) the heart.

Now, let's go a step further with some additional terms.

Words and expressions	Simple explanations
Sin	To do something wrong in the eyes of God. For the Jews, sin was often associated with disease. If a person was sick, it was because he had accumulated too many sins. It is for this reason that Jesus forgives sins and the person is healed. Jesus had given the power to forgive sins to his apostles since they were getting healings from God.
The original sin	It is through this sin that the human has been doomed to mortal condition. Jesus has the power to forgive original sin since it is he who gives Eternal Life. To obtain this forgiveness, the Christian must fulfill all the promises of his baptism. See articles 12-C and 18-C . For the title "Immaculate Conception" of the Blessed Virgin, see articles 30-C and 34-B .
Sin against the Holy Spirit	It is to make one's own way of life and not to follow the Way of Jesus. See article 12-A . This prevents receiving the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. This sin is not forgivable because the person cannot receive the Breath of Eternal Life from God.
Flesh	It is the human body. It is good because created by God. On the other hand, for the Jews (the flesh) meant sometimes (the sin). So, you have to pay attention to the meaning of the sentence.
Carry one's cross	It is when a person chooses to do good on earth and to follow the Way of Jesus. Then the other people will make him a bit of misery and that is normal. On the other hand, it does not mean to be martyred! See article 9-E .

↑ (Essential articles)	They are necessary for understanding the next chapter.
↓ (Optional articles)	They give additional information.

|20-E| Some advanced New Testament words and expressions

A) The advanced terms come mainly from St-Paul in his Epistles.

As mentioned in article |3-D|, everyone can simply interpret the Scriptures. By cons, one needs his {birth of the Spirit} to give a precise interpretation.

In the past, some of the St-Paul's terms have been misinterpreted. So much so that it even justified the appearance of religious communities cloistered for life in order to make them saints (holy). Personally, I cannot believe it yet, inflict such suffering on oneself...

B) Let's go back to St-Paul...

Yes, St-Paul is passionate, but the fact remains that his Scriptures are accurate although very colorful. Let's look together at the 4 most mysterious expressions you will find in his Epistles.

Warning! I give you here expressions in French translated into English. Be careful, these expressions may not be written exactly this way in your English Bible.
° The sin of the flesh.
° To be dead to this world or no longer to be part of this world. See (2) of the Epistle of St-Paul below.
° Mortification. See (4) of the Epistle of St-Paul below.
° You died to sin on the cross with Christ.

I say it for people who are depressed. I also say it for people who take everything literally. **Do not take fright, stay calm!** The day you have your {birth of the Spirit}, you will understand everything. So, take good care of yourself.

C) I start by giving 2 excerpts and afterwards, I will explain them.

NT	Epistle of St-Paul to the Ephesians	5,29	for no one ever hated his own flesh, but nourishes and cherishes it (1),

(1) We realize that St-Paul does not talk about making big sacrifices or even to suffer!

NT	Epistle of St-Paul to the Colossians	3,1-12	Therefore if you have been raised up with Christ (1) , keep seeking the things above, where Christ is, seated at the right hand of God. Set your mind on the things above, not on the things that are on earth. For you have died (2) and your life is hidden (3) with Christ in God. When Christ, who is our life, is revealed, then you also will be revealed with Him in glory. Therefore consider the members of your earthly body as dead (4) to immorality, impurity, passion, evil desire, and greed, which amounts to idolatry. For it is because of these things that the wrath of God will come upon the sons of disobedience, and in them you also once walked, when you were living in them. But now you also, put them all aside: anger, wrath, malice, slander, <i>and</i> abusive speech from your mouth. Do not lie to one another, since you laid aside the old self (5) with its <i>evil</i> practices, and have put on the new self (1) who is being renewed to a true knowledge according to the image of the One who created him — <i>a renewal</i> in which there is no <i>distinction between</i> Greek and Jew, circumcised and uncircumcised, barbarian, Scythian, slave and freeman, but Christ is all, and in all. So, as those who have been chosen of God, holy (6) and beloved, put on a heart (7) of compassion, kindness, humility, gentleness and patience;

When we read this last excerpt, we ask ourselves a lot of questions and that is normal. First of all, we need to know that St-Paul is writing here a summary of his thought, because no one talks in public in this way.

Subsequently, you should know that there is a major contradiction in this excerpt. At the beginning, St-Paul talks as if his followers had each had their {birth of the Spirit}. Strangely, a few phases later, St-Paul talks as if his followers did not believe in God since their conversion has not even begun yet. So, there is an impossibility. All steps must be successful in order to obtain from God his {birth of the Spirit}.

To explain this text, which does not follow the order of the steps, I see only one possibility. The followers of St-Paul lie to him and pretend to have received the Visit of the Holy Spirit. Why? Just to get a good place in the community. Yes, it is human, but it does not help St-Paul. So, he writes here a catch-up text to make them move a little bit...

In reality, his text is good, but you need some explanation to understand it.

See the corresponding reference number in the excerpt above:

(1) Here is the feeling that we have 3 days after our {birth of the Spirit}. Yes, the feeling of being resurrected with Christ already on earth. To go further, see article |30-G|.

(2) In St-Paul's reasoning, when a person is born of the Spirit or from above, then he is dead on earth. Let's say that it is poetic, but it is not applicable in the real, because our human body did not vanish into smoke! On the other hand, St- Paul is not wrong, it is true that we feel this feeling (not to be part of the world of earth) during the 6 weeks following our {birth of the Spirit}. But it is because the Love of God is so strong, you have no idea! No happiness on earth equals its Presence! Afterwards, we realize that we also have a life to continue on earth! As St-Paul says so well, yes, we must continue our life on earth, but we must behave as a {God's child}. I summarize this by saying that we must keep one eye on earth and the other in Heaven at the same time!

The garden of God:

The best comparison I can give you is that our world looks like an apple tree. Each human being is like a little green cheekbone. God lets the small cheekbones mature without influencing them. As our Creator (alone without any evil) is not visible here on earth, this creates a great lack. Obviously, every human being can take advantage of it and do whatever evil he wants. The bad human being does not seek his Creator and automatically contributes to our world of injustice. On the other hand, the good human being seeks his Creator, because there is too much evil around him and he does not know what to do. He needs God's help to direct his life. The good human being begins to detach himself from our (bad) world like a ripe fruit from the tree. God never draws on the fruit to detach it. The fruit is ready when the person gives (from the bottom of his heart) and (without return) his life to God. It is a bit for this reason that St-Paul says that the person is dead to our world (that is doing evil). God collects the fruit through the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. The person is reborn a {God's child} here and naturally helps others on the Way of Jesus as I do in this book for you. This maturation can be the work of a lifetime, so do not wait. Rituals and great impulses of adoration give nothing, because God is not purchasable. We must do the work that the Lord asks.

(3) To clarify the thought of St-Paul, I give you an excerpt from St-John.

NT	St-John	17,21-23	that they may all be one; even as You, Father, <i>are</i> in Me and I in You, that they also may be in Us, so that the world may believe that You sent Me. "The glory which You have given Me I have given to them, that they may be one, just as We are one; I in them and You in Me, that they may be perfected in unity, so that the world may know that You sent Me, and loved them, even as You have loved Me.

We see that St-Paul and St-John talk about the Unity of God and His children. In Unity, evil does not exist. It is for this reason that God is Holy. Logically in such a large Unit, each person who composes it would lose its own identity. In fact, **no**, Jesus says well that he is the Son of his Father. The Son is an individual and the Father is another individual. Jesus does not pray himself, he prays to his Father!

In order to clarify the mystery, I will present here a notion of article |30-G|. I do not explain it for now, because we are not there yet in our progress.

Individuals **are not fused together**, but they **are united to one another**. That is the difference. There are individuals and there is a union between them. The Union is the Holy Spirit. I give you below a chart.

The Holy Trinity, 3 Persons in One God			In the Kingdom of God	
The father Eternal Source (A) The Internal of God	The Holy Spirit (The breath) The Cohesion of God	The Son The Glorious Body (B) The External of God	The Holy Spirit (The Breath)	St-Paul, God's child His spiritual body (C) He is a spiritual being

The spiritual body (C) of the God's child is fed by the Breath of the Glorious Body of the Son (B).

The Glorious Body of the Son (B) is fed by the Breath from the Eternal Source of the Father (A).

To go further, see article |30-G|.

(4) When St-Paul talks about the "mortification," he gives a list of things that are wrong and should not be done. Look closely at his list. These are not trivial things. It is not to eat 2 desserts in a restaurant instead of 1. It is not to tell a little unimportant lie from time to time. No, his list is made up of serious things. In reality, if a person does what is mentioned in this list, he does not have his {birth of the Spirit}. Why? Because one must give up evil sincerely and give one's life to God even more sincerely to obtain it. In addition, God reads in the heart and lies are useless. The person doing things on this list simply does not believe in God and his conversion is not even started. See the chart below for the simplified definition of "mortification."

(5) "The old self" is the human person before his {birth of the Spirit}. St-Paul talks about 2 creations. The first creation is our human birth (5) on earth and the second creation is our {birth of the Spirit}, "the new self" (1).

(6) According to St-Paul, every person who has had his {birth of the Spirit} is a member of the people of saints (holy). Thank you, St-Paul, for your compliment. By cons, I do not think I will get any human praise for this book on the Truth. It must be known that at the time of the apostles, the whole Christian community was part of the people of saints (holy). It was only several hundred years later that some Christian movements reserved this title for martyrs. In reality, in St-Paul's thinking, it is God (the Holy One), who has the capacity to make someone saint (holy). St-Peter says the same thing in article |27-H|.

(7) Here, St-Paul talks about some "gifts" received at the {birth of the Spirit}. See articles |15-B and 15-C|. In reality, no personal sacrifice is necessary to obtain these qualities or "gifts" because they come with the {birth of the Spirit}. In the past, for a religious person who did not know what this text talks about, the only way to reach these famous qualities (which St-Paul mentions) was to fight oneself. While in reality, it was only a question of obtaining (the Holy Spirit's Visit) to have them gratuitously...

D) Let's make a small simple summary of the specific terms of St-Paul.

The sin of the flesh	Here it is redundant, it does not mean more than sin. On the other hand, some people may think that it is sexuality. Sexuality is natural because it is God who made the human body. The reality is that we can use our sexuality to do good or evil. For God, it is the whole human dimension that is able to do good or evil by his words and gestures.
To be dead to this world or no longer to be part of this world	Do not worry, it does not mean: to disappear in smoke! The world that St-Paul talks about is: human malice. It is true that there is a lot of wickedness in our society. This simply means that God must take the first importance in our decisions every day. A Christian tries as best he can to know what Jesus would do in his situation and to conform to it. It is for this reason that a Christian must know very well the Word of Jesus (the Gospels).
Mortification	The definition of the dictionary is → "the action of subduing one's bodily desires." It is obvious, we live in society, so we have to master our impulsiveness! It is not to martyr oneself! Nowadays, this expression simply means to work against his selfishness and to be charitable. That is what every good person does naturally.
You are died to the sin on the cross with Christ	This means that with the sacrifice of Jesus on the cross, you will obtain the forgiveness of your sins necessary for your {birth of the Spirit}. Afterwards, you try to do your best to do the least evil possible.

|20-F| A dangerous expression that coming out from where?

Perhaps you have already heard the strange expression: "You must not live on your brother's blood!"

I searched for this expression in the Bible and I did not see it. On the other hand, suppose that it is really somewhere or that it is written in another form.

So, what does this expression mean?

- 1) In the Old Testament, blood represented the interior of the human being and thus **his life**.
- 2) It is impossible for this expression to be related to a blood transfusion. Why? Blood transfusions did not exist when the Bible was written. **So that is not it.**
- 3) In reality, it is only that God does not want someone **to enslave another person**. The best biblical image is the slavery of the Hebrews in Egypt. See the book of Exodus. Remember that for God, the greatest Law of life is his freedom. This Law of God is so great that it alone explains why God does not punish the wicked on earth, because he also has the right to his choice like the others.

Explanations of the most important texts of the Bible

|21| The Old Testament, some important texts of Genesis

To obtain your {birth of the Spirit}, you must read important texts from the New Testament and the Old Testament. These texts being inspired by the Holy Spirit, they prepare you to receive his Visit.

In this chapter, I have chosen texts from the Old Testament (Judaism) that are directly related to the New Testament (Christianity).

|21-A| The story of all humanity told by God

The first narratives of Genesis are:

- ° Creation;
- ° The Garden of Eden;
- ° Cain and Abel;
- ° Noah (the Flood);
- ° The Tower of Babel.

We know that these narratives are not historical facts. These are symbolic narratives that God inspired.

Contrary to what people think, these narratives are not the beginning of humanity. No, they are the story of humanity as a whole, from beginning to end, pictorially told.

To tell the story in order, I have to place the narratives rather like this:

- ° The narrative of Creation will be explained in article |21-B|;
- ° The narrative of the Garden of Eden will be explained in article |21-C|;
- ° The narrative of Cain and Abel will be explained in article |21-D|;
- ° The narrative of the Tower of Babel will be explained in article |21-E|;
- ° The narrative of Noah (the Flood) will be explained in article |21-F|.

In the next articles of this chapter:

These are excerpts from the Bible (New American Standard). See article |0-H|. They come from the website: http://www.lexilogos.com/bible_multilingue.htm The explanations I give are in parentheses () below the verses.

|21-B| Creation of the heavens and the earth

I report here an excerpt from Genesis, chapter 1 of the Bible (New American Standard).

Genesis 1. First narrative of Creation.

1.	In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth. (*) More than 2,000 years ago, people had no notion of modern science. So, God inspired them with texts adapted and able to pass through all epochs. Even now, we can see striking similarities with modern discoveries. For the people of that time, there were 3 places. Generally: A) The earth is the world where humans live. B) The sky (or the heavens) above them is the world where the angels live. C) The "Most High" well above the sky is the Abode of God alone.
2.	The earth was formless and void, and darkness was over the surface of the deep, and the <u>Spirit (1) of God</u> was moving over the surface of the waters.

	(*) We see that in the beginning there was nothing (nothingness). We know in physics that before the advent of the Big Bang, it was nothingness. Energy, matter and time did not exist. (1) In French (Bible of Jerusalem), this is: " <u>a wind of God.</u> " Remember that the word "Spirit" means "Wind" in Greek.
3.	Then God said, "Let there be light"; and there was light.
	(*) The link with the Big Bang is easy to make. The Big-Bang is a fireball that came out of a point in space and burned 10,000 years before matter appeared.
4.	God saw that the light was good; and God separated the light from the darkness.
	(*) We see the contrast between the Big Bang and nothingness, so the darkness of space.
7.	God made the expanse, and separated the waters which were below the expanse from the waters which were above the expanse; and it was so.
	(*) For the people there was: the blue waters of the sea and the blue waters of the sky.
11.	Then God said, "Let the earth sprout vegetation: plants yielding seed, <i>and</i> fruit trees on the earth bearing fruit after their kind (1) with seed in them"; and it was so.
	(1) In modern science, Darwin's theory of evolution has proved false. In genetics, we know that species (the kinds) have a sealed genetic code. The species were therefore created really individually.
16.	God made the two great lights, the greater light to govern the day (1), and the lesser light to govern the night (2); <i>He made</i> the stars (3) also.
	(1) The Sun. (2) The Moon. (3) In the Bible, what exactly is a star is not well defined. Here, the stars are small lights to illuminate Earth. In other texts, they can be associated with angels.
26.	Then God said, "Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness; and let them rule over the fish of the sea and over the birds of the sky and over the cattle and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creeps on the earth."
	(*) The human is the representative of God on earth. As God does no evil to the human, then the human must not do evil to the nature which God has been entrusted to him.
27.	God created man in His own image, in the image of God He created him; male and female He created them.
	(*) Men and women are equal and complementary. They are the only beings on earth with self-awareness and the ability to discern between good and evil.
28.	God blessed them; and God said to them, "Be fruitful and multiply, and fill the earth, and subdue it; and rule over the fish of the sea and over the birds of the sky and over every living thing that moves on the earth."
	(*) We see in this text that reproduction (sexuality) is good, since it is created by God.
29.	Then God said, "Behold, I have given you every plant yielding seed that is on the surface of all the earth, and every tree which has fruit yielding seed; it shall be food for you;
	(*) In science, we know that at the very beginning, humans did not eat meat. Humans only ate vegetables and fruits.

| 21-C | The Garden of Eden (the earthly paradise)

I report here an excerpt from Genesis chapters 2 and 3 of the Bible (New American Standard).

Genesis 2. Second narrative of Creation. The earthly paradise.

1.	Thus the heavens and the earth were completed, and all their hosts.
	(*) At this time, God was seen as a King and not as a Father.
2.	By the seventh day God completed His work which He had done, and He rested on the seventh day from all His work which He had done.
3.	Then God blessed the seventh day and sanctified it, because in it He rested from all His work which God had created and made.
	(*) For the Jews, the Sabbath was very important because it was consecrated to God.

5.	Now no shrub of the field was yet in the earth, and no plant of the field had yet sprouted, for the LORD (1) God had not sent rain upon the earth, and there was no man to cultivate the ground.
	(*) Here we see that the products of the earth depend on the gift of God and the work of the human. (1) Be careful, the English translation (LORD) changes the meaning of the name of God. His name is Yahweh , which means the Eternal .
6.	But a mist used to rise from the earth and water the whole surface of the ground.
	(*) This flow represents the graces that God gives for his creation.
7.	Then the LORD God formed man of dust (1) from the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life (2); and man became a living being.
	(1) The human comes from inert or dead matter. He returns to it (inert) after his biological death. (2) God gives life to the human through a breath: A) God gives the first life to the human for a maximum of 120 years, it is a short and deadly breath. B) God gives the second Life to the human. It is by a "very long Breath of his Eternity" in the nostrils that God gives the {birth of the Spirit}. This is really the way it happens even now.
8.	The LORD God planted a garden toward the east, in Eden; and there He placed the man whom He had formed.
	(*) The Garden of Eden is not a mythical place. On the contrary, it is our planet Earth, the human has always remained here.
9.	Out of the ground the LORD God caused to grow every tree (1) that is pleasing to the sight and good for food (2); the tree of life (3) also in the midst of the garden, and the tree of the knowledge (4) of good and evil.
	(1) A "tree" represents a "source" of something. (2) It is the food source that God gives to humans like vegetables and fruits. (3) It is the Source of Eternal Life that is the central point of creation. This Source is the Holy Spirit, the Breath of Eternal Life that God wants to give to every human being who does good and rejects evil. (4) It is a source very well known to the human. The word "knowledge" has nothing to do with the word "to know." No, the word "knowledge" here means " to do the action of. " Here, this is doing the action of evil. Evil on earth did not come from thinking about it, but from actually doing it.
14.	The name of the third river is Tigris; it flows east of Assyria. And the fourth river is the Euphrates.
	(*) All this is to show the splendor and grandeur of God. The four arms are to indicate that God is the source of life, everywhere, always beautiful, generous and precious.
15.	Then the LORD God took the man and put him into the garden of Eden to (1) cultivate (2) it and keep (3) it.
	(1) Here, we see the intention of God. (2) "To cultivate" is God's intention to "educate" the human. He does it through the Law given to Moses and the teaching of all prophets and Jesus. (3) "To keep" represents God's intention to "make the human being a child of God to bring him into his Kingdom."
16.	The LORD God commanded the man, saying, "From any tree of the garden you may eat freely;
17.	but from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil you shall not eat, for in the day that you eat from it you will surely die."
	(*) These last 2 verses represent the Law of God. The human has the freedom to do all the good things he wants, but must not do evil, because God does not finance the lives of those who do evil for a long time. Then the person who does evil on earth will have only the time of his mortal life and not the Eternal Life.
18.	Then the LORD God said, "It is not good for the man to be alone; I will make him a helper suitable for him."
	(*) Here, the human being is a relationship being.
21.	So the LORD God caused a deep sleep to fall upon the man, and he slept; then He took one of his ribs and closed up the flesh at that place.
22.	The LORD God fashioned into a woman the rib which He had taken from the man, and brought her to the man.

	(*) We know in biology that women have one more rib than men. This is surely related to pregnancy for the protection of the internal organs of the mother and fetus.
23.	The man said, "his is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh; she shall be called woman, because she was taken out of man."
	(*) Man and woman must love and respect each other since they were created to be together.
24.	For this reason a man shall leave his father and his mother, and be joined to his wife; and they shall become one flesh.
	(*) It is the marriage to make sure that the child of their union has all that it takes to develop.
25.	And the man and his wife were both naked and were not ashamed.
	(*) Here, it is the innocence of human creation. The human being is born on earth as a child (so, always innocent). The child does not know evil yet, but he will discover it.

Genesis 3. Continued...

1.	Now the serpent (1) was more crafty than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said to the woman, "Indeed, has God said, 'You shall not eat from any tree of the garden (2) '?"
	(1) The serpent (snake) represents, "the adversary of God (to do good)." In reality, this adversary of God is the human lust that drives him to do evil to have more. (2) It is the human temptation to do evil.
2.	The woman said to the serpent, "From the fruit of the trees of the garden we may eat;
3.	but from the fruit of the tree which is in the middle of the garden, God has said, 'You shall not eat from it or touch it, or you will die.' "
	(*) The last 2 verses are the awareness of the Law of God and its consequence.
4.	The serpent said to the woman, "You surely will not die!
	(*) Here, it is not to take God seriously and to doubt him.
5.	"For God knows that in the day you eat from it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil."
	(1) It is to believe that God is a liar and selfish wanting to reserve everything for himself. (2) In article 32-K , we will see that even Jesus says that the human is "a small mortal divinity."
6.	When the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was a delight to the eyes, and that the tree was desirable to make <i>one</i> wise, she took from its fruit and ate; and she gave also to her husband with her, and he ate.
	(*) It is giving in to the temptation. It is making the decision to do the wrong thing and even to enlist others.
7.	Then the eyes of both of them were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together and made themselves loin coverings.
	(*) The Jews were very prudish. We know that human sexual desire is very strong. We also know that as long as the child is not a teenager, it is easy to educate. Subsequently, as a teenager, keeping the teenager in the regulation is not easy. So, the author simply makes the connection between the desire to do evil and sexual desire.
8.	They heard the sound of the LORD God (2) walking in the garden in the cool of the day, and the man and his wife hid (2) themselves from the presence of the LORD God among the trees of the garden.
	(1) This is obviously the fear of punishment after doing wrong. (2) By the way, who is God walking in the garden? It is the Son of God (Jesus) who came to walk on earth in the year 0030.
9.	Then the LORD God called to the man, and said to him, "Where are you?"
10.	He said, "I heard the sound of You in the garden, and I was afraid because I was naked; so I hid myself."
11.	And He said, "Who told you that you were naked? Have you eaten from the tree of which I commanded you not to eat?"
	(*) We see that sin is not about (thinking about it), but about (doing evil) .
12.	The man said, "The woman whom You gave <i>to be</i> with me, she gave me from the tree, and I ate."

13.	Then the LORD God said to the woman, "What is this you have done?" And the woman said, "The serpent deceived me, and I ate."
	(*) Through these last 2 verses, we see the human's inability to recognize that it is he who does evil on earth. The man puts his fault on the woman who in turn puts her fault on the serpent (snake). The serpent or Satan being the "imaginary bad friend" of the human on whom he puts the blame of his own sins since millennia.
14.	The LORD God said to the serpent, "Because you have done this, Cursed are you more than all cattle, And more than every beast of the field; On your belly you will go, And dust you will eat All the days of your life;
15.	And I will put enmity Between you and the woman, And between your seed and her seed; He shall bruise you on the head, And you shall bruise him on the heel."
16.	To the woman He said, "I will greatly multiply Your pain in childbirth, In pain you will bring forth children; Yet your desire will be for your husband, And he will rule over you."
17.	Then to Adam He said, "Because you have listened to the voice of your wife, and have eaten from the tree about which I commanded you, saying, 'You shall not eat from it'; Cursed is the ground because of you; In toil you will eat of it All the days of your life.
18.	"Both thorns and thistles it shall grow for you; And you will eat the plants of the field;
	(*) From these last 5 verses, we see that it is by the freedom of the human and his capacity to do evil that death has arrived in our world. The human then became a fallen and mortal being. A) This vision of evil on earth is that of Judaism more than 2,000 years ago. B) On the other hand, I will give you a more realistic and unified vision in chapters 31 and 32 .
19.	By the sweat of your face You will eat bread, Till you return to the ground, Because from it you were taken; For you are dust, And to dust you shall return."
	(*) We see that the human being is completely material and mortal. The human being has nothing immortal in him as an "eternal soul." This misconception comes from Greek mythology and not from the Jews.
22.	Then the LORD God said, "Behold, the man has become like one of Us (1), knowing good and evil (2); and now, he might stretch out his hand, and take also from the tree of life (3), and eat, and live forever"--
	(1) The Old Testament already recognized that God could be a multiple individual. Afterwards, Jesus will reveal that God is Trinitarian (Father, Son, Holy Spirit). (2) There is a misunderstanding. Here, the word " knowing " has the meaning of " doing ." In reality, God has all "Absolute Knowledge" to never do evil (he is Holy). As the human does not have this "Absolute Knowledge," he must be guided by the Word of God (Jesus). (3) The tree of life is the Holy Spirit. Without the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, a person cannot have access to the Kingdom of God.
23.	therefore the LORD God sent him out from the garden of Eden, to cultivate the ground from which he was taken.
24.	So He drove the man out; and at the east of the garden of Eden He stationed the cherubim and the flaming sword which turned every direction to guard the way to the tree of life.
	(*) Since the human can do evil, there is a great gulf, an abyss, or an impossibility of crossing between the earth and the Kingdom of God. It is the Holy Spirit that allows the transfer of life between the 2 world/World. See chapter 10 .

| 21-D | Cain and Abel

I report here an excerpt from Genesis chapter 4 of the Bible (New American Standard).

Genesis 4. Narrative of Cain and Abel.

1.	Now the man had relations with his wife Eve, and she conceived and gave birth to Cain, and she said, "I have gotten a manchild with <i>the help of</i> the LORD."
	(*) God is the Source of all life. It is the story of the transmission of life on earth.
2.	Again, she gave birth to his brother Abel. And Abel was a keeper of flocks, but Cain was a tiller of the ground.
	(*) This is the story of the origin of breeders and farmers.
3.	So it came about in the course of time that Cain brought an offering to the LORD of the fruit of the ground.

	(*) This is the story of the origin of worship rendered by the human to his Creator.
4.	Abel, on his part also brought of the firstlings of his flock and of their fat portions. And the LORD had regard for Abel and for his offering;
5.	but for Cain and for his offering He had no regard. So Cain became very angry and his countenance fell.
6.	Then the LORD said to Cain, "Why are you angry? And why has your countenance fallen?
7.	"If you do well, will not <i>your countenance</i> be lifted up? And if you do not do well, sin is crouching at the door; and its desire is for you, but you must master it."
	(*) Of these last 4 verses, God wants a sincere worship, which Abel does, but not Cain.
8.	Cain told Abel his brother. And it came about when they were in the field, that Cain rose up against Abel his brother and killed him.
	(*) This is the story of the origin of the first murder.
9.	Then the LORD said to Cain, "Where is Abel your brother?" And he said, "I do not know. Am I my brother's keeper?"
10.	He said, "What have you done? The voice of your brother's blood is crying to Me from the ground.
	(*) Life is given by God and no one has the right to remove it.
11.	"Now you are cursed from the ground, which has opened its mouth to receive your brother's blood from your hand.
12.	"When you cultivate the ground, it will no longer yield its strength to you; you will be a vagrant and a wanderer on the earth."
	(*) These 2 verses are revealing. They represent the (defilement of evil of the human) which is spread in creation and which prevents God from giving in abundance the goods of his generosity.
13.	Cain said to the LORD, "My punishment is too great to bear!
14.	"Behold, You have driven me this day from the face of the ground; and from Your face I will be hidden, and I will be a vagrant and a wanderer on the earth, and whoever finds me will kill me."
15.	So the LORD said to him, "Therefore whoever kills Cain, vengeance will be taken on him sevenfold." And the LORD appointed a sign for Cain, so that no one finding him would slay him.
	(*) We see the righteousness of God and his goodness even for those who do evil.
16.	Then Cain went out from the presence of the LORD, and settled in the land of Nod, east of Eden.
	(*) This is the story of the origin of the pagans.
26.	To Seth, to him also a son was born; and he called his name Enosh. Then <i>men</i> began to call upon the name of the LORD.
	(*) This is the story of the origin of Judaism (the Jews).

|21-E| The Tower of Babel

I report here an excerpt from Genesis chapter 11 of the Bible (New American Standard).

Genesis 11. The Tower of Babel.

1.	Now the whole earth used the same language and the same words.
	(*) This is a reflection of our modern era of communication.
2.	It came about as they journeyed east, that they found a plain in the land of Shinar and settled there.
3.	They said to one another, "Come, let us make bricks and burn <i>them</i> thoroughly." And they used brick for stone, and they used tar for mortar.
	(*) This is a reflection of the know-how of our modern technology.
4.	They said, "Come, let us build for ourselves a city, and a tower (1) whose top <i>will reach</i> into heaven (2), and let us make for ourselves a name (3) , otherwise we will be scattered abroad over the face of the whole earth."
	(1) This is just like the gigantic towers of the largest cities in the world. (2) By getting closer to the sky (the heavens), the human tries to demonstrate his power and to make himself equal to God.

	(3) From the 1900s, this is what happened. Science and technology have tried to make our Creator (God) disappear and become our new god.
5.	The LORD came down to see the city and the tower which the sons of men had built.
6.	The LORD said, "Behold, they are one people, and they all have the same language. And this is what they began to do, and now nothing which they purpose to do will be impossible for them.
	(*) Here we see the image of industrialization and globalization.
7.	"Come, let Us go down and there confuse their language, so that they will not understand one another's speech."
8.	So the LORD scattered them abroad from there over the face of the whole earth; and they stopped building the city.
9.	Therefore its name was called Babel, because there the LORD confused the language of the whole earth; and from there the LORD scattered them abroad over the face of the whole earth.
	(1) Here is the story of civilizations and languages. (2) We see that humans have disunited one another because of evil they have done. (3) In the narrative of the day of Pentecost (book of Acts of the Apostles, New Testament), God unites the human to him again by the gift of the Holy Spirit, the gift of tongues, baptism in the name of his Son Jesus, and the early Christian communities.

|21-F| Noah (the Flood)

I report here an excerpt from Genesis chapters 6 and 7 of the Bible (New American Standard).

This article is related to article |24-U| of the Gospel of St-Matthew.

Genesis 6. Noah (the Flood).

3.	Then the LORD said, "My Spirit shall not strive with man forever, because he also is flesh; nevertheless his days shall be one hundred and twenty years."
	(*) This life time is also what the science of genetics has found.
4.	The Nephilim were on the earth in those days, and also afterward, when the sons of God came in to the daughters of men, and they bore <i>children</i> to them. Those were the mighty men who <i>were</i> of old, men of renown.
	(*) Here is an unimportant legend. By the science of genetics, we know that human beings are made in one block because their 25,000 sealed genes prevent them from evolving. The human being is the fruit of a work, he is a creation. The present human being is the last modern man. It appeared "suddenly" about 35,000 years ago and has remained the same ever since. The human is the crowning of God's work on Earth.
5.	Then the LORD saw that the wickedness of man was great on the earth, and that every intent of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually.
	(*) Here, we clearly see that evil comes from the bottom of the human.
6.	The LORD was sorry that He had made man on the earth, and He was grieved in His heart.
7.	The LORD said, "I will blot out man whom I have created from the face of the land, from man to animals to creeping things and to birds of the sky; for I am sorry that I have made them."
	(*) This is in the image of the end of the world.
8.	But Noah found favor in the eyes of the LORD.
	(*) This is in the image of the people of {God's children} that Jesus Christ allows to become.
9.	These are the records of the generations of Noah. Noah was a righteous man, blameless in his time; Noah walked with God.
	(*) Noah is good in the eyes of God and does his Will (to do good).
11.	Now the earth was corrupt in the sight of God, and the earth was filled with violence.
12.	God looked on the earth, and behold, it was corrupt; for all flesh had corrupted their way upon the earth.

13.	Then God said to Noah, "The end of all flesh has come before Me; for the earth is filled with violence because of them; and behold, I am about to destroy them with the earth. (*) Here we clearly see that evil comes from the human and not the devil. See chapter 18 .
14.	"Make for yourself an ark of gopher wood; you shall make the ark with rooms, and shall cover it inside and out with pitch. (*) The ark is the symbol of Jesus the Savior.
15.	"This is how you shall make it: the length of the ark three hundred cubits, its breadth fifty cubits, and its height thirty cubits.
17.	"Behold, I, even I am bringing the flood of water upon the earth, to destroy all flesh in which is the breath of life, from under heaven; everything that is on the earth shall perish. (*) This is in the image of the end of the world.
18.	"But I will establish My covenant (1) with you; and you shall enter the ark (2) --you and your sons and your wife, and your sons' wives with you (3). (1) Here, it is in the image of the Eternal Covenant concluded by the sacrifice of Jesus on the cross. (2) The ark is the symbol of Jesus the Savior. (3) The disciples of Jesus are like this little family who found grace in the eyes of God.
19.	"And of every living thing of all flesh, you shall bring two of every <i>kind</i> into the ark, to keep <i>them</i> alive with you; they shall be male and female.
22.	Thus Noah did; according to all that God had commanded him, so he did. (*) Noah does the Will of God as Jesus asks his disciples.

Genesis 7. Continued...

1.	Then the LORD said to Noah, "Enter the ark, you and all your household, for you <i>alone</i> I have seen <i>to be</i> righteous before Me in this time. (*) The "righteous" of the Old Testament are the "saints" of the New Testament.
4.	"For after seven more days, I will send rain on the earth forty days and forty nights; and I will blot out from the face of the land every living thing that I have made."
10.	It came about after the seven days, that the water of the flood came upon the earth.
13.	On the very same day Noah and Shem and Ham and Japheth, the sons of Noah, and Noah's wife and the three wives of his sons with them, entered the ark,
17.	Then the flood came upon the earth for forty days, and the water increased and lifted up the ark, so that it rose above the earth.
20.	The water prevailed fifteen cubits higher, and the mountains were covered.
21.	All flesh that moved on the earth perished, birds and cattle and beasts and every swarming thing that swarms upon the earth, and all mankind;
22.	of all that was on the dry land, all in whose nostrils (1) was the breath (* of the spirit *) of life , died (2). (* ----- *) Note: this little piece of sentence does not exist in the Jerusalem Bible. (1) Here we see the true Jewish definition of the word "soul." In this definition, even animals have a "soul." The soul is simply our breathing, our deadly biological life. (2) This is in the image of the end of the world.
23.	Thus He blotted out every living thing that was upon the face of the land, from man to animals to creeping things and to birds of the sky, and they were blotted out from the earth (1); and only Noah was left, together with those that were with him in the ark (2). (1) After our life on earth, the human simply dies like animals and plants with nothing more. (2) Living, there are only those who have ascended into the ark of Jesus the Savior to the Kingdom of God.

|22| The Old Testament, some important texts of the prophets

To obtain your {birth of the Spirit}, you must read important texts from the New Testament and the Old Testament. These texts being inspired by the Holy Spirit, they prepare you to receive his Visit.

In this chapter, I have chosen texts from the Old Testament (Judaism) that are directly related to the New Testament (Christianity).

In the next articles of this chapter:

These are excerpts from the Bible (New American Standard). See article |O-H|. They come from the website: http://www.lexilogos.com/bible_multilingue.htm The explanations I give are in parentheses () below the verses.

|22-A| The New Covenant

I report an excerpt from the Prophet Jeremiah, chapter 31 of the Bible (New American Standard).

Jeremiah 31. The New Covenant.

The personal remuneration	
28.	"As I have watched over them to pluck up, to break down, to overthrow, to destroy and to bring disaster, so I will watch over them to build and to plant (1)," declares the LORD (2).
	(1) God asks the human to make efforts to remove evil in him and put good. (2) LORD (Yahweh) is the name that the Jews gave to God. This Name means the Eternal (Past, Present, Future).
29.	"In those days they will not say again, 'The fathers have eaten sour grapes, And the children's teeth are set on edge.'
	(*) In the Old Testament. People believed that they suffered for the sins of others. Some even thought that if they were sick, it was to pay for the sins of their parents.
30.	"But everyone will die for his own iniquity; each man who eats the sour grapes, his teeth will be set on edge.
	(*) God removes this false idea of having to pay for the sins of others. In front of God, a person is only responsible for herself.
The New Covenant	
31.	"Behold, days are coming," declares the LORD, "when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel and with the house of Judah,
	(*) This is the 2nd Eternal Covenant, written in the New Testament.
32.	not like the covenant which I made with their fathers in the day I took them by the hand to bring them out of the land of Egypt, My covenant which they broke, although I was a husband to them," declares the LORD.
	(*) This is the First Covenant concluded with Abraham, written in the Old Testament. The exit from the land of Egypt was made with Moses (book of Exodus).
33.	"But this is the covenant (1) which I will make with the house of Israel (2) after those days," declares the LORD, "I will put My law within them and on their heart (3) I will write it; and I will be their God, and they shall be My people.
	(1) The 2nd Eternal Covenant. (2) With the Jewish people and then extended to all other humans who wish to be part of it. (3) At the {birth of the Spirit}, a person is filled with the Holy Spirit who causes his heart to dilate. See article 13-D .
34.	"They will not teach again, each man his neighbor and each man his brother, saying, 'Know the LORD,' for they will all know Me (1), from the least of them to the greatest of them," declares the LORD, "for I will forgive their iniquity, and their sin (2) I will remember no more."

(1) The Holy Spirit is the Spirit of truth that Jesus spoke, "He will be your Intercessor and he will teach you everything." How do you think I can write a book as complete as this one? The {inspiration} does not come from me. (2) Here is the forgiveness obtained by Jesus Christ on the cross for those who will be saved. Beware, this forgiveness is not for all humanity, why else follow the Way of Jesus?	
Permanence of Israel	
35.	Thus says the LORD, Who gives the sun for light by day And the fixed order of the moon and the stars for light by night, Who stirs up the sea so that its waves roar; The LORD of hosts is His name:
(*) God is the Creator and the owner of Earth. It is his living garden in the lifeless universe (space) that surrounds us.	
36.	"If this fixed order departs From before Me," declares the LORD, "Then the offspring of Israel also will cease From being a nation before Me forever."
37.	Thus says the LORD, "If the heavens above can be measured And the foundations of the earth searched out below, Then I will also cast off all the offspring of Israel For all that they have done," declares the LORD.
(*) Of the last 2 verses. Never could the Jewish people imagine that the Covenant of God will no longer be exclusive to them alone, but will extend to every human being who desires it.	

|22-B| Vision of the chariot of Yahweh

I report an excerpt from the prophet Ezekiel, chapter 1 of the Bible (New American Standard).

This article is related to article |23-G| of the Gospel of St-John.

Ezekiel 1. Vision of Yahweh's (LORD's) chariot.

4.	As I (1) looked, behold, a storm wind was coming from the north, a great cloud (2) with fire flashing forth continually and a bright light around it, and in its midst something like glowing metal in the midst of the fire.
(1) The prophet Ezekiel. (2) God was seen as dwelling in the "Most High," much higher than the heavens where the angels dwell. The power of God was such that there was only fire to represent it. As God is a Wind, he then presents himself as a storm having fire in his center. This description resembles the beginning of the narrative of the day of Pentecost in the book of Acts of the Apostles.	
5.	Within it there were figures resembling four living beings. And this was their appearance: they had human form.
6.	Each of them had four faces and four wings.
(*) It is to show that celestial creatures are well above nature.	
8.	Under their wings on their four sides <i>were</i> human hands. As for the faces and wings of the four of them,
(*) It is to indicate that God is everywhere. He acts in all 4 directions.	
9.	their wings touched one another; <i>their faces</i> did not turn when they moved, each went straight forward.
(*) This is to indicate the perfect unity of celestial creatures.	
10.	As for the form of their faces, <i>each</i> had the face of a man; all four had the face of a lion on the right and the face of a bull on the left, and all four had the face of an eagle.
(*) God shows that He is the Creator of all beings on earth as in the heavens.	
12.	And each went straight forward; wherever the spirit (1) was about to go, they would go, without turning as they went.
(*) Spirit means: "Breath or Wind." Celestial beings are propelled by the power of God's Breath. This vision tells us about one of the functions of the Spirit in the Kingdom of God. See article 32-J .	
16.	The appearance of the wheels and their workmanship <i>was</i> like sparkling beryl, and all four of them had the same form, their appearance and workmanship <i>being</i> as if one wheel were within another.
(*) The chariot of Yahweh is above all knowledge and human imagination.	

	From a geometrical point of view, two wheels in one another describe a sphere. It is as if the wheels of Yahweh's chariot were precious stones (jewels).
18.	As for their rims they were lofty and awesome, and the rims of all four of them were full of eyes round about. (*) The wheels of the chariot of Yahweh are so large that they connect the earth and the sky (the heavens) a little like the rainbow.
22.	Now over the heads of the living beings <i>there was</i> something like an expanse, like the awesome gleam of crystal, spread out over their heads.
26.	Now above the expanse that was over their heads there was something resembling a throne, like lapis lazuli in appearance; and on that which resembled a throne, high up, <i>was</i> a figure with the appearance of a man (1). (*) We see the Kingship of God. (1) It is the Son of God who will take the human condition (Jesus).
28.	As the appearance of the rainbow (1) in the clouds on a rainy day, so <i>was</i> the appearance of the surrounding radiance. Such <i>was</i> the appearance of the likeness of the glory of the LORD (Yahweh). And when I saw <i>it</i> , I fell on my face and heard a voice (2) speaking. (1) This is the omen of the 2nd Covenant in the image of the rainbow in the narrative of Noah (the Flood). (2) It is the Son (Jesus) who is the Word of God.

| 22-C | Vision of the book

The Blessed Virgin, in many of her Apparitions, says that the majority of Christians are indifferent to the Life project of Christ and his Father. They do not follow the Way of Jesus and do not make their conversion from the heart. They do not enter within themselves the Word of God that allows them to heal them from death. They do not read the New Testament and are scared of what is written inside or read only the passages that suit them. As I said before, in Quebec I do not think there are more than 1 in 1,000 Christians who have obtained the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, and religious people do not seem to increase this average.

With such a small distribution (less than 1/1000), I do not believe that one day this book is taken seriously in Christianity. At best, I believe this book may become a "curiosity." Why? Christianity is not ready to hear the Truth. The majority of Christians pray to God for physical healing to continue their small human activities without God. Christians are willing to invest a little time in rituals and worship songs, but they do not want to invest their lives. If a Christian does not put his life in the hand of God, God does not give himself the right to unite his own Life with the life of this person by the {gift of the Holy Spirit} for Eternity. Thinking about it, about 1/4 of the world's population is Christian, if everyone had the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, the face of our society would have changed...

The difficulty of following God is not recent and is part of human history. 2,500 years ago, the prophet Ezekiel talks about the same problem in Judaism. I will only repeat a few bits of his text and I will make the link with this present book written for Christianity. The text will seem difficult, perhaps a little exaggerated, unfortunately it is not at all...

I report an excerpt from the prophet Ezekiel, chapters 2 and 3 of the Bible (New American Standard).

Ezekiel 2. Vision of the book.

1.	Then He said to me, "Son of man, stand on your feet that I may speak with you!" (*) God calls the prophet, "Son of man." Jesus being the Word of God, he will also use this expression to say that he is the Messiah expected by the people.
2.	As He spoke to me the Spirit entered me and set me on my feet; and I heard <i>Him</i> speaking to me. (*) Here, the Spirit is the strength of God.
3.	Then He said to me, "Son of man, I am sending you to the sons of Israel (1) [...]"
4.	"I am sending you to them who are stubborn and obstinate children (2) [...]" (1) The Israelites of old are now the Christians.

	(2) Christians do not make their conversion of the heart.
7.	"But you shall speak My words to them whether they listen or not [...]
	(*) Whether Christians listen or not, it does not matter. See article 13-I .
10.	When He spread it out before me, it was written on the front and back, and written on it were lamentations, mourning and woe.
	(*) This book serves to tell the Truth and set the record straight. To go to the Kingdom of God, every Christian must make sincere efforts.

Ezekiel 3. Continued...

4.	Then He said to me, "Son of man, go to the house of Israel (1) and speak with My words to them (2).
	(1) Christianity. (2) This book.
6.	nor to many peoples of unintelligible speech or difficult language, whose words you cannot understand. But I have sent you to them who should listen to you;
7.	yet the house of Israel (1) will not be willing to listen to you (2) , since they are not willing to listen to Me (3). Surely the whole house of Israel is stubborn and obstinate.
	(1) Christianity. (2) This book. (3) Jesus.
10.	Moreover, He said to me, "Son of man, take into your heart all My words which I will speak to you and listen closely.
11.	"Go to the exiles, to the sons of your people, and speak to them (1) and tell them, whether they listen or not (2), `Thus says the Lord GOD.' "
	(1) This is the distribution of this book directly to everyone. (2) Everyone has the freedom to hear or not. But God also has the freedom to Save or not.

|22-D| The dry bones

I report an excerpt from the prophet Ezekiel, chapter 37 of the Bible (New American Standard).

This article is related to article |23-G| of the Gospel of St-John.

Ezekiel 37. The dry bones.

1.	The hand of the LORD (Yahweh) was upon me, and He brought me out by the Spirit (1) of the LORD and set me down in the middle of the valley; and it was full of bones (2).
	(1) It is the breath or the action of God that brings Ezekiel into a Vision. (2) It is a valley where the inhabitants are dead and only their bones remain on the ground.
2.	He caused me to pass among them round about, and behold, <i>there were</i> very many on the surface of the valley; and lo, <i>they were</i> very dry.
3.	He said to me, "Son of man (1), can these bones live?" And I answered, "O Lord GOD, You know (2)."
	(1) God calls the prophet, "Son of man." Jesus being the Word of God, he will use this same expression to say that he is the Messiah expected by the people. (2) These bones are surely dead except that Ezekiel has total trust in God.
4.	Again He said to me, "Prophesy over these bones and say to them, `O dry bones, hear the word (1) of the LORD.'
	(1) The Word of Yahweh (Lord) is the Son (Jesus). He alone has the power to give Eternal Life to a human being.
5.	"Thus says (1) the Lord GOD to these bones (2), `Behold, I will cause breath to enter (3) you that you may come to life (4).
	(1) The Word is the Son of God (Jesus). (2) These are the "spiritual deaths" that we are before our {birth of the Spirit}.

	(3) It is the Holy Spirit (the Breath of Life of God). (4) It is resurrecting or being born again.
6.	'I will put sinews on you, make flesh grow back on you, cover you with skin and put breath in you that you may come alive; and you will know that I am the LORD.' "
7.	So I prophesied as I was commanded; and as I prophesied, there was a noise, and behold, a rattling; and the bones came together, bone to its bone.
8.	And I looked, and behold, sinews were on them, and flesh grew and skin covered them; but there was no breath in them.
9.	Then He said to me, "Prophesy to the breath, prophesy, son of man, and say to the breath, 'Thus says the Lord GOD, "Come from the four winds, O breath, and breathe on these slain, that they come to life."
	(*) Of the last 4 verses. A) We see the connection with the (miracle of Lazarus's return to life) by Jesus. B) We also see the link of the promise of the resurrection with Christ.
10.	So I prophesied as He commanded me, and the breath came into them, and they came to life and stood on their feet, an exceedingly great army.
	(1) They were so numerous that they were roped like an army.
11.	Then He said to me, "Son of man, these bones are the whole house of Israel (1); behold, they say, 'Our bones are dried up and our hope has perished. We are completely cut off.' (2)
	1) We can make the connection with Christians even now. (2) God is the only hope of Life.
13.	"Then you will know that I am the LORD (Yahweh), when I have opened your graves and caused you to come up out of your graves, My people.
14.	"I will put My Spirit within you and you will come to life (1), and I will place you on your own land. Then you will know that I, the LORD, have spoken and done it (2)," declares the LORD.' "
	(1) It is God's promise to live eternally with him. (2) God always keeps his promises. The {birth of the Spirit} is still available even after 2,000 years.

| 22-E | The source of the Temple

I report an excerpt from the prophet Ezekiel, chapter 47 of the Bible (New American Standard).

Ezekiel 47. The source of the Temple.

1.	Then he (1) brought me (2) back to the door of the ~~house~~ (Temple) (3); and behold, water (4) was flowing from under the threshold of the ~~house~~ (Temple) toward the east, for the ~~house~~ (Temple) faced east. And the water was flowing down from under, from the right side (5) «of the ~~house~~ (Temple), from south of the altar.
	(1) God. (2) Ezekiel. (3) The Temple is the Son of God (Jesus). In the Jerusalem Bible, the word used is Temple (~~house~~). (4) On earth, water is recognized as a purifying and invigorating source. Here this water represents the Holy Spirit, Purifying Source and Source of Eternal Life. This is the promise obtained from the Father through the sacrifice of Jesus on the cross. (5) During the crucifixion, Jesus was pierced on the right side by a spear and water came out of it.
2.	He brought me out by way of the north gate and led me around on the outside to the outer gate by way of <i>the gate</i> that faces east. And behold, water was trickling from the south side.
3.	When the man went out toward the east with a line in his hand, he measured a thousand cubits, and he led me through the water, water <i>reaching</i> the ankles.
	(*) Here, Ezekiel finds that there is little water near the source, the Temple.
4.	Again he measured a thousand and led me through the water, water <i>reaching</i> the knees. Again he measured a thousand and led me through <i>the water</i> , water <i>reaching</i> the loins.

5.	Again he measured a thousand; <i>and it was</i> a river that I could not ford, for the water had risen, <i>enough</i> water to swim in, a river that could not be forded.
	(*) Of the last 3 verses. I point out that as Ezekiel moves away from the Temple, the river (water) increases. In nature, we logically know that there cannot be more water after the source. So where does this increase come from? Jesus will give the explanation in (St-John: 12,24), "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless a grain of wheat falls into the earth and dies, it remains alone; but if it dies, it bears much fruit." Here, it is the comparison with the sacrifice of one (Jesus) who gives Eternal Life for every saved human being. Then from the little water of the Temple (here, Jesus), many will be saved around the world (here, a river). It is also the meaning of the multiplication of the loaves in (St-John: 6). Jesus is the little piece of living bread that is offered and whose life is multiplied for all those who will be saved.
6.	He said to me, "Son of man, have you seen <i>this</i> ?" Then he brought me back to the bank of the river.
7.	Now when I had returned, behold, on the bank of the river there <i>were</i> very many trees on the one side and on the other.
	(*) This water given by Jesus gives Life.
8.	Then he said to me, "These waters go out toward the eastern region and go down into the Arabah; then they go toward the sea (1), being made to flow into the sea, and the waters <i>of the sea</i> become fresh.
	(1) It is the Dead Sea that contains no life. It represents all peoples apart from the people of Israel, therefore the Gentiles who do not know God. God will extend the 2nd Covenant to every human being who desires it on earth.
9.	"It will come about that every living creature which swarms in every place where the river goes, will live. And there will be very many fish, for these waters go there and <i>the others</i> become fresh; so everything will live where the river goes.
	(*) It is evangelization throughout the world.
10.	"And it will come about that fishermen (1) will stand beside it; from Engedi to Eneglaim there will be a place for the spreading of nets. Their fish will be according to their kinds, like the fish of the Great Sea, very many.
	(1) St-Peter was called by Jesus: "a fisherman of men."
11.	"But its swamps and marshes will not become fresh; they will be left for salt.
	(*) It is the human beings who will not have taken the Way of Jesus and who will not have brought into them "the water of life of God" (the Holy Spirit). For them, there is nothing after death in the ground.
12.	"By the river on its bank, on one side and on the other, will grow all <i>kinds of</i> trees for food. Their leaves will not wither and their fruit will not fail. They will bear every month because their water flows from the sanctuary (Temple), and their fruit will be for food and their leaves for healing."
	(*) This "water of life" is the Holy Spirit who heals from death and gives Eternal Life. Jesus gives the explanation in (St-John: 4,14): "but whoever drinks of the water that I (Jesus) will give him shall never thirst; but the water that I will give him will become in him a well of water springing up to eternal life."

↑ (Essential articles)	They are necessary for understanding the next chapter.
↓ (Optional articles)	They give additional information.

| 22-F | Satire on the death of a tyrant

I report an excerpt from the prophet Isaiah, chapter 14 of the Bible (New American Standard).

This text is one of those used by the early Christians to define the origin of the devil. The devil is seen as an angel from the heavens (Lucifer) who rebelled against God and who was cast down into hell (under the ground). See article | 18-A |.

Isaiah 14. Satire on the death of a tyrant.

3.	And it will be in the day when the LORD gives you rest from your pain and turmoil and harsh service in which you have been enslaved,
4.	that you will take up this taunt (satire) (1) against the king of Babylon (2), and say, "How the oppressor (tyrant) (3) has ceased, And how fury has ceased!
	(1) A satire is an exaggerated poem about the wickedness of a person to show his madness. (2) Here the wicked person is the king of Babylon. (3) The satire begins with the arrogance of the king and ends with his death in hell with the devil.
5.	"The LORD (1) has broken the staff of the wicked (2), The scepter of rulers (3)
	(1) Here, Yahweh (LORD) is the name of God. (2) The bad guys kick people. (3) This staff of torture is the scepter of the king of Babylon.
6.	Which (1) used to strike the peoples in fury with unceasing strokes, Which subdued the nations in anger with unrestrained persecution.
	(1) The king of Babylon
7.	"The whole earth is at rest and is quiet; They break forth into shouts of joy.
	(*) The king of Babylon is dead now, evil is over.
8.	"Even the cypress trees rejoice over you, and the cedars of Lebanon, saying, 'Since you were laid low, no tree cutter comes up against us.'
	(*) Even the trees are happy with the death of the king, because he also devastated the forests.
9.	"Sheol (1) from beneath is excited over you to meet you when you come; It arouses for you the spirits of the dead (2), all the leaders of the earth; It raises all the kings of the nations from their thrones.
	(1) The Sheol (under the ground) had 4 depths. The deepest was the abyss where the devil and his demons resided. (2) The demons of the abyss (hell) were eager to meet the king.
10.	"They will all respond and say to you, 'Even you have been made weak as we, You have become like us.
	(*) The king is a demon now like the others.
11.	'Your pomp (1) and the music of your harps Have been brought down to Sheol; Maggots are spread out as your bed beneath you And worms are your covering.' (2)
	(1) The king with all his splendor. (2) The king's body is decomposing in the ground.
12.	"How you have fallen from heaven (1), O star (2) of the morning, son of the dawn (3)! You have been cut down to the earth, You who have weakened the nations (4)!
	(1) This time, the king is compared to the devil who is a fallen angel whom God has brought down from the heavens (the sky). (2) Angels have sometimes been compared to the stars in the sky. (3) Here, we are talking about the biggest star. The devil was the greatest angel in the heavens, his name was Lucifer. (4) Here, the comparison comes back to the king who is the conqueror of human nations.
13.	"But you (1) said in your heart, 'I will ascend to heaven (2); I will raise my throne (3) above the stars of God, And I will sit on the mount of assembly In the recesses of the north. (4)
	(*) Here, the comparison continues between the king and the devil. (1) Lucifer. (2) The heavens were the abode of angels. (3) Lucifer wanted to go to the Most High to take the Throne of God. (4) This verse is like the narrative of the Tower of Babel. The human had tried to make himself equal to God just as Lucifer had tried it before him.
14.	'I (1) will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will make myself like the Most High.' (2)
15.	"Nevertheless you (1) will be thrust down to Sheol (3), To the recesses of the pit.
	(1) Lucifer.

	(2) God. (3) The Sheol (under the ground) had 4 depths. The deepest was the abyss where the devil and his demons resided.
16.	"Those who see you will gaze at you, They will ponder over you, saying, `Is this the man who made the earth tremble, Who shook kingdoms, (*) Here we return to the king.
17.	Who made the world like a wilderness And overthrew its cities, Who did not allow his prisoners to go home?' (*) All the evil that the king did.
18.	"All the kings of the nations lie in glory, Each in his own tomb. (*) Each one resides where he deserves.
19.	"But you (1) have been cast out of your tomb (2) Like a rejected branch, Clothed with the slain who are pierced with a sword, Who go down to the stones of the pit Like a trampled corpse. (1) The king of Babylon. (2) For the Jews, the righteous man rested in a tomb so that his body would not be defiled. On the other hand, the miscreant was left on the battlefield or put in a dump. The "Gehenna of fire" that Jesus spoke of was a dump where sulfur was inserted to make it burn better, hence the smell given to hell.
20.	"You will not be united with them in burial (1), Because you have ruined your country, You have slain your people. May the offspring of evildoers not be mentioned forever. (1) The king is not a righteous man, so he has not been put to the tomb.

| 22-G | The fall of the king of Tyre

I report here an excerpt from the prophet Ezekiel, chapter 28 of the Bible (New American Standard).

This text is one of those used by the early Christians to define the origin of the devil. The devil is seen as an angel from the heavens (Lucifer) who rebelled against God and who was cast down into hell (under the ground). See article | 18-A |.

Ezekiel 28. The fall of the king of Tyre.

11.	Again the word of the LORD came to me saying,
12.	"Son of man (1), take up a lamentation (2) over the king of Tyre (3) and say to him, `Thus says the Lord GOD, "You had (4) the seal of perfection, Full of wisdom and perfect in beauty. (1) God calls the prophet, "Son of man." Jesus being the Word of God, he will use this same expression to say that he is the Messiah expected by the people. (2) A lament is like a satire, an exaggeration. See article 22-F . (3) The king of Tyre will be compared to the devil or to Lucifer. (4) Lucifer was an angel of great value in the eyes of God.
13.	"You (1) were in Eden, the garden of God; Every precious stone was your covering (2): The ruby, the topaz and the diamond; The beryl, the onyx and the jasper; The lapis lazuli, the turquoise and the emerald; And the gold, the workmanship of your settings and sockets, Was in you. On the day that you were created They were prepared (3). (1) Lucifer took the form of the serpent (snake) in the Garden of Eden to tempt Eve. (2) Here, the beauty of the serpent's mantle is compared to the beauty of the angel Lucifer. You only have to look at photos of the most colorful snakes in the sun and you will see as little gems set in his skin and golden lines around. (3) All this beauty is the work of the Creator (God).
14.	"You were the anointed cherub (1) who covers, And I placed you there. You were on the holy mountain of God; You walked in the midst of the stones of fire (2). (1) Lucifer in the heavens was one of the most beautiful and greatest angels. (2) God has cherished Lucifer more than all the other angels by placing Lucifer closest to the Throne of God.

15.	"You were blameless in your ways From the day you were created Until unrighteousness was found in you. (1)
16.	"By the abundance of your trade You were internally filled with violence, And you sinned (2); Therefore I have cast you as profane From the mountain of God. And I have destroyed you (3), O covering cherub, From the midst of the stones of fire.
	(1) Lucifer did evil by tempting Eve. (2) Lucifer rebelled against God to take his Throne. (3) God made Lucifer (fallen) and hurled him down from the heavens.
17.	"Your heart was lifted up because of your beauty; You corrupted your wisdom by reason of your splendor (1). I cast you to the ground (2); I put you before kings, That they may see you.
	(1) Lucifer by his vanity thought himself greater than God. (2) No creature equals its Creator.
18.	"By the multitude of your iniquities, In the unrighteousness of your trade You profaned your sanctuaries (1). Therefore I have brought fire from the midst of you; It has consumed you (2), And I have turned you to ashes on the earth (3) In the eyes of all who (4) see you.
	(1) Here, it is to do evil. (2) The fire of hell consumed Lucifer. (3) It is through the ashes of Lucifer spread into the ground that death has come to earth. (4) The other angels of the heavens.
19.	"All who know you among the peoples Are appalled at you; You have become terrified (1) And you will cease to be forever (2)."
	(1) Lucifer became the Terror, the devil. (2) The devil can no longer be redeemed by God. He is fallen forever. He resides in hell for eternity.

| 23 | The New Testament, the Gospel of St-John

This chapter aims to remove as much as possible the mystery in the Gospel of St-John. It does not have the function of explaining the Gospel verse by verse, but of choosing only the mysterious verses and explaining them as simply as possible. If the same mystery is repeated even further in the text, then I put only small indications or I let you think for yourself.

The Gospel of St-John is really different from the 3 others. It is a Gospel that focuses on the mystery of God (Father, Son, Holy Spirit). It is a Gospel of revelation and not of conversion like the 3 others. This mystery, St-Paul gives additional details in his Epistles.

A) Here is a small map of the Gospels similar to article | 19-B |.

Jesus says in (St-John: 3,5), "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born of water and the Spirit, no one can enter the Kingdom of God."

Generally:

1) The Gospels of St-Matthew, St-Luke and St-Mark focus on the human reality of "to be born of water." The Gospel of St-Matthew will be presented in chapter | 24 |.

2) The Gospel of St-John focuses on the mystery of "to be born of the Spirit." It is presented in this chapter | 23 |.

B) Summary of the great steps of "to be born of water" and "to be born of the Spirit."

See chapter | 12 |.

The "to be born of water":

1) Awareness of the evil we do. 2) Repentance or deep regret. 3) The desire to change our human life in truth and goodness only. 4) The practice of this kindness and truth in everyday life. In one sentence, "to be born of water" is: "the conversion of a bad human being into a good human being."

In short, the person chooses to do good, to learn and **to follow concretely** the Word of Jesus (the Gospels).

The Holy Spirit can perform miracles following a prayer or even without any request. Miracles, healings and wonders are made by God to increase the person's faith so that he asks himself the question if God is really there. The person is always free to believe or not in the wonders he has experienced. At the time of Jesus, many Pharisees did not want to recognize the wonders that Jesus performed, because they would have lost their precious power.

The "to be born of the Spirit":

5) One must first fulfill one's promises of "to be born of water." In this Way, sooner or later, the person will feel the need to get help from God, because doing good on earth is not easy! 6) The person must seek God and conclude that he really exists because nature exists.

7) Then the Holy Spirit intervenes and allows him to "truly believe in God." The person now believes in God as much as in the presence of his nose in his face. 8) By mirror effect, the idea of the devil will then appear naturally in the consciousness of the person.

9) Thereafter, the Holy Spirit will give **psychological help** to the person. It will not be tangible Manifestations. It will only be (feelings in the person) that will appear as he progresses. 10) The person will discover that he is mortal and that he does not deserve the Forgiveness and the Eternal Life that Jesus can offer him. Without God, it is death... so the thought of the psychic actor appears "the devil." 11). The person must then make a choice, put his full trust in

God or not. It will require humility. Afterwards, to be successful, the person conscientiously asks God to help him lead his life because he does not feel able to do it alone. In one sentence, the person gives his life to God.

If all the steps are done **correctly**, the Holy Spirit (the Breath of God's Life) will actually manifest himself in the coming days. It took me about 3 days.

12) There is then a union between the life of the person and the Eternal Life of God, this is the {birth of the Spirit}. The person becomes a {God's child} and an heir to the Kingdom of God. Afterwards, God helps his {child} on earth.

Note:

It is important to understand that you cannot go over the steps. If you are in step 3) and want to go directly to step 11)... well, it will not work. The Lord never burns the steps, you must be 100% ready.
You surely think that all these steps are not nothing! You are right. But Eternal Life is not nothing too! To have Eternal Life is a choice, it is a divine Reward, it must be longed for.
You can compare our Earth to a garden from which God comes to pick beautiful flowers for his house. Will you become one of his beautiful flowers to please him? If you decide yes, He will help you grow. You have all your human life so that God will come to tell you that he will bring you with him. This is done by the {gift of the Holy Spirit}.

In the next articles of this chapter:

These are excerpts from the Bible (New American Standard). See article O-H .
They come from the website: http://www.lexilogos.com/bible_multilingue.htm
The explanations I give are in parentheses () below the verses.

|23-A| St-John 1. Prologue

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-John, chapter 1 of the Bible (New American Standard).

1.	In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.
2.	He was in the beginning with God.
3.	All things came into being through Him, and apart from Him nothing came into being that has come into being.
(*) Of the last 3 verses. (1) The Son of God (Jesus) is the Word or the Word of God. (2) The Son has always existed because he is one of the 3 Persons of the Holy Trinity (Father, Son, Holy Spirit). (3) At the beginning of Genesis (Old Testament), it is the Son who Pronounces creation.	
4.	In Him was life, and the life was the Light of men.
(1) The Son of God is the Way that leads to Life.	
5.	The Light (1) shines in the darkness (2), and the darkness did not comprehend it (3).
(1) The Son of God gives generously. (2) Our human world of wickedness. (3) Humans crucified the Son of God (Jesus) on the cross.	
6.	There came a man sent from God, whose name was John.
7.	He came as a witness, to testify about the Light, so that all might believe through him.
8.	He was not the Light, but <i>he came</i> to testify about the Light.
(*) The prophet John the Baptist did a preparatory work on the people before Jesus began his mission.	
9.	There was the true Light which, coming into the world, enlightens every man.
(*) The Son of God was incarnated (Jesus) on earth by the Power of the Holy Spirit and was carried by the Blessed Virgin Mary.	
10.	He was in the world, and the world was made through Him, and the world did not know Him.

	(*) Although the Word (Jesus) has Pronounced creation, the human does not want to recognize his Creator.
11.	He came to His own, and those who were His own did not receive Him.
	(*) Jesus will say, "No one is a prophet in his own country!"
12.	But as many as received Him, to them He gave the right to become children of God, <i>even</i> to those who believe in His name,
	(*) A person who follows the Way of Jesus receives the {birth of the Spirit}. This makes him a {God's child}.
13.	who were born, not of blood nor of the will of the flesh nor of the will of man, but of God.
14.	And the Word became flesh (1), and dwelt among us, and we saw His glory, glory (2) as of the only begotten from the Father, full of grace and truth.
	(1) The Incarnation of the Son of God on earth in human form (Jesus) was made by the Will of the Father and the Action of the Holy Spirit and not by human reproduction. (2) The apostles testify that Jesus is really the Son of God. They saw the Apparitions of the Risen Jesus.
15.	John testified about Him and cried out, saying, "This was He of whom I said, 'He who comes after me has a higher rank than I, for He existed before me.' "
	(*) The prophet John the Baptist also testifies that Jesus is really the Son of God.
16.	For of His fullness we have all received (1), and grace upon grace (2).
	(1) The apostles were filled with the Holy Spirit at the day of Pentecost. (2) God is very generous with his gifts.
17.	For the Law was given through Moses (1); grace and truth were realized through Jesus Christ (2).
	(1) The 2 stone Tables of the 10 Commandments given by God to Moses (Exodus). (2) By the Word of God (Jesus) and the Holy Spirit, the Law of God passes from the stone to the heart of the human being.
18.	No one has seen God at any time; the only begotten God who is in the bosom of the Father, He has explained <i>Him</i> .
	(*) See chapter 10 .

| 23-B | St-John 1. The testimony of John

24.	Now they had been sent from the Pharisees.
25.	They asked him, and said to him (1), "Why then are you baptizing, if you are not the Christ (2), nor Elijah, nor the Prophet?" (3)
	(1) Here, it is the prophet John the Baptist who announced the coming of the Messiah. (2) The word Christ means that he has received the Anointing of the Spirit of the Father . This is the Messiah that the Jews were expecting. It is for this reason that Jesus of Nazareth is called Jesus Christ. On the other hand, when a person receives the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, it is the anointing of the Spirit of Jesus . This is the anointing that is described in (1st Epistle of St-John: 2,27). When a person receives this anointing of the Spirit of Jesus, he receives the title of {God's child}. It is only after the real attainment of this anointing that Jesus allows the person to teach in his name as I do in this book. During the history of Christianity, many religious people have taught Christianity by imagining that the anointing of the Spirit of Jesus does not feel in them (for real). They just did not have it to guide them in their work! Then, Christianity was spread away from the Gospels as shown in article 2-B . As I said in article 15-E , Christianity began to be free of expression only since the 1960s. Then the {God's children}, too few and without any power, never had a say in redressing the situation. That is why this book. To know how this anointing occurs concretely, see article 13-D . (3) Elijah was a great prophet. The Scriptures of the Jews awaited the return of a prophet like him. This was realized by the prophet John the Baptist.
26.	John answered them saying, "I baptize in water, <i>but</i> among you stands One whom you do not know.

	(*) John the Baptist baptizes in the water. Water represents human purification. This baptism is a mark of repentance for one's faults (sins). The baptism of water is accomplished by the conversion of the heart of the person (on the Way of Christ), not by a ritual.
27.	"It is He who comes after me, the thong of whose sandal I am not worthy to untie."
28.	These things took place in Bethany beyond the Jordan, where John was baptizing.
29.	The next day he saw Jesus coming to him and said, "Behold, the Lamb of God (1) who takes away the sin of the world!"
	(1) Here, it is Jesus who sacrificed his life on the cross for the Forgiveness of the sins of those who will be saved and not for the whole world. The word "world" in this verse means that this Forgiveness can be offered to any human being who follows the Way of Christ.
30.	"This is He on behalf of whom I said, 'After me comes a Man who has a higher rank than I, for He existed before me.'
	(*) John the Baptist says that Jesus (not as a human being, but as the Son of God) has always existed.
31.	"I did not recognize Him, but so that He might be manifested to Israel, I came baptizing in water."
32.	John testified saying, "I have seen the Spirit descending (1) as a dove out of heaven, and He remained upon Him.
	(1) Jesus was Anointed by the Spirit of the Father to be the Messiah (Savior).
33.	"I did not recognize Him, but He (1) who sent me to baptize in water said to me, 'He upon whom you see the Spirit descending and remaining upon Him, this is the One who baptizes in the Holy Spirit.' (2)
	(1) God. (2) Here, we see clearly that it is Jesus who baptizes in the Holy Spirit and not religious people. See article 3-E .
49.	Nathanael answered Him, "Rabbi, You are the Son of God; You are the King of Israel."
50.	Jesus answered and said to him, "Because I said to you that I saw you under the fig tree, do you believe? You will see greater things than these."
51.	And He said to him, "Truly, truly, I say to you, you will see the heavens opened and the angels of God ascending and descending on the Son of Man."
	(1) Here, Jesus already announced his Ascension at the end of his mission on earth. See (Acts of the Apostles: 1,9-11).

|23-C| St-John 2. The wedding in Cana/Stay in Jerusalem

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-John, chapter 2 of the Bible (New American Standard).

1.	On the third day there was a wedding in Cana of Galilee, and the mother of Jesus was there;
2.	and both Jesus and His disciples were invited to the wedding.
3.	When the wine ran out, the mother of Jesus said to Him, "They have no wine."
4.	And Jesus said to her, "Woman, what does that have to do with us? My hour has not yet come."
	(*) Here, this text is quite hard on the part of a son for his mother. But that is not the meaning, because Jesus obviously loved his mother. The text stresses that Jesus is only under the authority of God the Father. No human being has authority over him, even his mother.
11.	This beginning of <i>His</i> signs Jesus did in Cana of Galilee, and manifested His glory, and His disciples believed in Him.
12.	After this He went down to Capernaum, He and His mother and <i>His</i> brothers (1) and His disciples; and they stayed there a few days.
	(1) The hypothesis adopted by the footnote of the (1977 Jerusalem Bible of Editions du Cerf) is that "his brothers" were actually his cousins. I see another possibility. At that time, we know that every married woman had children to get help in the house. Likewise, every married man had children to get help in his work and to ensure the survival of his family. Here, as Mary had only one son (Jesus) whose mission will not be (to take care of his parents), it is very likely that Mary and Joseph adopted orphans to found a larger family

	and necessary to its maintenance. Thinking about it, with the Roman soldiers, it certainly should not miss orphans among the Jews...
24.	But Jesus, on His part, was not entrusting Himself to them, for He knew all men,
25.	and because He did not need anyone to testify concerning man, for He Himself knew what was in man.
	(*) Jesus knows that the bottom of the human is not pure, because the human commits evil easily.

| 23-D | To go to the Kingdom of God

A) Where do people who do not follow the Way of Jesus go?

After our life on earth, what are the possibilities?

- 1) In eternal hell. As the devil does not exist, see chapter | 18 |, eternal hell does not exist either. One less possibility!
- 2) In Purgatory. It is an invention of some Christian movements (around the year 1500) to purify himself of evil influences of the devil that does not exist anyway. Once again, one less possibility.
- 3) What is left? Simply, death in the ground. God is Holy (without any evil). He does not punish the wicked person, but rewards the good person for Eternal Life. God generously gave mortal life on earth to humans without asking for anything in return. The verb "to give" means, "not to take back." For example, we only have to look at the horrors of the Second World War. Did God intervene by destroying the bad ones? No! Why? This is because when God gives life to the human, he does not take it back and asks nothing in return! If a person does evil, that person will have nothing more. Jesus said, "You must forgive all."

But then if we die simply on earth, why the idea of eternal death? This idea is not seen in the eyes of humans, but in those of God. For God who is Eternal, a human being who dies without Salvation (not be saved by Jesus) is a loss forever. But this person does not suffer, he is dead!

B) The person who follows the Way of Jesus goes to the Kingdom of God.

Let's look at how to enter the Kingdom of God...

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-John, chapter 3 of the Bible (New American Standard).

St-John 3. The interview with Nicodemus.

1.	Now there was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews;
2.	this man came to Jesus by night and said to Him, "Rabbi, we know that You have come from God <i>as</i> a teacher; for no one can do these signs that You do unless God is with him."
	(*) Only God can perform miracles.
3.	Jesus answered and said to him, "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born again (1) he cannot see the kingdom of God."
	(1) In the Jerusalem Bible it is stated: "to be born from above." (*) Jesus says that to go to a world, one must first be born there. The Son of God had to be born humanly on earth (our world) to teach humans. So to go to Heaven, you have to (be born from above) too.
4.	Nicodemus said to Him, "How can a man be born when he is old? He cannot enter a second time into his mother's womb and be born, can he?"
5.	Jesus answered, "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born of water (1) and the Spirit (2) he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.
	(1) This is repentance and conversion of the heart that is associated with John Baptist's baptism of water. (2) This is the {birth of the Spirit} given by Jesus.
6.	"That which is born of the flesh is flesh (1), and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit (2).
	(1) What is born of the human being is a (mortal human's child).

	(2) What is born of the Spirit (God) is spirit, a (God's child). Following the example of Jesus, as one must be born humanly to come into our human world. It is also necessary to be born spiritually to enter the Kingdom of the spirits/Spirit.
7.	"Do not be amazed that I said to you, 'You must (1) be born again.' (2) (1) This {birth of the Spirit} is obligatory. (2) In the Jerusalem Bible it is stated: "to be born from above."
8.	"The wind blows where it wishes and you hear the sound of it, but do not know where it comes from and where it is going; so is everyone who is born of the Spirit." (*) The person born of the Spirit (the Breath of Life) is released from death.
9.	Nicodemus said to Him, "How can these things be?"
10.	Jesus answered and said to him, "Are you the teacher of Israel and do not understand these things?"
11.	"Truly, truly, I say to you, we (1) speak of what we know and testify of what we have seen, and you (2) do not accept our testimony. (1) The Son and the Father. (2) The human.
12.	"If I told you earthly (1) things and you do not believe, how will you believe if I tell you heavenly things? (1) Jesus states that this {birth of the Spirit} is well on earth.
13.	"No one has ascended into heaven, but He who descended from heaven: the Son of Man. (1) Only Jesus, the Son of God, has seen the Kingdom of God.
14.	"As Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness (1), even so must the Son of Man be lifted up (2); (1) Moses had lifted up a bronze serpent, so that whoever is bitten by a serpent (snake) in the wilderness should be healed from death by looking at that bronze serpent with faith in God. (2) In the same way, every human being is healed of his mortal condition by looking at Jesus on the cross with faith in God.
15.	so that whoever believes will in Him have eternal life. (*) The famous word "believe" of St-John does not mean "to think," but to do everything it takes to have his {birth of the Spirit}.
16.	"For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him shall not perish, but have eternal life.
17.	"For God did not send the Son into the world to judge (1) the world, but that the world might be saved (2) through Him. (1) The Son does not judge anyone to die on earth, because it is already the biological condition of the human. (2) The Son has the mission to Save those who follow his Way.
18.	"He who believes in Him is not judged (1); he who does not believe has been judged already (2), because he has not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. (1) Whoever follows the Way of Jesus will have his {birth of the Spirit}. (2) Whoever does not follow the Way of Jesus will not go further than the earth from which he was born.
19.	"This is the judgment, that the Light has come into the world, and men loved the darkness rather than the Light, for their deeds were evil.
20.	"For everyone who does evil hates the Light, and does not come to the Light for fear that his deeds (1) will be exposed.
21.	"But he who practices the truth comes to the Light (2), so that his deeds may be manifested as having been wrought in God." (1) The Last Judgment is on earth now on the basis of what we do. See chapter 29 . (2) During the {birth of the Spirit}, we see the Light enter into us , see article 13-D .

| 23-E | St-John 3. Ultimate testimony of John

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-John, chapter 3 of the Bible (New American Standard).

31.	"He who comes from above (1) is above all, he who is of the earth is from the earth (2) and speaks of the earth. He who comes from heaven is above all. (1) Jesus, the Son of God, comes from heaven and speaks of heavenly things. (2) Humans are of the earth and speak of things of the earth.
32.	"What He has seen and heard, of that He testifies; and no one receives His testimony. (*) For humans, Jesus is often mistaken for a madman.
33.	"He who has received His testimony (1) has set his seal to <i>this</i> , that God is true. (1) These are the apostles and all who have had their {birth of the Spirit} like them.
34.	"For He whom God has sent speaks the words of God; for He gives the Spirit without measure. (*) It is Jesus the Word of God who makes the {gift of the Holy Spirit}.
35.	"The Father loves the Son and has given all things into His hand. (*) It is Jesus who has all the powers.
36.	"He who believes in the Son has eternal life; but he who does not obey the Son will not see life, but the wrath of God (1) abides on him." (1) It is the biological human condition to die in the ground.

|23-F| St-John 4. The revelation of the Savior of the world to the Samaritans

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-John, chapter 4 of the Bible (New American Standard).

10.	Jesus answered and said to her, "If you knew the gift of God, and who it is who says to you, 'Give Me a drink,' you would have asked Him, and He would have given you living water."
11.	She said to Him, "Sir, You have nothing to draw with and the well is deep; where then do You get that living water?"
13.	Jesus answered and said to her, "Everyone who drinks of this water will thirst again; (*) The human being is mortal like everything on earth.
14.	but whoever drinks of the water that I will give him shall never thirst; but the water that I will give him will become in him a well of water springing up to eternal life." (*) The living water is the Holy Spirit.
21.	Jesus said to her, "Woman, believe Me, an hour is coming when neither in this mountain nor in Jerusalem will you worship the Father. (*) A person can pray from home, because God is everywhere.
23.	"But an hour is coming, and now is, when the true worshipers will worship the Father in spirit and truth; for such people the Father seeks to be His worshipers. (*) God does not want a human religion with objects and rituals. God wants to be in relationship with a person. It is through the {gift of the Holy Spirit} that this relationship of (Father to child) will be established.
24.	"God is spirit (1), and those who worship Him must worship in spirit and truth (2)." (1) God Presents himself as a Wind (Spirit). (2) A person must seek the {gift of the Holy Spirit} to pray better.
36.	"Already he who reaps (2) is receiving wages and is gathering fruit (3) for life eternal; so that he who sows (1) and he who reaps may rejoice together. (*) Earth is like a garden whose workers are the Father and the Son. (1) The Father once created the garden and sowed the human. Jesus says that the Father is the Sower. (2) Through his Word, the Son makes the human mature. (3) Through the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, Jesus allows a human being to become a {God's child}. Jesus then calls himself the Harvester (Reaper) for Eternal Life.
47.	When he heard that Jesus had come out of Judea into Galilee, he went to Him and was imploring <i>Him</i> to come down and heal his son; for he was at the point of death.
48.	So Jesus said to him, "Unless you <i>people</i> see signs and wonders, you <i>simply</i> will not believe."

(*) The human is very incredulous, he needs great evidence to believe in God. It is for this reason that the first part of this book is to prove that God really exists. See chapters |5 and 6|.

|23-G| St-John 5. Speech on the work of the Son

This article is related to articles |22-B| and |22-D|.

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-John, chapter 5 of the Bible (New American Standard).

19.	Therefore Jesus answered and was saying to them, "Truly, truly, I say to you, the Son can do nothing of Himself, unless <i>it is</i> something He sees the Father doing; for whatever the Father does, these things the Son also does in like manner.
20.	"For the Father loves the Son, and shows Him all things that He Himself is doing; and <i>the Father</i> will show Him greater works than these, so that you will marvel.
21.	"For just as the Father raises the dead and gives them life, even so the Son also gives life to whom He wishes.
	(*) This is related to article 22-D of the prophet Ezekiel.
22.	"For not even the Father judges anyone, but He has given all judgment to the Son,
	(*) The Last Judgment belongs to the Son, for he is the Word by whom the Father pronounces it.
23.	so that all will honor the Son even as they honor the Father. He who does not honor the Son does not honor the Father who sent Him.
24.	"Truly, truly, I say to you, he who hears My word, and believes Him who sent Me, has eternal life, and does not come into judgment, but has passed out of death into life.
25.	"Truly, truly, I say to you, an hour is coming and now is, when the dead will hear the voice of the Son of God, and those who hear will live.
	(*) These last 2 verses are directly related to article 22-D of the prophet Ezekiel.
26.	"For just as the Father has life in Himself, even so He gave to the Son also to have life in Himself;
	(*) It is the Breath of Eternal Life of God (the Holy Spirit).
27.	and He gave Him authority to execute judgment, because He is <i>the</i> Son of Man.
	(*) Jesus calls himself the King who was to come into the world. See article 22-B of the prophet Ezekiel.
28.	"Do not marvel at this; for an hour is coming, in which all who are in the tombs (1) will hear His voice,
	(1) This is directly related to article 22-D of the prophet Ezekiel.
29.	and will come forth; those who did the good <i>deeds</i> to a resurrection of life, those who committed the evil <i>deeds</i> to a resurrection of judgment.
	(*) This verse will be clarified in article 29-B .
30.	"I can do nothing on My own initiative. As I hear, I judge; and My judgment is just, because I do not seek My own will, but the will of Him who sent Me.
	(*) The Last Judgment belongs to the Son, for he is the Word by whom the Father pronounces it.
31.	"If I <i>alone</i> testify about Myself, My testimony is not true.
36.	"But the testimony which I have is greater than <i>the testimony of John</i> ; for the works which the Father has given Me to accomplish--the very works that I do--testify about Me, that the Father has sent Me.
	(*) These are all the healings, miracles and wonders that Jesus does.
37.	"And the Father who sent Me, He has testified of Me. You have neither heard His voice at any time nor seen His form.
	(*) In the book of Exodus (Moses), it is the Son of God who speaks through the miracle of the Burning Bush.
38.	"You do not have His word (1) abiding in you, for you do not believe Him (1) whom He (2) sent.
	(1) The Word is the Son of God (Jesus). (2) God the Father.
39.	"You search the Scriptures because you think that in them you have eternal life; it is these that testify about Me;
	(*) Jesus is the Word, He is the Inspiration of the Scriptures (the Bible). Since the chief priests did not believe in Jesus, they did not believe in the Scriptures they had in their hands.

41.	"I do not receive glory from men;
43.	"I have come in My Father's name, and you do not receive Me; if another comes in his own name, you will receive him.
44.	"How can you believe, when you receive glory from one another and you do not seek the glory that is from the <i>one and only</i> God?
(*) Of the last 3 verses. That is why this book will disturb many people! Do people want human benefits for themselves or seek the Truth? Each one his inheritance, the earth (mortal) or the Heaven (Eternal).	

| 23-H | St-John 6. Speech in the synagogue of Capernaum

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-John, chapter 6 of the Bible (New American Standard).

25.	When they found Him on the other side of the sea, they said to Him, "Rabbi, when did You get here?"
26.	Jesus answered them and said, "Truly, truly, I say to you, you seek Me, not because you saw signs (2), but because you ate of the loaves and were filled (1).
(1) Here is a great message of Jesus for all Christians. People pray to God for work or physical healings. They run around the world where there were once miracles to have the chance to be healed as well. They are like the people that Jesus is speaking here who have eaten bread, but who do not want to go further in their approach... (2) Jesus makes signs (miracles) not to physically heal people, but to give them the faith necessary to receive the {gift of the Holy Spirit} who heals from death! The Way of Jesus is not made to heal the human body, but to obtain the Kingdom of God. Jesus said, "It is the spirit that gives life, the flesh is of no use." For God, the physical body he has given us is only a time-limited form of life in order to make our choice. A) God for Life. B) Or, our own way for the time remaining on earth.	
27.	"Do not work for the food which perishes, but for the food which endures to eternal life, which the Son of Man (1) will give to you, for on Him the Father, God, has set His seal." (2)
(1) Jesus said, "Start by looking for the realities from above, and the other things on earth will be given to you in addition." (2) The seal of the Father is the Anointing that enables Jesus to be the Christ (Messiah, Savior). See article 23-B .	
35.	Jesus said to them, "I am the bread of life; he who comes to Me will not hunger, and he who believes in Me will never thirst.
(*) Jesus is the Way, the Truth and the Life.	
36.	"But I said to you that you have seen Me, and yet do not believe.
(*) People even today are very incredulous.	
37.	"All that the Father gives Me will come to Me (1), and the one who comes to Me I will certainly not cast out (2).
(1) The Father is the Sower. (2) The Son is the Harvester (Reaper).	
38.	"For I have come down from heaven, not to do My own will, but the will of Him who sent Me.
39.	"This is the will of Him who sent Me, that of all that He has given Me (1) I lose nothing, but raise it up on the last day.
(1) It is those who follow the Way of Jesus.	
44.	"No one can come to Me unless the Father who sent Me draws him; and I will raise him up on the last day.
(*) It is the Father who allows a person "to truly believe in God" in order to allow him to finalize the Way of Jesus.	
51.	"I am the living bread that came down out of heaven; if anyone eats of this bread, he will live forever (1); and the bread also which I will give for the life of the world (3) is My flesh (2)."
(1) The Son of God has the power to give Eternal Life through the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. (2) The sacrifice of the body of Jesus on the cross for the Forgiveness of sins.	

	(3) Any human being who follows the Way of Jesus and not the whole world.
56.	"He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood abides in Me, and I in him.
57.	"As the living Father sent Me, and I live because of the Father, so he who eats Me, he also will live because of Me.
	(*) Of the last 2 verses. The Holy Spirit is the "Breath of Eternal Life that flows between the Father and the Son" and which God shares with every human being saved by his {birth of the Spirit}.
60.	Therefore many of His disciples, when they heard <i>this</i> said, "This is a difficult statement; who can listen to it?"
66.	As a result of this many of His disciples withdrew and were not walking with Him anymore.
	(*) The Way of Jesus is difficult because it requires listening to the Word, giving up evil and doing good in everyday life. On the other hand, if we thought about it well, without the Existence of God, we would not exist ourselves. So why not recognize the importance of God in our lives?
67.	So Jesus said to the twelve, "You do not want to go away also, do you?"
68.	Simon Peter answered Him, "Lord, to whom shall we go? You have words of eternal life.
69.	"We have believed and have come to know that You are the Holy One of God."
	(*) Jesus is the Son of God, the expected Messiah.

[23-I] St-John 12. Jesus announces his glorification by his death

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-John, chapter 12 of the Bible (New American Standard).

23.	And Jesus answered them, saying, "The hour has come for the Son of Man to be glorified.
	(*) Glorification is the action of the Father in order to "render God" the Son. The mission of the Son was: his Incarnation on earth (Jesus); his teaching; the fulfillment of the Scriptures; the sacrifice of his death; his Resurrection; his Apparitions. After his mission accomplished, Jesus returns to the Father through Ascension. Afterwards, the Father Glorifies Jesus so that he becomes again the Son (the Word of God) that he was before. After his totally fulfilled mission, the Father fulfills the promise made to the Son, the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, and this is the narrative of the day of Pentecost.
24.	"Truly, truly, I say to you, unless a grain of wheat (1) falls (2) into the earth and dies, it remains alone; but if it dies (3), it bears much fruit (4).
	(*) This verse is very short, but very colorful. (1) The Son of God is this grain of wheat from the heavens. (2) The Son "fell" from the heavens on earth due to his Incarnation (Jesus). (3) If Jesus dies on the cross for the Forgiveness of sins. (4) Then, Jesus can give the Breath of Life to those who follow his Way.
25.	"He who loves (2) his life loses it, and he who hates (3) his life in this world (1) will keep it to life eternal.
	(1) For Jesus, our world is bad because it hates Truth and does not want to recognize his Creator. (2) For Jesus, if a person loves his life on earth, it is because he loves doing evil. Then the person will have only this earthly life and not the reward of Eternal Life. (3) For Jesus, the person who loves justice and the Truth will realize that our world rejects him. He will therefore hate his life on earth and turn to God to listen to his Word and receive the reward of Eternal Life.
26.	"If anyone serves Me, he must follow Me (1); and where I am (2), there My servant will be also; if anyone serves Me, the Father will honor him (3).
	(1) Every Christian must follow the Way of Jesus (to make his teachings). (2) Jesus is in the Kingdom of God, so his disciple will be too. (3) Then the Father will send the Holy Spirit to the disciple of Jesus to unite him with Them (Father and Son).
27.	"Now My soul has become troubled; and what shall I say, 'Father, save Me from this hour'? But for this purpose I came to this hour.
28.	"Father, glorify Your name." Then a voice came out of heaven: "I have both glorified it, and will glorify it again."

29.	So the crowd <i>of people</i> who stood by and heard it were saying that it had thundered; others were saying, "An angel has spoken to Him."
30.	Jesus answered and said, "This voice has not come for My sake, but for your sakes.
31.	"Now judgment is upon this world; now the ruler of this world (1) will be cast out.
	(1) The "Ruler of this world" is the evil that the human does and that brings him to his own end (his death in the ground). Jesus, through the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, will allow people who want it to free themselves from death.
32.	"And I, if I am lifted up from the earth (1), will draw all men (2) to Myself."
	(*) Here, Jesus makes an allusion. He is like the bronze serpent who was lifted up (1) in the desert by Moses to heal from death every (2) human being who has faith in God.
33.	But He was saying this to indicate the kind of death by which He was to die.
	(*) The crucifixion.

|23-J| St-John 14. The goodbyes

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-John, chapter 14 of the Bible (New American Standard).

8.	Philip said to Him, "Lord, show us the Father, and it is enough for us."
9.	Jesus said to him, "Have I been so long with you, and yet you have not come to know Me, Philip? He who has seen Me has seen the Father; how <i>can</i> you say, 'Show us the Father'?
10.	"Do you not believe that I am in the Father, and the Father is in Me? The words that I say to you I do not speak on My own initiative, but the Father abiding in Me does His works.
	(*) As mentioned in chapter 10 , the best explanation is: The Father is the Internal of God. He is the Will of God. The Son is the External of God. He is the Word of God. The Holy Spirit is Cohesion or Union between the Internal and the External of God. He is the Breath of God. To communicate, we know that we must always go through an external means (ear, word, etc.). (1) Then, here Philip speaks indeed to the Father (the Internal of God) through the Son (the External of God).
15.	"If you love Me, you will keep My commandments.
16.	"I (1) will ask the Father, and He will give you another (2) Helper, that He may be with you forever;
	(*) Helper (Paraclet) means Intercessor. (1) The first Helper (Paraclete) is the Son of God (Jesus). (2) The other Helper (Paraclete) is the Holy Spirit, the Eternal Breath (with you forever).
17.	<i>that</i> is the Spirit of truth (1), whom the world cannot receive, because it does not see Him or know Him, <i>but</i> you know Him because He abides (2) with you and will be in you (3).
	(1) This is another name for the Holy Spirit. (2) It is rather like the footnote of the Jerusalem Bible, 1977 Editions du Cerf: "who will be in you at the day of Pentecost." (3) It is the anointing of Christ in the chest. See article 15-G .
18.	"I will not leave you as orphans; I will come to you.
	(*) The Holy Spirit is the Unity between the Father and the Son. He also unites the people who receive him in them through the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. In this way, the Son returns by the Holy Spirit to his disciples.
19.	"After a little while the world will no longer see Me, but you <i>will</i> see Me; because I live (1), you will live also.
20.	(2) "In that day you will know that I am in My Father, and you in Me, and I in you. (3)
	(1) These are the Apparitions of the Risen Jesus. (2) This is the promise of the resurrection of his disciples. (3) This is the {gift of the Holy Spirit} at the day of Pentecost of the apostles.
21.	"He who has My commandments and keeps them is the one who loves Me; and he who loves Me will be loved by My Father, and I will love him and will disclose (1) Myself to him."

	(1) The first Manifestation of the Holy Spirit was made grandly at the day of Pentecost of the apostles. Thereafter, it is done individually by the {birth of the Spirit}.
22.	Judas (not Iscariot) said to Him, "Lord, what then has happened that You are going to disclose Yourself to us and not to the world?"
	(*) This is because, to obtain the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, one must follow the Way of Christ. What the world does not do.
23.	Jesus answered and said to him, "If anyone loves Me, he will keep My word; and My Father will love him, and We will come to him and make Our abode with him.
	(1) It is the anointing of Christ in the chest. See article 15-G .
26.	"But the Helper, the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in My name, He will teach you all things, and bring to your remembrance all that I said to you.
	(*) When a person receives the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, he has the permission of Christ to teach, for his teaching is guided by the Spirit. That is why this book.
28.	"You heard that I said to you, 'I go away, and I will come to you.' If you loved Me, you would have rejoiced because I go to the Father, for the Father is greater than I.
29.	"Now I have told you before it happens, so that when it happens, you may believe.
	(*) Jesus informs his apostles of the events to come. There will be: his crucifixion, his Resurrection, his Apparitions, his Ascension and then the day of Pentecost.
30.	"I will not speak much more with you, for the ruler (1) of the world is coming, and he has nothing in Me; (2)
	(1) This Ruler is human death.
	(2) Jesus is the Resurrection. To go further, see chapter 30 .

| 23-K | St-John 16. The coming of the Helper (Holy Spirit)

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-John, chapter 16 of the Bible (New American Standard).

1.	"These things I have spoken to you so that you may be kept from stumbling.
2.	"They will make you outcasts from the synagogue, but an hour is coming for everyone who kills you to think that he is offering service to God.
	(*) Here, there is an allusion to Saul, a Pharisee, who persecuted the early Christians. Glorious Jesus made an Apparition to Saul. Subsequently, he became a Christian under the name of St-Paul. See the book of Acts of the Apostles.
7.	"But I tell you the truth, it is to your advantage that I go away; for if I do not go away, the Helper (1) will not come to you; but if I go, I will send Him to you.
	(1) (The Helper, the Paraclete, the Spirit of Truth or the Holy Spirit) is the reward promised by the Father for the mission of the Son on earth.
8.	"And He, when He comes, will convict the world concerning sin and righteousness and judgment;
	(*) The Holy Spirit allows to discover the Truth.
9.	concerning sin, because they (1) do not believe in Me;
	(1) Many human beings do not take the Way of Jesus.
10.	and concerning righteousness, because I go to the Father and you no longer see Me;
	(*) Jesus will be Glorified by the Father for his mission and will not come back as a human being, but through the Spirit of Truth. "Spirit" being the Breath of God. "Truth" is the name that Jesus gives himself.
11.	and concerning judgment (1), because the ruler (2) of this world has been judged.
	(1) It is Jesus who holds the Last Judgment between the Living (for Heaven) and the dead (in the ground). (2) This is all the evil that humans do and condemn them to death.
12.	"I have many more things to say to you, but you cannot bear <i>them</i> now.
13.	"But when He, the Spirit of truth, comes, He will guide you into all the truth; for He will not speak on His own initiative (1), but whatever He hears (2), He will speak; and He will disclose to you what is to come.
	(1) It is not the Breath (the Holy Spirit) who is the Word but the (Son). (2) The Holy Spirit does not speak, but allows to internalize the Word of God.

14.	"He will glorify Me, for He will take of Mine (1) and will disclose <i>it</i> to you. (1) By the {birth of the Spirit}. To go further, see chapter 30 .

|23-L| St-John 17. Prayer

To read this prayer, you must know that in the New Testament, there are many meanings to the word "**world**."

- ° It can designate "all the human beings who do evil."
- ° It can designate "many people."
- ° It can also refer to the world in which we are: "on Earth."

So, you have to interpret the meaning of the verses in order to understand what it is all about...

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-John, chapter 17 of the Bible (New American Standard).

5.	"Now, Father, glorify Me together with Yourself, with the glory which I had with You before the world was. (*) Jesus will become again the (Word of God) or the (Son of God) as before being born on earth. To go further, see article 30-G .
6.	"I have manifested Your name (1) to the men whom You gave Me out (2) of the world (3); they were Yours and You gave them to Me, and they have kept Your word. (1) God. (2) It is the apostles and all the disciples who believe, listen to the Word and follow the Way of Jesus. (3) Here, it is the world (who do evil).
9.	"I ask on their behalf; I do not ask on behalf of the world (1), but of those whom You have given Me; for they are Yours; (1) Jesus does not pray or intercede for the world (who do evil).
10.	and all things that are Mine are Yours, and Yours are Mine; and I have been glorified in them. (*) God is Holy (without any evil) due to his Unity.
11.	"I am no longer in the world (1); and <i>yet</i> they themselves are in the world (2), and I come to You. Holy Father, keep them in Your name, <i>the name</i> which You have given Me, that they may be one (3) even as <i>We are</i> . (1) Jesus will soon leave the earth. He will be put to death. Later, he will Resurrect, make Apparitions and return to his Father by the Ascension. (2) The disciples will stay on earth. (3) Jesus prays to his Father that his disciples may receive the Holy Spirit who is the link of Unity with God.
12.	"While I was with them, I was keeping them in Your name which You have given Me; and I guarded them and not one of them perished but the son of perdition (1), so that the Scripture would be fulfilled. (1) It was Judas Iscariot who betrayed Jesus.
13.	"But now I come to You; and these things I speak in the world so that they may have My joy (1) made full in themselves. (1) Complete joy is felt at the {birth of the Spirit}. See article 13-D .
14.	"I have given them Your word; and the world has hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. (*) Here, it is the world (who do evil).
15.	"I do not ask You to take them out of the world (1), but to keep them from the evil <i>one</i> (2). (1) Jesus says that the apostles will remain on earth. (2) This time, Jesus specifies the meaning.
17.	"Sanctify them in the truth; Your word is truth. (*) To sanctify is the verb "to make holy." "Truth" is another name for Jesus. Jesus is Holy by the Bond of Unity to his Father. The apostles will be holy by the bond of unity to Jesus. It is for this reason that Jesus says, "You in me and me in the Father." This will be done after the Ascension of Jesus. The apostles will receive the anointing of the Spirit of Jesus at the day of Pentecost. This anointing is indicated in (1st Epistle of St-John:

	2.27). When a person receives this anointing, he receives the title of {God's child}. See articles 23-B and 15-G .
18.	"As You sent Me into the world, I also have sent them into the world. (*) Here, it will be the turn of the apostles to announce the Good News on earth. It is also for this reason that this book has been written for you.
20.	"I do not ask on behalf of these alone, but for those also who believe in Me through their word; (*) Here, every human being that will follow the Way of Christ.
21.	that they may all be one; even as You, Father, <i>are</i> in Me and I in You, that they also may be in Us, so that the world may believe that You sent Me. (*) The Holy Spirit is the Breath of Life of God that Unites all those who are saved. To go further, see chapter 30 .
22. 23.	"The glory which You have given Me I have given to them, that they may be one, just as We are one; I in them and You in Me, that they may be perfected in unity, so that the world may know (1) that You sent Me, and loved them, even as You have loved Me. (2) (1) By the {birth of the Spirit}, the person becomes a witness of the Resurrection of Jesus Christ, the Son of God. (2) During the {birth of the Spirit}, we feel the Love of God. See article 13-D .

| 23-M | St-John 20. Apparitions to the disciples

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-John, chapter 20 of the Bible (New American Standard).

19.	So when it was evening on that day, the first <i>day</i> of the week, and when the doors were shut where the disciples were, for fear of the Jews, Jesus came and stood in their midst and said to them, "Peace <i>be</i> with you."
20.	And when He had said this, He showed them both His hands and His side. The disciples then rejoiced when they saw the Lord.
21.	So Jesus said to them again, "Peace <i>be</i> with you; as the Father has sent Me, I also send you."
22.	And when He had said this, He breathed on them and said to them, "Receive the Holy Spirit. (1) (1) Many Christians wonder why Jesus gives the Holy Spirit twice. A first time in this excerpt of St-John and a second time in the narrative of the day of Pentecost (book of Acts of the Apostles). It should be known that the Gospel of St-John was completed about 40 years after the book of Acts of the Apostles. Here, the Gospel of St-John simply confirms with a very abbreviated text that the apostles actually received from Jesus the promise of the Father, the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, which is written in detail in the book of Acts of the Apostles. → The {gift of the Holy Spirit} is not given twice, but only once .

|24| The New Testament, the Gospel of St-Matthew

St-Mark wrote the first Gospel. It is the shortest of the four. St-Mark was the secretary of St-Peter.

The Gospel of St-Luke is the one with the most historical details. St-Luc was a Greek and the secretary of St-Paul. This Gospel was written for the Gentiles (they are the non-Jews of the time). The book of Acts of the Apostles and the Gospel of St-Luke formed only one document at the origin. It was separated into 2 in the New Testament.

The Gospel of St-Matthew was written for the Jews. The Jews of the time of Jesus had a rigid mentality. St-Matthew was a tax collector considered by the Jews as a man of bad life. Then the rigidity and the difficulty of conversion appear in his Gospel.

The Gospels of St-Matthew, St-Mark and St-Luke have substantially the same content. These are Gospels that focus particularly on the **conversion** of the person. On the other hand, there are also some beautiful mysteries to look at.

In this book, I chose to explain the Gospels of St-Matthew and St-John, because they are the only 2 evangelists who walked with Jesus.

A) I give you the little map of the Gospels of chapter |23|.

Jesus says in (St-John: 3,5): "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born of water and the Spirit, no one can enter the Kingdom of God."

Generally:

1) The Gospels of St-Matthew, St-Luke and St-Mark focus on the human reality of "to be born of water." The Gospel of St-Matthew is presented in this chapter |24|.

2) The Gospel of St-John focuses on the mystery of "to be born of the Spirit." It has been presented in chapter |23|.

B) Summary of the great steps of "to be born of water" and "to be born of the Spirit."

See the beginning of chapter |23|.

|24-A| Conversion, a necessary step

St-John talks little about the conversion because he was a good man. In short, St-John says that we must follow the prescriptions of Jesus (the Word). On the other hand, St-Matthew talks about the work of conversion in detail.

Personally, I have always been true in my personal life and with people. To do evil or take advantage of people never interested me. So my conversion was not very exhausting.

However, here is a list of things I found difficult:

1) Why our society easily rejects people who are: gentle, understandable, generous, always ready to help, etc. As if they were idiots or easy people to exploit. It is so hard to bear! At one time, I even thought that I would have to eliminate these "great defects of goodness" in order to succeed in society.

2) In our society, we all have quite high standards of success: a big job, a nice house, a lot of money. For many people, if we do not run towards these standards, we are stupid.

3) We are so surrounded by technology that we do not seek God. We do not need him, and we do not have the time either. We have too many beautiful and interesting things to see!

4) Our consumer society does not want to hear about God anymore: in the street, at school, at work or on television. God, it is for the enlightened! For once, I agree! Jesus calls the {God's children}, the little lights in the great darkness of our world. **Thank you Lord!**

|24-B| Pay attention to some expressions

A) The expression: "to be filled with the Holy Spirit."

We must be careful of this expression which St-Luke often writes in his Gospel and in the book of Acts of the Apostles. In reality, St-Luke uses this expression to simplify his text and to say that "the Holy Spirit is at work." This expression comes from St-Paul who uses it a lot in his Epistles.

As I explained in chapter |10|, the Holy Spirit is one of the 3 Persons of God who makes different Manifestations (Actions). When he is Present, there is always a real Manifestation and then he leaves, because he has many other people also to take care of! We must not simply see the Holy Spirit as water and the human being as an empty bottle that he fills! In reality, the Holy Spirit begins by showing his Presence as a Wind. It is his way of saying, "Hello, **I AM** here!" Subsequently, he makes a biological or physical Manifestation adapted to our human condition, to our world. It is necessary to know the details of the Manifestation to understand the Message of God.

In (St-John: 7,39) it is said that before the Ascension of Jesus, the Holy Spirit was not given on earth. Here, St-John was not lucky enough to have the basics of modern science (physics, biology, psychology, etc.) that we currently have. In reality, the Holy Spirit is a Person (an Actor) who has always existed. He passes through our world without our knowledge since the beginning of time. He is hidden, he enters and comes out of nothing, he is always there in the background. He Manifests himself or not. In reality, there is a difference between the **Actor** who is the Holy Spirit and **his Actions**. It is for this reason that in this book I give the term {gift of the Holy Spirit} as an Action of the Holy Spirit. It is the Action of giving birth to a person as a {God's child}. See also article |3-E|.

In simple:

- ° The Holy Spirit Appears;
- ° He Introduces Himself;
- ° He does one of several possible Actions;
- ° Then, he disappears.

To show that the Holy Spirit was there (on earth) even in the Old Testament

OT	Ezekiel	2,2	As He (1) spoke to me the Spirit entered me and set me on my feet; and I heard <i>Him</i> speaking (1) to me.

(1) The Word is the Son of God (Jesus).

Then, it is not the Holy Spirit (the Person), but rather a **particular Action** of the Spirit of which the apostles tell. This is the {birth of the Spirit}.

For the Eternal Life of the patriarchs and prophets of the Old Testament, see article |34-A|.

B) The expressions: "demons and unclean spirits."

At the time of Jesus, the Jews did not know the microbes and viruses that circulate everywhere. These were discovered by Louis Pasteur (1822-1895). The Jews knew that wars, deaths and rot caused serious health problems. Since they did not have modern science in order to understand, they called it all the "unclean spirits." So when a person was very sick, it was because an unclean spirit had entered the person. Unlike what people think, the Jews did not pass their hands in the water to wash them, but rather to perform a cleansing ritual to chase unclean spirits and not to absorb them through food. The diseases were not well known either. If a person had any seizure (epilepsy, hysteria, and many others) and that he was rolling on the floor lamenting, then it was definitely the "possession of a demon!"

Note:

We must be realistic, even though Jesus is the Son of God, he had to speak the same language of the people of his time otherwise no one would have understood...

C) In conclusion.

You have to know how to interpret the Scriptures so as not to take fright!

In the next articles of this chapter:

These are excerpts from the Bible (New American Standard). See article |0-H|. They come from the website: http://www.lexilogos.com/bible_multilingue.htm. The explanations I give are in parentheses () below the verses.

|24-C| St-Matthew 3. Preaching of John the Baptist/Baptism of Jesus

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 3 of the Bible (New American Standard).

1.	Now in those days John the Baptist came, preaching in the wilderness of Judea, saying,
2.	"Repent (1), for the kingdom of heaven (2) is at hand."
	(1) Making the firm decision to change one's life to do good is crucial. (2) The Kingdom comes to humans through Jesus Christ.
6.	and they were being baptized by him in the Jordan River, as they confessed their sins.
	(*) The baptism of water is to go from the bad human being to the good human being.
7.	But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees coming for baptism, he said to them, "You brood of vipers, who warned you to flee from the wrath to come?"
	(*) Before the time of Jesus, the Jews saw God as a King and a Judge with a divine anger. So they were waiting for a "messiah of anger" to remove all the injustices in Israel.
8.	"Therefore bear fruit in keeping with repentance;
	(*) It is not a matter of having a momentary desire to repent. We must put goodness into practice around us at every moment of our life. It is not a good action a week and here it goes, see you next week!
10.	"The axe is already laid at the root of the trees; therefore every tree that does not bear good fruit is cut down and thrown into the fire.
	(*) This is the announcement of the Last Judgment since the Messiah is coming soon.
11.	"As for me, I baptize you with water (1) for repentance, but He who (3) is coming after me is mightier than I, and I am not fit to remove His sandals; He will baptize you with the Holy Spirit (2) and fire (4).
	(*) A baptism is a new beginning. The person is immersed in something that purifies him. (1) Purification by water occurs through the desire and effort of the human being to convert and be good. (2) Purification by the Holy Spirit occurs by the action of God alone on the human being. (3) The Messiah, the Son of God (Jesus). He alone baptizes in the Spirit (and not religious people). (4) Fire is the symbol of the Power of God. God burns the sins of the person by the purifying fire of His Holiness. It is the sacrifice of Jesus (on the cross) that will allow this forgiveness or purification.
12.	"His winnowing fork is in His hand, and He will thoroughly clear His threshing floor (1); and He will gather His wheat (2) into the barn (3), but He will burn up the chaff (4) with unquenchable fire (5)."
	(1) It is the Last Judgment that belongs only to the Son of God alone, for he is the Word who commands this Judgment. (2) These are the {God's children} by the {birth of the Spirit}. (3) The Kingdom of God. (4) Human beings who have not had their {birth of the Spirit}. (5) They die in the ground simply without anything more. For the human being, death in the ground is part of his natural condition (he is extinguished). But in the eyes of God (the Lord), this human being is a loss forever. (*) Earth is the garden of God, see article 15-E .
13.	Then Jesus arrived from Galilee at the Jordan <i>coming</i> to John, to be baptized by him.
14.	But John tried to prevent Him, saying, "I have need to be baptized by You, and do You come to me?"
15.	But Jesus answering said to him, "Permit <i>it</i> at this time; for in this way it is fitting for us to fulfill all righteousness."

	Then he permitted Him.
	(*) The Son is the master (teacher) who demonstrates to the human being (by his example) the Way to become (son or daughter of God). See chapter 10 .
16.	After being baptized, Jesus came up immediately from the water; and behold, the heavens were opened, and he saw the Spirit of God descending as a dove <i>and</i> lighting on Him,
	(*) The word Christ means that he has received the Anointing of the Spirit of the Father . He is the Messiah . It is for this reason that Jesus of Nazareth is called Jesus Christ. See article 23-B .
17.	and behold, a voice out of the heavens said, "This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well-pleased."

|24-D| St-Matthew 4. Temptation in the desert (wilderness)/Return to Galilee

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 4 of the Bible (New American Standard).

1.	Then Jesus was led up by the Spirit (2) into the wilderness (desert) (1) to be tempted by the devil.
	(*) Here, this narrative is symbolic. Why? Because St-Matthew shows us a human exaggeration. Nobody can live in the desert for 40 days while fasting (going without food), because his kidneys would block and death would be fast. In addition, logically, the apostles could not know this story, because at that time, Jesus did not yet have a single apostle. Here the apostles affirm that Jesus, although the Son of God, is also a human being on earth, because he can be tempted like all of us. This story demonstrates the inner struggle of Jesus, his perfect resistance against the forces of Evil and his test before the beginning of his mission. (1) For the Jews, the desert is the place that represents death (snake, scorpion, excruciating heat, lack of water and food). Since death is present, so is his personification, the devil. (2) In Ezekiel, the expression "led by the Spirit" means "taken away in a Vision or in a mystical experience."
2.	And after He had fasted forty days and forty nights, He then became hungry.
	(*) This is the symbol that Jesus is perfectly resistant to temptation.
3.	And the tempter came and said to Him, "If You are the Son of God, command that these stones become bread."
	(*) This demonstrates the humility of the Son of God. He has Power, but uses them only in the Will of his Father.
4.	But He answered and said, "It is written, 'Man shall not live on bread alone (1), but on every word (2) that proceeds out of the mouth of God.' "
	(1) If he desires, the human being is not limited to a mortal life. (2) Jesus is this Word that gives Eternal Life to every human being who follows his Way.
5.	Then the devil took Him into the holy city and had Him stand on the pinnacle of the temple,
6.	and said to Him, "If You are the Son of God, throw Yourself down; for it is written, 'He will command his angels concerning you'; and 'on their hands they will bear you up, so that you will not strike your foot against a stone.' "
	(*) This refers to the sacrifice of Jesus on the cross. It is the temptation not to become "the Lamb of God" which is the Will of the Father.
7.	Jesus said to him, "On the other hand, it is written, 'You shall not put the Lord your God to the tests.' "
	(*) It is the superiority of God over all his creatures even those fallen like the devil (Lucifer).
8.	Again, the devil took Him to a very high mountain (1) and showed Him all the kingdoms of the world and their glory; (2)
	(1) In the Old Testament, God is often called the God of the mountain. (2) It is the false god of wealth and human power.
9.	and he said to Him, "All these things I will give You, if You fall down and worship me."
	(*) It is the temptation of the greed pushed to the extreme of which the devil (Lucifer) has himself succumbed.
10.	Then Jesus said to him, "Go, Satan (1)! For it is written, 'You shall worship the Lord your God, and serve Him only.' "
	(1) Satan means "the Opponent of God." Jesus said, "You cannot serve 2 masters, God and money."

16.	"The people who were sitting in darkness saw a great light (1), and those who were sitting in the land and shadow (2) of death, upon them a light dawned."
	(1) The light is Jesus in the darkness of our human lives. (2) This is the Resurrection of Jesus, his victory over the grave (the Sheol).

| 24-E | St-Matthew 5. The Beatitudes

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 5 of the Bible (New American Standard).

3.	"Blessed are the poor in spirit (1), for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. (1) It is humility.
4.	"Blessed are those who mourn, for they shall be comforted.
5.	"Blessed are the gentle, for they shall inherit the earth.
6.	"Blessed are those who hunger and thirst for righteousness, for they shall be satisfied.
7.	"Blessed are the merciful, for they shall receive mercy.
8.	"Blessed are the pure in heart, for they shall see God.
9.	"Blessed are the peacemakers, for they shall be called sons of God.
10.	"Blessed are those who have been persecuted for the sake of righteousness, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. (*) These 8 verses represent the effort of the birth of water: gentleness, righteousness, mercy, goodness of heart, artisan of peace, etc. A person who does good in our world will surely be rejected by other human beings whose purpose is the lust for objects and power. This person is rejected by humans, but welcomed by God who possesses all these qualities of goodness and which God then wants to make him, his {child}. For God, a human being only passes the test (examination) of his life if he chooses good despite injustice.
11.	"Blessed are you when <i>people</i> insult you and persecute you, and falsely say all kinds of evil against you because of Me. (*) Here, it is mainly the apostles who were martyred by the Romans.
12.	"Rejoice and be glad, for your reward in heaven is great; for in the same way they persecuted the prophets who were before you. (*) The apostles and all {God's children} are the sequel of the prophets of the Old Testament.
16.	"Let your light shine before men in such a way that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father who is in heaven. (*) Each one who follows the Way of Jesus is a light for others.
17.	"Do not think that I came to abolish the Law or the Prophets; I did not come to abolish but to fulfill. (*) Jesus fulfilled on earth the Word that He Himself inspired to the prophets in the Scriptures.
27.	"You have heard that it was said, 'You shall not commit adultery';
28.	but I say to you that everyone who looks at a woman with lust for her has already committed adultery with her in his heart. (*) The thinking of the Jews at the time was very prudish. This verse is not the temptation to think about it a bit, because in psychology we know that a person does not control the film of his thoughts. On the other hand, a person controls his actions. So, the meaning of this verse is: "to make plans and put them into action to tempt the other one in order to get what I want."
29.	"If your right eye makes you stumble, tear it out and throw it from you; for it is better for you to lose one of the parts of your body, than for your whole body to be thrown into hell.
30.	"If your right hand makes you stumble, cut it off and throw it from you; for it is better for you to lose one of the parts of your body, than for your whole body to go into hell. (*) The thinking of the Jews at the time was very rigid. In a modern way, it means: "if there is something wrong that tempts you, do not stay there , because your desire is much stronger than your human thought." In short, if you do not leave, your desire will make you succumb, it is only a matter of time.
37.	"But let your statement be, 'Yes, yes' or 'No, no'; anything beyond these is of evil. (1) This verse means: to follow the Way of Jesus, one must practice righteousness.

	(2) Have you noticed that the Messages that I have had from the Lord in chapter 13 are very short? On the other hand, they are rich in meaning.
45.	so that you may be sons of your Father who is in heaven; for He causes His sun to rise on <i>the</i> evil and <i>the</i> good, and sends rain on <i>the</i> righteous and <i>the</i> unrighteous.
	(*) God gave life to the human on earth generously and without asking anything in return. We live every day in his graces. We are all free to do good or evil, to follow the Way of Jesus or not. God does not punish anyone for his choice.
48.	"Therefore you are to be perfect, as your heavenly Father is perfect.
	(1) God is perfect because he is Holy (without any evil). (2) In the science of physics, we also see the perfection of the Creator through the constancy and precision of the laws of the universe.

| 24-F | St-Matthew 6. Make alms secretly/The true prayer/Abandon ourselves to Providence

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 6 of the Bible (New American Standard).

1.	"Beware of practicing your righteousness before men to be noticed by them (1); otherwise you have no reward (2) with your Father who is in heaven.
	(1) For God, being superficial is useless. God loves the truth and reads in the heart. (2) The reward of Eternal Life.
8.	"So do not be like them; for your Father knows what you need before you ask Him.
	(1) To make his list of material gifts in prayer to God gives nothing. What you need to ask is help on the Way of conversion to get your {birth of the Spirit}. (2) Even though the Lord knows what we need before asking, it is necessary to pray anyway to stay in touch with Him.
9.	"Pray, then, in this way: `Our Father (1) who is in heaven, Hallowed be Your name.
	(1) One must not see God as inaccessible and far away. On the contrary, he is our Creator, our Father. You can see God as a Parent and even a Mother if you want. God is not sexed like us. Jesus said that in Heaven, we will all be like angels.
10.	`Your kingdom come. Your will be done, On earth as it is in heaven.
	(*) This verse is not a prayer for God, but a message for ourselves. This is to make us understand that if people did the Will of God on earth as it is done in Heaven, evil on earth would not exist since a long time...
11.	`Give us this day our daily bread.
	(*) Without knowing it, God always gives us a help in life. Sometimes, that is really not what we want humanly. On the other hand, a time of lack of work can be taken as a time to search for God in order to obtain his {birth of the Spirit}. That is the gift I got! Another person may be sick and use this time to discover God and even to be healed by him. When we approach God, he always makes us beautiful gifts of life/Life. God loves you much more than you believe! Except that he does not allow himself to take with him (in his Kingdom) people who do not like him and who hide from him.
12.	`And forgive us our debts, as we also have forgiven our debtors.
	(*) It is to forgive others so that God forgives us.
13.	`And do not lead us into temptation, but deliver us from evil. [For Yours is the kingdom and the power and the glory forever. Amen.]'
	(1) This verse clearly indicates the belief of the Jews about the devil (the Tempter). See chapter 18 . (2) On the other hand, what is really important in this verse is that God does no evil to anyone. So if you have trouble, look for the cause elsewhere. God has laid down life on earth and it is autonomous without him. Therefore, no one is safe from accidents or illness, you have to be careful...
14.	"For if you forgive others for their transgressions, your heavenly Father will also forgive you.
15.	"But if you do not forgive others, then your Father will not forgive your transgressions.
	(*) Genuine forgiveness to all who have hurt you is necessary for your {birth of the Spirit}. To help you make this forgiveness, see article 27-F .

26.	"Look at the birds of the air, that they do not sow, nor reap nor gather into barns, and yet your heavenly Father feeds them. Are you not worth much more than they?"
28.	"And why are you worried about clothing? Observe how the lilies of the field grow; they do not toil nor do they spin,
30.	"But if God so clothes the grass of the field, which is <i>alive</i> today and tomorrow is thrown into the furnace (1), will He not much more <i>clothe</i> you? You of little faith!
31.	"Do not worry then, saying, 'What will we eat?' or 'What will we drink?' or 'What will we wear for clothing?'"
32.	"For the Gentiles (2) eagerly seek all these things; for your heavenly Father knows that you need all these things.
33.	"But seek first His kingdom and His righteousness (3), and all these things will be added to you.
(*) Even though these verses are simple, Jesus gives us a great lesson in life. Whether from the time of Jesus or our time (today), we live on farming. So we have to work to get our food. The speech of Jesus then seems to us the opposite of common sense. We know that humans began farming about 10,000 years ago. Before, the human was a hunter-gatherer. The human did not have a job. The human took directly into nature what he needed. That is what Native Americans did, only 400 years ago! Did you know that the first form of pollution really did not appear in the 1800s or even 1900s? No, the first form of pollution began when humans began farming 10,000 years ago. You will tell me, how? In biology, we know that nature is made to produce on its own. Whenever humans intervene in nature to produce more, nature becomes unbalanced. Since the 2000s, we have noticed that pollution is present. Some even said, "Can humans produce anything on earth without polluting?" Without going into solutions to curb pollution, I simply want to point to an important reality in the speech of Jesus. How does he know that the human is in a garden (the earth) that produces all alone and that we do not have to intervene to eat? I already said that Jesus was the first psychologist. But would he also be the first ecologist? Looks like Jesus has all the solutions! You have here a further proof that Jesus is the Son of God. He is the Word by which Creation has been pronounced. He knows how to live here to be in harmony. (1) Jesus says that the garden of the earth is only passing (mortal). (2) People whose earthly goods are the priority do not believe in God. (3) Jesus suggests that we rather work on our conversion of the heart in order to obtain Eternal Life.	

| 24-G | St-Matthew 7. Do not judge/Amazement of the crowd

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 7 of the Bible (New American Standard).

2.	"For in the way you judge, you will be judged; and by your standard of measure, it will be measured to you.
(*) God will judge you as you judge others. So, you have to be careful.	
6.	"Do not give what is holy to dogs, and do not throw your pearls before swine, or they will trample them under their feet, and turn and tear you to pieces.
(*) Here is a very misunderstood verse of those who announce God. In the past, many religious people have been beaten trying to convert people who did not want to know anything. The "Holy of God" is only for those who want to hear. Christians have the job of spreading the Good News only. Then you have to accept the choices of others!	
7.	"Ask, and it will be given to you; seek, and you will find; knock, and it will be opened to you.
8.	"For everyone who asks receives, and he who seeks finds, and to him who knocks it will be opened.
(*) Every person who seeks God will find him and he will manifest himself concretely by the Holy Spirit.	
13.	"Enter through the narrow gate; for the gate is wide and the way is broad that leads to destruction, and there are many who enter through it.
14.	"For the gate is small and the way is narrow that leads to life, and there are few who find it.
(*) Keep the Bible (Word) in your hand. As some Apparitions of the Blessed Virgin say so well: "religion is human." There is only Jesus Christ who Saves. Remember that no religious people can make an effort for you. So, stand up and seek God. I advise you to book an hour a day to your search in peace (reading, film,	

	testimony, singing, prayer, etc.). I assure you that the Kingdom of God is there really, you absolutely do not waste your time. Work sincerely and you will be rewarded!
21.	"Not everyone who says to Me, 'Lord, Lord,' (1) will enter the kingdom of heaven, but he who does the will of My Father (2) who is in heaven <i>will enter</i> ."
	(1) The Lord wants sincerity and not rituals. (2) The Father's Will is for the person to make his conversion of the heart.
28.	When Jesus had finished these words, the crowds were amazed at His teaching;
29.	for He was teaching them as <i>one</i> having authority, and not as their scribes.
	(*) Look at the Manifestations I have had in chapter 13 . Messages are always very brief.

| 24-H | St-Matthew 8. Multiple healings/The storm calmed

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 8 of the Bible (New American Standard).

2.	And a leper came to Him and bowed down before Him, and said, "Lord, if You are willing, You can make me clean."
3.	Jesus stretched out His hand and touched him, saying, "I am willing; be cleansed." And immediately his leprosy was cleansed.
	(*) We see that for the Jews there was a close link between sin and sickness. It was the accumulation of sins that made one sick. Jesus has the power to cleanse the person of his sins so the disease disappears.
13.	And Jesus said to the centurion, "Go; it shall be done for you as you have believed." And the servant was healed that <i>very</i> moment.
	(*) To get a miracle, you have to trust God.
21.	Another of the disciples said to Him, "Lord, permit me first to go and bury my father (1)."
22.	But Jesus said to him, "Follow Me, and allow the dead to bury their own dead (2)."
	(1) We see here that the words used by Jesus are too hard. So, you have to be careful and understand the mentality of the time. For the Jewish tradition, religion is a clan (family). If a person wants to follow another religion (here Jesus') and not that of his family, he could be excluded. So Jesus tells the person that he has to choose between him and his family. In our time, this kind of situation is very rare. For readers that have this kind of problem, I invite you to read article 7-A . (2) Jesus says that if the person does not follow his Way, he will not have Eternal Life. Jesus being the Son of the Eternal (Yahweh), he already sees these people as dead without him. Do you have any idea how I know this detail? It is simple, for a period of about six weeks after my {birth of the Spirit}, when I looked at people who did not have it, that is the feeling I had. They were dead (spiritually), but they did not know it! After, I tidied up this feeling in my head and it disappeared. They have the right to follow the Way of Christ or not, and I have the right not to be unhappy about it. See article 13-F .
24.	And behold, there arose a great storm on the sea, so that the boat was being covered with the waves; but Jesus Himself was asleep.
	(*) Jesus trusts, eyes closed, in God the Father. He invites us to do the same.
25.	And they came to <i>Him</i> and woke Him, saying, "Save <i>us</i> , Lord; we are perishing!"
	(*) Jesus is the expected Savior (the Messiah).
26.	He said to them, "Why are you afraid, you men of little faith?" Then He got up and rebuked the winds and the sea, and it became perfectly calm.
	(*) Even in difficulties, you have to trust God. In the eyes of God, everything on earth has its usefulness. Here, Jesus wanted to see the faith of his apostles.

| 24-I | St-Matthew 9. Healing of a paralytic/Meals with sinners

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 9 of the Bible (New American Standard).

5.	"Which is easier, to say, 'Your sins are forgiven,' or to say, 'Get up, and walk'?"
6.	"But so that you may know that the Son of Man has authority on earth to forgive sins"--then He said to the paralytic, "Get up, pick up your bed and go home."
(*) We see that for the Jews there was a close link between sin and illness. It is the accumulation of sins that makes one sick. Jesus has the power to forgive sins since the disease disappears.	
13.	"But go and learn what this means: 'I desire compassion, and not sacrifice,' for I did not come to call the righteous, but sinners."
(*) Jesus says that what is important is the sincerity of the heart and not the sacrifice or the rituals.	

| 24-J | St-Matthew 10. Mission of the Twelve

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 10 of the Bible (New American Standard).

14.	"Whoever does not receive you, nor heed your words, as you go out of that house or that city, shake the dust off your feet."
(*) Even now, if a person does not want to hear about God, you have to leave him there.	
15.	"Truly I say to you, it will be more tolerable for <i>the</i> land of Sodom and Gomorrah in the day of judgment than for that city."
(*) The Last Judgment will be addressed in chapter 29 .	
16.	"Behold, I send you out as sheep in the midst of wolves; so be shrewd as serpents and innocent as doves."
(*) When we talk about God, we must do it intelligently.	
17.	"But beware of men, for they will hand you over to <i>the</i> courts and scourge you in their synagogues;"
(*) Here, not all human beings, but those who are bad.	
20.	"For it is not you who speak, but <i>it is</i> the Spirit of your Father who speaks in you."
(*) Jesus says that the apostles will be helped by the {gift of the Holy Spirit} at the day of Pentecost.	
23.	"But whenever they persecute you in one city, flee (1) to the next; for truly I say to you, you will not finish <i>going through</i> the cities of Israel until the Son of Man comes."
24.	"A disciple is not above his teacher (2), nor a slave above his master."
(1) During Christian history, how many religious people did not understand these verses and were beaten or even killed needlessly for their faith rather than running away? Nobody can work for God if he is dead! (2) Jesus is the Master and no Christian is above. For the crucifixion of Jesus, God did not intervene. On the other hand, some religious people falsely believed that God would intervene for them against their tormentors. Many Christians have even lost faith by believing that if God did not intervene, it was because he did not exist. It must be understood that the earth is an autonomous world given by God. To give is not to resume. The human is free to do good or evil. The human freedom to do evil of one person can obviously hurt another person. It is for this reason that God gives the Reward of Eternal Life to those who follow him. On earth justice does not exist, because the human does not want to listen to what God asks, to do only good. So the human only has to blame himself for his misfortune...	
28.	"Do not fear those who kill the body but are unable to kill the soul (2); but rather fear Him who is able to destroy both soul and body in (1) hell."
(*) Pay attention to this verse because it has a connection with the Revelation (Apocalypse). For the Last Judgment, see chapter 29 . In short, for Jesus, life on earth is worthless compared to Eternal Life. So, do not miss it... (1) In the Jerusalem Bible, the word indicated is: " Gehenna ." See the explanations I gave for this word in chapter 18 . (2) See the explanations I gave for the word "soul" in article 3-D .	
30.	"But the very hairs of your head are all numbered."

	(*) In the past, many people have misunderstood this verse. They thought that after their Christian baptism, misfortune was over for them on earth. Yet Jesus had just said that they would be martyred for their faith like himself. Here, Jesus simply says that if a person follows his Way, he will not get lost because it leads to Eternal Life.
33.	"But whoever denies Me before men, I will also deny him before My Father who is in heaven.
	(*) A person who does not believe in God cannot go to the Kingdom of God.
34.	"Do not think that I came to bring peace on the earth; I did not come to bring peace, but a sword.
35.	"For I came to set a man against his father, and a daughter against her mother, and daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law;
36.	And a man's enemies will be the members of his household.
37.	"He who loves father or mother more than Me is not worthy of Me; and he who loves son or daughter more than Me is not worthy of Me.
	(1) We see here that the words used by Jesus are too hard. So, you have to be careful and understand the mentality of the time. For the Jewish tradition, religion is a clan (family). If a person wants to follow another religion (here Jesus') and not that of his family, he could be excluded. So Jesus tells the person that he has to choose between him and his family. In our time, this kind of situation is very rare. For readers that have this kind of problem, I invite you to read article 7-A . (2) For Jesus, if a person wants to have Eternal Life, this goal must be first in his life, before material goods and even want to please his family. Jesus calls the person from his condition of "man's child" to become a {God's child}. It is a new Family! It is for this reason that Jesus said, "Who are my brothers, my sisters and my mother?" In reality, it is those who will be united to him for the Kingdom of God.
38.	"And he who does not take his cross and follow after Me is not worthy of Me.
	(*) It is true that seeking the truth and doing good on earth are not easy. Obviously, this is not the way to make the most money!
39.	"He who has found his life will lose it (1), and he who has lost his life for My sake will find it (2).
	(1) The person who follows his own human way of lust (power, money, possessions) will succeed his life on earth, but will have no more than that. (2) The person who follows the Way of conversion of the heart of Jesus will have Life.

|24-K| St-Matthew 11. Question about John the Baptist/Jesus master debonair

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 11 of the Bible (New American Standard).

7.	As these men were going <i>away</i> , Jesus began to speak to the crowds about John, "What did you go out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken by the wind?
	(*) The prophets are not entertainments. Their messages are important.
12.	"From the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven suffers violence, and violent men take it by force.
	(*) It is the violence of the chief priests who had the prophets sent by God executed (killed), while these prophets announced the coming of the Messiah (Jesus).
20.	Then He began to denounce the cities in which most of His miracles were done, because they did not repent.
21.	"Woe to you, Chorazin! Woe to you, Bethsaida! For if the miracles had occurred in Tyre and Sidon which occurred in you, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes.
	(*) The primary purpose of God's miracles is to shake the human. This facilitates repentance and increases one's faith.
25.	At that time Jesus said, "I praise You, Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that You have hidden these things from <i>the</i> wise and intelligent and have revealed them to infants.
	(*) We must be humble to welcome the Word of God.
29.	"Take My yoke upon you and learn from Me, for I am gentle and humble in heart, and you will find rest for your souls.
	(*) Here, the word "soul" means the interior of the human being, it is to feel at peace.

| 24-L | St-Matthew 12. Jesus and Beelzebub/The sign of Jonah

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 12 of the Bible (New American Standard).

25.	And knowing their thoughts Jesus said to them, "Any kingdom divided against itself is laid waste; and any city or house divided against itself will not stand.
26.	"If Satan casts out Satan, he is divided against himself; how then will his kingdom stand?
(*) It is easy to understand that God (only Eternal) does not maintain the life of the devil. See chapter 18 .	
31.	"Therefore I say to you, any sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven people, but blasphemy against the Spirit shall not be forgiven.
32.	"Whoever speaks a word against the Son of Man, it shall be forgiven him; but whoever speaks against the Holy Spirit, it shall not be forgiven him, either in this age or in the <i>age</i> to come.
(*) The sin against the Spirit is simply not to want, or not to work to receive his {birth of the Spirit}. This sin is fatal because the person cannot enter the Kingdom. The Holy Spirit being the Breath of Eternal Life of the Father.	
40.	or just as Jonah was three days and three nights in the belly of the sea monster (1), so will the Son of Man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth (2).
(1) A whale. (2) The Resurrection of Christ in 3 days.	

| 24-M | St-Matthew 13. Why Jesus speaks in parables

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 13 of the Bible (New American Standard).

11.	Jesus answered them, "To you it has been granted to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it has not been granted.
12.	"For whoever has, to him <i>more</i> shall be given, and he will have an abundance; but whoever does not have, even what he has shall be taken away from him.
(*) When someone speaks in parables, those who want to understand ask additional questions and those who do not want to understand go away on their own.	
15.	For the heart of this people (1) has become dull, with their ears they scarcely hear, and they have close their eyes, otherwise they would see with their eyes, hear with their ears, and understand with their heart and return, and I would heal them (2).
(1) People do not want to change their lives. They do not want to convert. (2) Jesus cannot heal them from their mortal condition to give them Eternal Life.	

| 24-N | St-Matthew 15. Discussion on traditions/Healing of a Canaanite

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 15 of the Bible (New American Standard).

8.	This people honors me with their lips, but their hearts is far away from me.
9.	But in vain do they worship me, teaching as doctrines the precepts of men."
(*) How many Christians participate in the mass this way! Jesus asks for the sincerity of the heart and not rituals.	
10.	After Jesus called the crowd to Him, He said to them, "Hear and understand.
11.	" <i>It</i> is not what enters into the mouth <i>that</i> defiles the man, but what proceeds out of the mouth, this defiles the man."
(*) The Jews believed that the human could only be good (because created by God). By their rituals, they made a barrier against unclean spirits and demons. Then, they remained pure and they had no conversion to do. Jesus says that due to the freedom of the human, what defiles the human is his own actions that come out of his own inner self.	
14.	"Let them alone; they are blind guides of the blind. And if a blind man guides a blind man, both will fall into a pit."

	(*) According to Christ, it is not permitted to guide followers when we have not received concretely the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. This explains the dispersion of Christianity, see article 2-B .
25.	But she came and <i>began</i> to bow down before Him, saying, "Lord, help me!"
26.	And He answered and said, "It is not good to take the (1) children's bread and throw it to the dogs (2)."
27.	But she said, "Yes, Lord; but even the dogs feed on the crumbs which fall from their masters' table."
28.	Then Jesus said to her, "O woman, your faith is great; it shall be done for you as you wish." And her daughter was healed at once (3).
	(1) The Jews.
	(2) The non-Jews, therefore the Gentiles.
	(3) In reality, Jesus came to earth to heal from death anyone who follows his Way and not only for the Jews.

|24-O| St-Matthew 16. Profession of faith/Condition to follow Jesus

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 16 of the Bible (New American Standard).

15.	He said to them, "But who do you say that I am?"
16.	Simon Peter answered, "You are the Christ, the Son of the living God."
	(*) Peter is the first to recognize Jesus as the Son of God.
17.	And Jesus said to him, "Blessed are you, Simon Barjona, because flesh and blood did not reveal <i>this</i> to you, but My Father who is in heaven.
	(*) To truly believe in (God and his Word) is a gift that God makes to a person for his efforts. This is not human.
18.	"I also say to you that you are Peter, and upon this rock I will build My church (1); and the gates of Hades (2) will not overpower it.
	(1) In the note at the bottom of the Jerusalem Bible: the word "church" is defined as "the assembly of the chosen people." They are those who are marked by the {anointing} or the {seal of Jesus} given by the Holy Spirit.
	(2) Hades is the place where the human body rests after death, yes under the ground. A person who has his {birth of the Spirit} is not subject to death since he has received the Breath of Eternal Life in him.
19.	"I will give you the keys of the kingdom of heaven; and whatever you bind (1) on earth shall have been bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth shall have been loosed (2) in heaven."
	(*) This text is a symbol. The Kingdom is not that of men, but that of God. By these last 3 verses, some Christian movements even imagined that they were holding the gates of the Kingdom of God in their hands. The lack of humility is blatant here.
	(1) We know that when the first person enters a house, he must have the key to the door. By comparison, St-Peter is the symbol of this first person of the 2nd Covenant.
	(2) Since it takes a Gospel (the Word) to believe and follow the Way of Christ in order to go to the Kingdom, then St-Peter will have the power to transmit this Gospel to a person able to receive it or not. That is where the verbs (to bind or loose) come from. The first written Gospel is that of St-Mark at the request of St-Peter.
22.	Peter took Him aside and began to rebuke Him, saying, "God forbid <i>it</i> , Lord! This shall never happen to You."
23.	But He turned and said to Peter, "Get behind Me, Satan! You are a stumbling block to Me; for you are not setting your mind on God's interests, but man's."
	(*) St-Peter being the one who holds the "famous symbolic key of the Kingdom" has just been put back in its place! He is only a human being and it is the Father, the Will.
24.	Then Jesus said to His disciples, "If anyone wishes to come after Me, he must deny himself, and take up his cross and follow Me.
	(*) In our life, the Way of Jesus must be the priority. Power, money and possessions, though very useful, must be secondary. It does not mean having nothing as some religious people have imagined. It means that God comes first. Without knowing it, all that is on earth belongs to our Creator (God) who shared it with us. So, if a person around us is in need, we help him...

27.	"For the Son of Man is going to come in the glory (1) of His Father with His angels, and will then repay every man according to his deeds (2).
28.	"Truly I say to you, there are some of those who are standing here who will not taste death until they see the Son of Man coming in His kingdom (3)."
(1) It is the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. (2) It is the Last Judgment. To go further, see chapter 29 . (3) It is the day of Pentecost of the apostles. This event will be grand in order to inaugurate the 2nd Covenant of God. By this event, about 3,000 Jews will receive the initiation of baptism of water in the name of Jesus and begin their conversion.	

| 24-P | St-Matthew 17. Transfiguration/the lunatic

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 17 of the Bible (New American Standard).

1.	Six days later Jesus took with Him Peter and James and John his brother, and led them up on a high mountain by themselves.
2.	And He was transfigured before them; and His face shone like the sun, and His garments became as white as light.
3.	And behold, Moses and Elijah appeared to them, talking with Him.
(*) Jesus prepares his apostles for a very difficult event of faith, his death on the cross. Here, Jesus shows 3 apostles his true divine nature. In several Bible narratives, it is stated that at the Apparition of an Angel, he looks like a human with a bright white garment. In the book of Exodus, it is written that when Moses spoke with Yahweh in the tent of meeting, Moses came out with a luminous face and then covered his face.	
5.	While he was still speaking, a bright cloud overshadowed them, and behold, a voice out of the cloud said, "This is My beloved Son, with whom I am well-pleased; listen to Him!"
(*) In the Old Testament, the Presence of God was made by the concrete sign of the Bright Cloud.	
16.	"I brought him to Your disciples, and they could not cure him."
17.	And Jesus answered and said, "You unbelieving and perverted generation, how long shall I be with you? How long shall I put up with you? Bring him here to Me."
(*) Jesus had given the (power to heal) to his apostles. But they were too attached to their superstitions and did not have enough faith in Jesus. For the apostles, the " <u>to truly believe</u> " will be done only after seeing the Risen Jesus.	
20.	And He said to them, "Because of the littleness of your faith; for truly I say to you, if you have faith the size of a mustard seed, you will say to this mountain, 'Move from here to there,' and it will move; and nothing will be impossible to you.
(*) Here, it is a symbol. It is to show that with God nothing is impossible. For those who would be tempted to believe that after their {birth of the Spirit}, they will be able to do wonders as they please, you are mistaken! It is the Father who is the Will and not the human. If God wants to go through you to do "wonders," you will do it . It will then be an honor that God will give you and do not expect the honors of humans, you will not have any and they will even try to destroy your works so as not to change their precious mentalities. It is necessary to know that a prodigy always passes by the Will of God and continues in your hands. You will always be the discoverer and not the one who takes the initiative. As I said before, the {inspiration} of this book does not come from me. Without him, I would not have done anything.	

| 24-Q | St-Matthew 18. Who is the greatest?/Parable of the ruthless debtor

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 18 of the Bible (New American Standard).

1.	At that time the disciples came to Jesus and said, "Who then is greatest in the kingdom of heaven?"
2.	And He called a child to Himself and set him before them,
3.	and said, "Truly I say to you, unless you are converted and become like children, you will not enter the kingdom of heaven.
4.	"Whoever then humbles himself as this child, he is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven.
(*) Here, Jesus talks about humility as a child before his parent. God calls us to be {God's children} and not to want to crush others. For God, everyone has equal importance. This passage of Scripture is very important. This is the major cause that the {birth of the Spirit} is rare. See how a 7-year-old has a kind heart, you must try to look like him. The Kingdom of God is a place without any evil. There is only God who is without any evil. So to go to this place, it is necessary that the person already wants to make the directives of God on earth. As a child comes under the authority of his parent (to be guided). As the person must put himself under the authority of the Word of God and follow his Way to be welcomed in the Kingdom. The difficulty is that on earth we do not know what a world is without evil, so evil is inevitable. God does not ask us to be perfect, but to work for good despite the evil that surrounds us. He asks us to be little lights in the night. God knows our weaknesses, they ask us to improve and he always forgives people who are sincere.	
18.	"Truly I say to you, whatever you bind on earth shall have been bound in heaven; and whatever you loose on earth shall have been loosed in heaven.
(*) This has already been treated in (St-Matthew: 16,19). See article 24-O .	
19.	"Again I say to you, that if two of you agree on earth about anything that they may ask, it shall be done for them by My Father who is in heaven.
(1) Jesus does not address this message to us (Christians who are now reading) his Gospel. No, Jesus is addressing this message to his apostles directly because they will have a great mission to do and God will be there to support them. Remember that Jesus always sent his apostles by two. (2) For the subject of prayer, see chapter 26 .	
35.	"My heavenly Father will also do the same to you, if each of you does not forgive his brother from your heart."
(*) We see that we must absolutely forgive others if we want to obtain the Forgiveness of God.	

| 24-R | St-Matthew 19. Promised reward

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 19 of the Bible (New American Standard).

12.	"For there are eunuchs who were born that way from their mother's womb; and there are eunuchs who were made eunuchs by men; and there are <i>also</i> eunuchs who made themselves eunuchs for the sake of the kingdom of heaven. He who is able to accept <i>this</i> , let him accept <i>it</i> ."
(*) As a man, Jesus is not married because of his divine mission (Son of God). Reproduction is for mortals and not for the one who is the Word of the Eternal. To go further, see article 16-F .	
17.	And He said to him, "Why are you asking Me about what is good? There is <i>only</i> One who is good; but if you wish to enter into life, keep the commandments."
(*) Jesus says that only the Father is Goodness.	
21.	Jesus said to him, "If you wish to be complete (1), go <i>and</i> sell your possessions and give to <i>the</i> poor, and you will have treasure in heaven; and come, follow Me (2)."
(1) Jesus says "if you want to be complete (or perfect)," not that to follow him you must have nothing at all. (2) In fact, Jesus asks that God be a priority and that objects be secondary.	
23.	And Jesus said to His disciples, "Truly I say to you, it is hard for a rich man to enter the kingdom of heaven.

	(*) So, imagine in our North American society that lacks nothing, it will not be easy to put the objects in the second row to have the Kingdom of God!
24.	"Again I say to you, it is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle (1), than for a rich man to enter the kingdom of God."
	(1) Here, the translation is bad. At the time of Jesus, "the eye of a needle" was the name of a very narrow passage from which the camels had to bend down to cross it. This verse means that you have to be small and humble to enter the Kingdom, which the rich have difficulty doing...
27.	Then Peter said to Him, "Behold, we have left everything and followed You; what then will there be for us?"
	(*) At this time, the apostles still believed that Jesus would be a "messiah of anger" that would restore order in Israel and expel the Romans. At first, the apostles did not follow Jesus by "goodness of heart," but rather to have a place of power in the new kingdom announced by the prophets and Jesus. Why do you think there were two revolutionaries among the apostles, Simon the Zealot and Judas Iscariot? The apostles did not know that this Kingdom was in fact Eternal Life with God and not a particular place on earth. Throughout his mission, Jesus remained a little mysterious to help his apostles evolve and not lose them. There is always a difference between what we want humanly and what God knows good for us. So Jesus does not say everything and lets people find out. Why do you think that Jesus asked them, "For you, who do you believe that I am?" It was to see where they were in their ideas and their work of conversion...

| 24-S | St-Matthew 22. Parable of the feast/The resurrection of the dead

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 22 of the Bible (New American Standard).

14.	"For many are called (1), but few <i>are</i> chosen (2)."
	(1) By the initiation of Christian baptism. (2) By the {birth of the Spirit}. It only depends on your efforts.
28.	"In the resurrection, therefore, whose wife of the seven will she be? For they all had <i>married</i> her."
29.	But Jesus answered and said to them, "You are mistaken, not understanding the Scriptures nor the power of God.
30.	"For in the resurrection they neither marry nor are given in marriage, but are like angels in heaven.
	(*) On earth, we are in an autonomous world (mortal) because we have a free choice to make. Here, sexuality is necessary to propagate life like a flame that spreads in the grass of a field. The Kingdom is a World bound to the Eternal Source, God the Father. God creates life and maintains it by his Breath (the Holy Spirit). Jesus says that the Kingdom of God is a Spiritual World like the angels. Currently, in the science of physics, we know that all material is automatically temporal and deadly. In this case, the World of God is obligatorily immaterial to be timeless (eternal). Was Jesus also the first physicist on earth?
31.	"But regarding the resurrection of the dead, have you not read what was spoken to you by God:
32.	'I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob'? He is not the God of the dead but of the living."
	(*) Jesus says that God alone is the Source of all life. See article 34-A on the prophets and the patriarchs.

|24-T| St-Matthew 23. Hypocrisy and vanity of the scribes and Pharisees

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 23 of the Bible (New American Standard).

8.	"But do not be called Rabbi; for One is your Teacher (1), and you are all (2) brothers. (1) Jesus Christ. (2) All brothers and sisters by his {birth of the Spirit}.
9.	"Do not call <i>anyone</i> on earth your father; for One is your Father, He who is in heaven. (1) Again, Father by the {birth of the Spirit}.
12.	"Whoever exalts himself shall be humbled; and whoever humbles himself shall be exalted. (*) It takes humility and sincerity to go to the Kingdom of God.
13.	"But woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites, because you shut off the kingdom of heaven from people; for you do not enter in yourselves, nor do you allow those who are entering to go in. (*) Here, each Christian must stick to the Word (the Gospels).
24.	"You blind guides, who strain out a gnat (1) and swallow a camel (2)! (1) To take fright with nothing. Example: the chastity of religious people. (2) Make big mistakes without seeing it. Example: not realizing that the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is a real Manifestation and not poetry when it is indicated in several places in the Scriptures.
37.	"Jerusalem, Jerusalem, who kills the prophets and stones those who are sent to her! How often I wanted to gather your children together, the way a hen gathers her chicks under her wings, and you were unwilling. (*) God did try to educate the people of the 1st Covenant, but they did not want to.
38.	"Behold, your house is being left to you desolate! (*) After the crucifixion of Jesus, the Spirit of God will no longer live in the Temple of Jerusalem. This stone Temple was destroyed by the Romans in the year 0070. From the day of Pentecost around 0033, the Spirit of God resides in the hearts of the apostles and disciples through the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, these are his new temples of flesh and not of stones.

|24-U| St-Matthew 24. The advent of the Son of man will be manifest/Stay awake so you do not get surprised

Let's look at how the Last Judgment is seen by the apostles. The Son of man was the mysterious name that Jesus gave himself to show that he is the expected Messiah in the Old Testament.

Jesus being the Word of God, it is he who Pronounces the Last Judgment of God.

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 24 of the Bible (New American Standard).

The advent of the Son of Man will be manifest.	
26.	"So if they say to you, 'Behold, He is in the wilderness,' do not go out, <i>or</i> , 'Behold, He is in the inner rooms,' do not believe <i>them</i> . (*) The return of Jesus will not be done in a human way.
27.	"For just as the lightning comes from the east and flashes even to the west, so will the coming of the Son of Man be. (*) The return of Jesus will be mystical and without giving any warning.
28.	"Wherever the corpse is, there the vultures will gather. (*) It is a sentence to indicate that this is a decisive advent between Life and death.
Cosmic extent of this advent.	
29.	"But immediately after the tribulation of those days the sun will be darkened, and the moon will not give its light, and the stars will fall from the sky, and the powers of the heavens will be shaken.
30.	"And then the sign of the Son of Man will appear in the sky, and then all the tribes of the earth will mourn, and they will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of the sky with power and great glory.
31.	"And He will send forth His angels with a great trumpet and they will gather together His elect from the four winds, from one end of the sky to the other.

	(*) Of these last 3 verses, we could glimpse the end of the world, but that is not it. This is to indicate that the advent will be great.
	The moment of this advent.
32.	"Now learn the parable from the fig tree: when its branch has already become tender and puts forth its leaves, you know that summer is near;
33.	So, you too, when you see all these things, recognize that He is near, <i>right</i> at the door.
34.	"Truly I say to you, this generation will not pass away until all these things take place.
	(*) We see that this advent of the Son of man was done during the generation of the apostles. In reality, this advent is the day of Pentecost of the apostles. There was the Wind, the Bright Cloud and the Fire. Everything was there. On this day alone, 3,000 Jews began their conversion by the baptism of initiation in the name of Jesus. A week later, the small Christian community was already 5,000 people.
35.	"Heaven and earth will pass away, but My words will not pass away.
	(*) For these words are of God.
36.	"But of that day and hour no one knows, not even the angels of heaven, nor the Son, but the Father alone.
	(*) For God the Son is the Word, but God the Father is the Will. It is the Father who decides the best moment.
	Stay awake so you do not get surprised.
37.	"For the coming of the Son of Man (2) will be just like (3) the days of Noah (1).
	(1) It is the narrative of Noah (the Flood). See article 21-F . (2) It is the {gift of the Holy Spirit} as (at the day of Pentecost). (3) This marks the comparison between the two advents. To go further, see chapter 29 .
38.	"For as in those days before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered the ark,
39.	and they did not understand until the flood came and took them all away; so will the coming of the Son of Man be.
	(*) Here, people saw Noah making his ark. People took him for a fool and continued their little human life without worrying about anything. To go further, see chapter 29 .
40.	"Then there will be two men in the field; one will be taken and one will be left.
41.	"Two women <i>will be</i> grinding at the mill; one will be taken and one will be left.
	(*) The {birth of the Spirit} is obtained from one person, but not from the other.
42.	"Therefore be on the alert, for you do not know which day your Lord is coming.
	(*) Although baptized Catholic at 3 months and confirmed at 11, I had my {birth of the Spirit} spontaneously at 45 years old without knowing that it existed!
43.	"But be sure of this, that if the head of the house had known at what time of the night the thief was coming, he would have been on the alert and would not have allowed his house to be broken into.
44.	"For this reason you also must be ready; for the Son of Man is coming at an hour when you do not think <i>He will</i> .
	(*) The person who does not have his {birth of the Spirit} must not linger in order to work to obtain it, for no one knows when he is going to die and after that it will be too late .

Resourcing

| 25 | Celebration of the Word

The celebration of the Word (the mass) is important in order to gather the Christians and to grow their faith.

Even if you are from a "Christian movement **A**," nothing prevents you from going to the celebration of another "Christian movement **B**." All Christians celebrate the same Jesus Christ. **Even though the celebration is different, God always works the same way for everyone.** No Christian movement has power over the Holy Spirit. See article | 3-A |. Why? Our human world is in our human hands and the World of God is in the hands of God.

In reality, **the celebration of the Word** is a good way to **prepare oneself**.

Imagine for a moment:

1) If I had the {memorial of the communion with Christ} of article | 13-G | without the preparation of the Eucharistic communion at the church.

2) If I had my {birth of the Spirit} of article | 13-D | without the preparation of my catechesis telling me that I already have the {gift of the Holy Spirit} at my baptism Christian.

→ Then, I would have been totally lost, thinking that I had an illness or that I am haunted!

Personally, I was very well prepared. By cons, the thing that confused me is to realize that I had not received anything yet! I can assure you that if people really received the {gift of the Holy Spirit} at Christian baptism, the churches of Quebec would be crowded at all masses and none of them would fall into ruin...

So in this chapter, I invite you to prepare yourself...

| 25-A | Real phrases or poetry?

I give you a few phrases spoken during a Christian celebration.

- ° In your **Presence** Lord, it is true happiness;
- ° Our **Light** and our Salvation is the Lord;
- ° Let the Spirit of God **illuminate our hearts**;
- ° May the **Peace** of God be with you;
- ° May the **fire of God's love** be in your hearts;
- ° That the **Breath** of God gives us the necessary strength in our life;
- ° The Holy Spirit **who dwells in us**;
- ° God **Loves** us;
- ° God is **Holy**.

Before my {birth of the Spirit}, these phrases were for me only poetry. Afterwards, I really began to understand them because they were lived, real...

Later, I spoke about my Manifestations of the Holy Spirit with some religious people. I was sure that these Manifestations were frequent for them. They told me that it was quite rare. **I could not believe it!** What I got is far from extraordinary! **This is only the promise of the {gift of the Holy Spirit} for every disciple of Jesus!**

|25-B| Some basic knowledge of the celebration of the Word (the mass)

A) First of all.

This celebration is primarily a reminder of the Word of Jesus in the Gospels. Since St-Paul is a great founder, there are also some verses from his Epistles.

There are also the dogmas (these are secondary beliefs) of the Christian movement in particular (Catholic, Orthodox, Anglican, Protestant, and others) that may be more than 500 years old. So, the exact formula of the celebration depends on the Christian movement.

I tell you, you must study the Gospels, it is capital! They have only between 20 and 40 pages each. Afterward, you must read at least the beginning of the book of Acts of the Apostles to see and understand that the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is a **real Manifestation**. Obviously, you cannot be a Christian if you do not know the teachings of Christ...

To help you with the {inspiration} of the Holy Spirit that I have had, I give you the explanation of the mysterious verses of 2 Gospels, that of St-John and that of St-Matthew in chapters |23 and 24|. For historical explanations, see the translator's notes at the bottom of the Bible. The strength of the translator is the origin of the words used and the customs of the time. The strength of the [inspiration] of the Holy Spirit that I give you here is to understand the meaning of the Word and how to apply it now in 2017.

The Manifestations of the Holy Spirit I received in chapter |13| confirm the Gospels in 2017.

B) Here I give you the minimum of what you need to know in order to understand a celebration.

1) For the Old Testament (the first Covenant).

There is only One God.

God is the Creator. See article |21-B|.

God created the human free and innocent. See article |21-C|.

The human has perverted himself (to do evil). See articles |21-D and 21-E|.

God established the first Covenant with the Hebrew people to enlighten all nations. See Abraham in Genesis.

God has educated his people by giving him Laws. See the book of Exodus.

God says he does not want rituals, but sincerity of heart. See the texts of the prophets in chapter |22|.

2) For the New Testament (the second Covenant).

God sent His Son Jesus on earth. See the 4 Gospels.

The Father is the Will of God. The Holy Spirit is the Breath of Life of God. The Son is the Word of God.

Jesus is the Word of God made man on earth to reveal to the world, the Truth about God and his Plan of Eternal Life for every human being who follows his Way.

The human body of Jesus was made of the Will and Breath of God and not of the human will.

The angel Gabriel appeared to the Blessed Virgin Mary to know if she wanted to carry (in her womb) the Son of God (Jesus). What she accepted. The Son of God has taken our human condition to witness to the Truth of God and to proclaim the Kingdom.

Jesus, surrounded by his 12 apostles and about 70 disciples, taught a new doctrine, Christianity, a religion **of the heart** responsible for oneself.

The foundations of the doctrine are love and respect: of God, of others and of oneself.

The only One who is Perfectly Good (Holy) is God.

Evil comes from the bottom of the human. The human on earth who is deprived of the Presence of God is obviously attracted by the lust of power and material goods to the detriment of the well-being of other humans.

The human is made of flesh and blood. There is no "eternal soul" floating inside or coming out like a ghost at death.

Jesus presents himself to humans as the Word and the one who gives of his Bread of Eternal Life.

The person who puts this Word into himself and receives his Bread by the {gift of the Holy Spirit} will have Eternal Life in the Kingdom of his Father.

Eucharistic communion is the Memorial of the Sacrifice of the Body of Jesus on the Cross. Jesus gave his life for us.

The cup of wine is the Memorial of the Second Covenant established by the Sacrifice of Jesus. Jesus shed his blood for us.

C) In her Apparitions, the Blessed Virgin has said several times that we must put the Word in ourselves.

In short, here is what it consists of:

- 1) To believe in God. It is to recognize that nature on earth is the work of our Creator (God).
- 2) To believe in the Gospels. It is to recognize that Jesus is the Word of God and our Savior.
- 3) To convert oneself. It is to recognize that Jesus is the only Way to the only Truth towards the only Life. It is to reject evil of which the human is the sole author and to apply the teachings of Christ every day in our life.
- 4) To belong to God. It is putting our life in the hand of God so that he helps us to lead it. He alone holds the Absolute Knowledge in order to always make the right choice of action.
- 5) To receive the Bread of Life in oneself. This is done by the Action of God only during the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. Afterwards, the person is born to a new life that begins on earth and continues in the Kingdom of God after his pilgrimage on earth.

| 25-C | If I were a pastor and had only one homily to tell you

Here is...

Ask yourself these questions. Who does my life belong to? You will tell me, "To yourself." Who leads my life? Of course, you will tell me again, "Yourself!"

Surely you all want to go to the Kingdom of God. So since you drive your life yourself, do you know the road to go there? You are mortal, so if you drive your life alone, you will die. But God is Eternal, so if you let yourself be led by him, he will bring you to Eternal Life...

You say to yourself, God is so Good, he will take me to his Home anyway! It is unfortunately impossible...

You have all been baptized Christians. Why were you baptized? Surely because you believe in God. But by what telltale signs do we know that we believe in him?

You must look at nature with admiration and recognize the work of God everywhere. For parents and grandparents, you have to look at your children and grandchildren as gifts that God has entrusted to you. Nature on earth is the "garden" that God has given to all of us whether we are strong or weak. Since God is the origin of life on earth, we all live in his graces every day. Moreover, each of us would not exist without him, for he alone is Alive. Not wanting to have God in his life is as foolish as being on a lake and making holes in the hull of his boat, saying, "I am well paid to do it so I continue." The greatest proof that God exists is that our universe appeared from nothingness in a fireball

(the Big Bang) that sterilized everything. The fundamental law of Pasteur's biology says that life cannot come from what has been sterilized. So since we are all alive, the Living God really exists too.

Now, what are our baptismal promises?

- ° To reject evil;
- ° To follow the teaching of Christ;
- ° To belong to Christ or God.

And what are the promises of God in return?

- ° The Manifestation of the {gift of the Holy Spirit} or the {birth of the Spirit};
- ° The Eternal Life in the Kingdom of God at the end of our days on earth.

For God to fulfill His Promise, we must first fulfill our promise.

1) What is: to reject evil?

I give you some examples. It is wanting to live in harmony with others. It is practicing justice. It is not to take advantage of others to accumulate objects or power. It is to be honest and straight.

2) What is: to follow the teaching of Christ?

It is to study the Gospels (the Word). It is to conform and to act daily with his prescriptions. Do you know what the word "faith" means? It means "to commit to the Way of Jesus" and not "I think."

3) What is: to belong to Christ or God?

I ask you: what is the basis of life? Yes, freedom. Why do you believe that God is so absent on earth? Why do not we see him on every street corner? It is because he lets us do what we want with the life he gave us. Then by what right can he bring us into his kingdom if we do not belong to him? Is he a thief of life? Understand that no one can go to his Kingdom if he does not give him his life. Respect for his own law prevents him from doing so. God cannot unite His Life (the Holy Spirit) to our life if we do not sincerely desire it. A bond of belonging between himself and us must exist. God must become our Father and we must truly become his {children}.

Concretely, we passed our Christian examination when our promise of baptism is fulfilled in our heart! Words from the lips have no value for God. Now, to pass our Christian examination, we must ask God for help, we must know how to pray. See chapter | 26 |.

In prayer, you must be humble and sincere.

1) You must pray to God to give you the ability to pray to him in his own way.

2) You must ask him to increase your ability to believe in him.

3) You must ask God for the necessary strength to sincerely forgive all those who have hurt you. Of course, you do not have to stand next to them to get them to do it again.

4) You must ask for peace in your mind.

5) God alone is Perfect. He always knows what to do. Obviously, if we were really able to run our lives alone, then we would have a nice, clean planet! But it is the opposite, earth is so polluted that ecologists do not know what to say! We succeed in building gigantic cities and ascending to the Moon, but we fail what is most precious, life, since we destroy it. Will God take with him into his Kingdom of Life the destroyers? You must then ask God to guide your life. You must sincerely deposit your life in his hand.

6) Ask him the ability to love him, because no one knows how to love like him.

7) Humanly, God calls us to heal from death, because we can do evil here. So in all humility, tell him that you are mad and that he comes to heal you of your human folly. Tell him you are lost without him. Tell him that you do not want to live without him by your side. Tell him that you need him, that you are weak and stupid. In reality, in front of Him, we are all like that...

8) During our journey on earth, we all go through deserts where life and death confront one another. Whether it is a lack of work, all forms of addiction, illness, our departure sooner or later from earth. Without realizing it, God always accompanies us whether in our successes or in our failures. But what exactly are our human failures? Without knowing it, they are Salutory. In reality, all the failures of our life are a "stepladder" to reach the hand of God. Our desperation here on earth added to our hope in him is the cry of the heart necessary for him to come and save us! When we have tried everything and we are unable to continue, let us shout to him and he will come to give us hope and his Breath of Life.

God loves us so much, you cannot imagine it!

|25-D| I give you the great points of the recipe to get your {birth of the Spirit}

See also chapter |12|.

- 1) You must practice what Jesus asks of you every day to the point of noticing that people reject you because you are good and honest, and it is not in this way that people get rich.
- 2) You strive, but you cannot join what Jesus asks with the criteria of success of our society.
- 3) You forgive everyone and make the choice to continue to be good and honest, even though it seems to you that you do not succeed much in the eyes of our society.
- 4) Afterward you seek God truly, that he may come to help you.
- 5) After your search, you are 100% convinced that he exists.
- 6) Finally, you give him your life to guide it, because you do not know what to do with it anyway. **See the note below.**

That is it, you have succeeded what your Creator asked you to do.

7) Then, without knowing it, the Lord will take you into his charge to finalize your conversion and give you his Gift of Life. You will be reborn to a new life as a {God's child} on earth.

Note from the step 6):

You can see earth as a tree and every human being as a bud. The bud develops and can become a fruit. God picks up the fruit only when it is ready to fall from the tree by itself. God does not tear you from the tree, you quietly detach yourself from it. You are then ripe for the Kingdom of God, hence the {birth of the Spirit} already on earth. **God gives you a second Life on earth that is much more interesting!** Success in society becomes secondary because the Lord accompanies you.

|26| Prayer

Prayer is very important. For those who are not comfortable with prayer, know that: reading passages from the Bible; talking about God to the people around us; humming songs of God are also prayer for him. Why? God is always beside us now without us seeing him. We could say that God is the Supreme Consciousness. You can talk to one of your relatives and say that you would like God help you (this without the slightest inner prayer) and you will notice 2 weeks later that you have received what you needed! Why? This is because God gives us little signs sometimes and it is up to us to recognize them, because he lets us be free to find him or not.

|26-A| I give you a piece of advice for prayer

I have noticed that my prayers are (more answered) when I speak in a low voice. As if God is not really going to hear our mental babbling in our head. God being our Creator, he knows that we do not have complete control over this babbling. On the other hand, we control our actions like the words that come out of our mouth. So, he is listening to us. That is the explanation I found, so I give it to you...

|26-B| Who should we pray and how should we do it?

To answer these questions, let us look at what the Gospels write:

NT	St-Matthew	6,5-15	"When you pray, you are not to be like the hypocrites; for they love to stand and pray in the synagogues and on the street corners so that they may be seen by men. Truly I say to you, they have their reward in full. "But you, when you pray, go into your inner room, close your door and pray to your Father (1) who is in secret, and your Father who sees <i>what is done</i> in secret will reward you. "And when you are praying, do not use meaningless repetition as the Gentiles do, for they suppose that they will be heard for their many words. "So do not be like them; for your Father knows what you need before you ask Him (2) . "Pray, then, in this way: 'Our Father (3) who is in heaven, Hallowed be Your name. `Your kingdom come. Your will be done, On earth as it is in heaven. `Give us this day our daily bread. `And forgive us our debts, as we also have forgiven our debtors. `And do not lead us into temptation, but deliver us from evil. [For Yours is the kingdom and the power and the glory forever. Amen] ` " <u>For if you forgive others for their transgressions, your heavenly Father will also forgive you. "But if you do not forgive others, then your Father will not forgive your transgressions.</u>
NT	St-John	4,21-24	Jesus said to her, "Woman, believe Me, an hour is coming when neither in this mountain nor in Jerusalem will you worship the Father. "You worship what you do not know; we worship what we know, for salvation is from the Jews. "But an hour is coming, and now is, when the true worshipers will worship the Father (4) in spirit and truth (5) ; for such people the Father seeks to be His worshipers. "God is spirit, and those who worship Him must worship in spirit and truth."
		16,23-27	"In that day you will not question Me about anything. Truly, truly, I say to you, if you ask the Father for anything in My name, He will give it to you. "Until now you have asked for nothing in My name; ask and you will receive, so that your joy may be made full. "These things I have spoken to you in figurative language; an hour is coming when I will no longer speak to you in figurative language, but will tell you plainly of the Father. "In that day you will ask in My name (6), and I do not say to you that I will request (7) of the Father on your behalf; for the Father Himself loves you (8) , because you have loved Me and have believed that I came forth from the Father.
NT	St-Luke	18,18-19	A ruler questioned Him, saying, "Good Teacher, what shall I do to inherit eternal life?"

			And Jesus said to him, "Why do you call Me good? No one is good except God alone (9).
NT	Acts of the Apostles	10,25-26	When Peter entered, Cornelius met him, and fell at his feet and worshiped <i>him</i> . But Peter raised him up, saying, "Stand up; I too am <i>just</i> a man (10)."

Here are the main ideas extracted:

- (1) Pray to your Father.
- (2) For your Father knows what you need before you ask Him.
- (3) Our Father who is in heaven, Hallowed be Your name.
- (4) The true worshipers will worship the Father.
- (5) In spirit and truth. (This is the Holy Spirit).
- (6) You will ask in My name. (This is Jesus).
- (7) I (Jesus) do not say to you that I will request of the Father on your behalf.
- (8) For the Father Himself loves you.
- (9) No one is good except God alone.
- (10) But Peter raised him up, saying, "Stand up; I too am *just* a man."

Now, let's answer our questions:

A) Whom should we pray?

- (1) Pray to your Father.
- (2) For your Father knows what you need before you ask Him.
- (3) Our Father who is in heaven, Hallowed be Your name.
- (4) The true worshipers will worship the Father.
- (8) For the Father Himself loves you.
- (10) But Peter raised him up, saying, "Stand up; I too am *just* a man."

Only God.

B) Do we need the intercession of another person?

- (2) For your Father knows what you need before you ask Him.
- (7) I (Jesus) do not say to you that I will request of the Father on your behalf.
- (8) For the Father Himself loves you.
- (9) No one is good except God alone.
- (10) But Peter raised him up, saying, "Stand up; I too am *just* a man."

No.

C) How should we pray?

- (2) For your Father knows what you need before you ask Him.
- (3) Our Father who is in heaven, Hallowed be Your name.
- (5) In spirit and truth. (This is the Holy Spirit).
- (6) You will ask in My name (6). (This is Jesus).

We must pray with confidence, humility and gratitude.
 We must ask the Father's help to send us the Holy Spirit to guide us in our prayer.
 When it is really important, we can make requests to the Father in the name of his Son (Jesus).

D) What should we ask and what will we receive?

(2) For your Father knows what you need before you ask Him.

God will only give us what is really good for us.

Although the Lord knows our needs, it is important to pray to him and entrust him with our requests regularly.

Why?

1) Prayer allows you to stay in touch with the Lord in order to gain moral support.

2) The Lord constantly sees the evil that the human is doing on earth. The Lord suffers enormously and it is his great capacity to love that allows him to endure all this without putting an end to our world. So, we must understand that in the eyes of the Lord, our suffering is very little compared to his own. Then we have to remind him from time to time that we are weak and that we need him. It is true that you can obtain something from the Lord without any request. But in general, we know that a child who often asks his or her parent is much more likely to be answered than a child who asks for nothing...

Never deprive yourself of praying and asking...

| 26-C | A little guide, how to pray in order to get what we really need

The difficulty is that even if our request seems good to us, if in the eyes of God it is not, we will not have it. So since we are not perfect to make such a perfect request, we must know how to pray...

A) In summary:

- 1) To be sincere in your approach.
- 2) To take time to meditate (to gather one's thoughts).
- 3) To ask God for forgiveness for the evil you do without even realizing it sometimes.
- 4) To be a humble child in front of your loving parent.
- 5) To confide in God and say what is wrong with your life.
- 6) To give God the freedom to answer you or not.
- 7) To be patient and try to see what you can do for yourselves.
- 8) To understand that only God knows what is good for you.
- 9) To understand that only God knows what to do.
- 10) To understand that only God knows when to act, so you have to be patient...
- 11) It is important to remember to ask for "gifts" such as patience, peace, the ability to love, etc.
- 12) Thank God for everything he gives you even if you do not understand at the time.

You will be surprised what you will get!

B) I give you an example of kindness and patience.

In the Old Testament, God promised a son (Isaac) to Abraham and Sarah (his wife) because she was sterile. Do you know when the promise of God came true? 12 years later. Why? The Lord wanted to experience the faith of Abraham because he had a great plan for him (the 1st Covenant) in order to establish his people.

| 26-D | List of songs with video editing

A good way to pray is to listen and hum songs. It is very pleasant and relaxing.

Here is a list of Internet keywords (Google and YouTube)	
I will lift my eyes (with lyrics)	Find in my life your Presence
Lamb of God	You are the song I sing
You raise me up (with lyrics)	In your hands
This is the air I breathe (with lyrics)	Gethsemane song
The chaplet of divine mercy in song	Talk to me - Love Jesus
Almighty God	Father, I love you
Give me courage, Lord	Gethsemane
Adonai	Open my eyes Lord
Light of the world	Look at the star
Humble heart's cry (with lyrics)	Jesus Christ you are my life - Son of God
Lead me Lord	Covenant worship - How great (Lyric Video)
Come Holy Spirit	I am a child of God
Lord God of Abraham	Sorry forgiving Lord
Shout to the Lord (with lyrics)	Nearer, my God, to thee
The most beautiful "Ave Maria" I've ever heard	Psalm of creation

| 26-E | List of useful prayers

Before starting this article, I will tell you about one of the biggest evils of our society. **The stress!**

It is difficult to concentrate on prayer when we are stressed out. So a little rest time is needed. Why? In psychology, we know that prolonged stress produces paralyzing hormones that block the pain in our head. Since there is only one conduit of feelings, which says "blocked suffering" also says "pleasant feelings to live blocked" at the same time. In the long run, this can lead to memory loss and depression. As the brain has become rigid, it no longer repairs itself and becomes unhappy. This being the major cause of the overconsumption of our society. It needs a lot of compensation to support its suffering...

I tell you, our brain is a wonder that needs our good care!

Now, let's go back to prayer...

Here is a list of simple sentences that show you how to pray. Use the ones that you like (only according to your level of belief) and complete with your inspiration of the moment. Do not feel obliged to go further than your sincerity. Praying is not a chore. You have to take a little time each day.

I recommend you use the word **Lord**. The Name is simple and as God is Trinitarian, it can go for all 3 as ONE God. God is neither male (Man) nor female (Woman). Jesus said there is no gender in the Kingdom of God. So when you pray, see the Lord as your Father, your Mother or your Creator, the One with whom you can tell everything.

A) Simple basic prayer sentences:

- 1) Lord, I apologize for not praying to you as often as you would like.
- 2) Lord, I am tired this evening, but tomorrow I will pray unto you, I promise!
- 3) Lord, forgive me for the evil I do.
- 4) Lord, I know I am not as good as you would like. Help me to become better.
- 5) Lord, help me to forgive others, the evil they have done to me.
- 6) Lord, give me peace in my head.
- 7) Lord, increase in me my patience.
- 8) Lord, help me to discover you.
- 9) Lord, help me to trust you.
- 10) Lord, I am scared to live, come rescue me!
- 11) Lord, I have little confidence in this human world, but I trust you!
- 12) Lord, take my suffering, I am no longer able to bear it alone!
- 13) Lord, give me the strength to help others.
- 14) Lord, thank you for all the help you give me.
- 15) Lord, forgive me for not knowing how to recognize your help in my life.
- 16) Lord, I know that Jesus said that the body is very little compared to the {gift of the Holy Spirit} that you want to do to me. I know that with you, nothing is impossible. So, I trust you. Please give me better health so that I can believe more in you.
- 17) Lord, thank you for being healthy.
- 18) Lord, I pray you for my family, so that it may be more united in your peace.
- 19) Lord, help me and my family members to believe in you.
- 20) Lord, thank you for this book that I have in my hands because it comes from you.

B) Simple intermediate prayer sentences:

- 21) Lord, allow me to see the misery around me to bring the help that I can.
- 22) Lord, I understand that this time of my sickness is a time set aside to discover you, and to finally have the grace of my {birth of the Spirit}.
- 23) Lord, I understand that this time of my lack of job is a time set aside to discover you, and to finally have the grace of my {birth of the Spirit}.
- 24) Lord, I apologize for not taking enough time for you.
- 25) Lord, I do not deserve you to take time for me.
- 26) Lord, help me to pray better to you.
- 27) Lord, I do not deserve that you love me. On the other hand, I know that, whatever my sin, you are always there for me by your Forgiveness.

- 28) Lord, I do not deserve that you be dead on the cross for me.
- 29) Lord, I am only a stupid human, I need you to guide me, because I do not know what to do.
- 30) Lord, help me to love you as you love me.
- 31) Lord, give me the strength to understand the suffering of others and to respond to it.
- 32) Lord, forgive me for making you suffer, for I often deaf to your Word (the Gospels).
- 33) Lord, I am sick physically, can you please heal me? Then, I will make of the healing that you grant me a sign of your Presence and of your Love around me.
- 34) Lord, begin by healing me of my spiritual blindness not to know you enough. Then, if you want, heal me physically. Then I will be able to testify to your Presence and your Love to the people who surround me.
- 35) Lord, heal me when you want, O Lord, in your time and not in mine. I love you so much!

C) Use a precious help, Psalms in the Bible.

Sometimes we do not know what to say to the Lord, we lack inspiration. Then the Bible is very precious.

Inside, in the Old Testament, there is a book called Psalms, which has 150 readings. The mere act of reading and internalizing them is a prayer. The Lord is Love and he asks you to open your heart to him. To do this, you need to put a little time. In these Scriptures, if you see Yahweh or Adonai, it means God or Lord.

D) Have an answer from God.

Many people say to themselves, "I pray, but God does not answer me!"

This is not entirely true...

The Gospels, the Acts of the Apostles and the Epistles are very precious tools.

These inspired texts are the Word of God. **Jesus left us his Word.** So we just have to read it to find the answers to our questions and get the necessary encouragement...

Did you notice that during my 12 Manifestations of the Spirit of chapter |13|, I always needed to use the New Testament texts to understand? Then the message is simple, everything is there! We only have to look inside it to find the answers we need...

In short, reading the texts of the Bible (Old or New Testament) is also prayer.

E) Simple sentences of advanced prayers:

Now, I give you prayers that I naturally made of myself some time before my {birth of the Spirit}. I do not give them to you to learn or recite them, but only to look at them. I give them to you to show you at what level of belief you must feel naturally before the Lord grants you your {birth of the Spirit}. We must know that we humans, we deserve nothing from God. It is God who gives us access to him. No great sacrifice is necessary! Your sincerity and openness of heart for him are sufficient.

Know that the Lord can give us real psychological help! If you do not have patience, ask him and he will give you some. If you do not know how to love, ask him and he will give you the ability. If you do not know how to pray, ask him and he will teach you how to say the most beautiful prayers of the heart. Yes, they will, of course, be madness for man, but Wisdom for God.

Let's go.

36) Lord, forgive me for the evil that I sometimes do without knowing it.

37) Lord, I apologize for making you suffer from my wickedness.

38) Lord, I need your peace in my head.

39) Lord, I need you to help me lead my life, because only you always know what to do. I do not know...

40) Lord, I am lost without you, I need you.

41) Lord, only you are perfect, come to heal me of my human folly.

42) Lord, I do not want to live without your Presence beside me.

43) Lord, help me to love you more, because only you know how to love.

44) Lord, I need to feel your Presence always in my life. Never go away from me.

45) Lord, I do not have much to tell you tonight. Just let me sleep in your arms tonight.

46) Lord, let me understand what you expect from me.

47) Lord, I would like to testify about you, but I do not have the strength to do it.

48) Lord, I do not deserve to see your face at the end of my days on earth. I deserve nothing from you.

49) Lord, my life is yours and it will always be yours.

50) Lord, I need your life in me.

F) For those who now know that the {birth of the Spirit} exists (what I did not know before).

51) Lord, make me feel your Love in me to increase my love for you.

52) Lord, my life is yours. Please give me my {birth of the Spirit} so that I may live in you and you in me.

53) Lord, I give you my life for you to give me your Life (the Holy Spirit).

54) Lord, make me your {child} so that I Live Eternally with you.

55) Lord, I belong to you forever.

F) To help you be more sincere in your prayers.

God is the Source of all life. If you exist right now, it is because he exists too. If you eat, it is because you eat what he has deposited for all of us on Earth. As I told you, Earth was totally sterile (lifeless), 4 billion years ago.

God is Love and Freedom! He does not allow himself to unite his Eternal Life (the Holy Spirit) with the little mortal life he has given you if you do not give it to him sincerely and forever. God is not a thief! I know it is hard to take, but it is the pure Truth. For those who want to go to their {birth of the Spirit}, the more sincere you are, the faster it will be.

G) Prayer during the Eucharist.

The Eucharist is the memorial of the sacrifice of Jesus on the cross. He gave his human life for us. He shares with us his Eternal Life (the Holy Spirit) that he receives from the Father.

I had 2 Manifestations of the Holy Spirit during the Eucharist, one for the communion with the Body and one for the communion with the Blood of Christ. See article |13-G|. In principle, I will not receive any other Eucharistic Manifestation for the rest of my life.

At the mass, this memorial is very important and a Christian must prepare himself. To help you, I give you the way I prepare myself and an example of prayer.

Here are:

1) I go to get the Eucharist bread, I put it in my hand then I go back to my bench without eating it. Back at my bench, I take a moment to pray to the Lord in my head.

2) An example of prayer:

Lord, I do not deserve your life. I deserve nothing from you. Forgive me for the evil I do. Lord, I am not capable of loving you the way you love me. I do not have much to offer you, I am only a little human being of nothing at all. But my life is yours and it will always be. Help me to do your commandments every day. Never separate me from your life. I do not want to live without you, because I would be lost without you. Thank you for all the graces you give me each day. Please protect my family and give it your Peace. Amen.

3) Now, I eat the Eucharist bread.

H) For those who are seriously ill.

From the bottom of your heart, ask a small extension of life to the Lord in order to reach his hand.

I will help you with an example of prayer:

Lord, my life is coming to an end and I am scared ... I often hurt, I am tired, I am sick and I really need you! I still have not received your Life, the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, because I am not yet ready to receive it. I do not want to be deprived of your Face. I need hope and you are my God. Lord, would you give me the grace to obtain a little extension of life so that I may prepare myself sincerely? Lord, help me to truly believe in you so that I may end my conversion from the heart and offer you my life so that you may unite it to your Life. Thank you for granting me this favor by the love of your Son Jesus. I defer to you and put all my hope in your hand.

Repeat this prayer every evening and add your inspiration of the moment.

Now, do not waste any time and work hard on the conversion Way of Jesus.

The Lord will give you your chance, for sure, **but do not play with him**, he knows your heart more than yourself!

This prayer is not to heal your body and return to amuse you with the distractions of our world! No, this prayer is to obtain a small extension of life in order to heal from death and obtain Eternal Life. Life on earth is only a passage, do not forget it...

Trust him and you will be rewarded, be assured!

If you do not get anything, it is because you do not believe enough in God or do not work hard enough on the Way of conversion of Jesus. Chapters |5 and 6| can help you.

| 26-F | What can I ask God?

A) First.

We must ask for psychological help to support us in our Way of conversion. You have to ask him the ability: to forgive; to be good; to have peace in oneself; to know better to pray; to be more patient; the ability to love better; to be more charitable; to be more humble.

B) Second.

We can ask for physical healings or small miracles. But that is not part of the 2nd Covenant, so you have to be patient and confident. These healings and miracles are mainly to help us really believe in him. The step of (to truly believe in God) will be necessary to finalize your Way of conversion in order to obtain your {birth of the Spirit}. For God, reaching your {birth of the Spirit} is important because he is the Life. He would like to share his Life with you forever. For him, a physical healing does not have much value comparatively with the Eternal Life. On the other hand, if you need a little help to advance in your faith, **he will give it to you**. Also, it is possible that what you receive will not be exactly what you requested. Why? It is because God only does perfect things! Your requests may seem perfect for you and not be perfect for him! Then, he will give you the gift you really need and not necessarily the one you have imagined! Be humble enough to thank him for the gift he will give you. God is not a Parent who spoils his children. God is a Parent who educates his children so that they may grow up.

| 26-G | How can I ask God for things?

At your {birth of the Spirit}, you will really understand that Earth and nature are the good of God. Without knowing it, we live in his good since our childhood. You do not have to be hard on God because your life does not go your way! God created all this out of pure generosity so that all living beings are free and happy. It is us humans who run our society as we please. If we are not happy with our fate, let us give our hand to build better and do not blame God.

So, ask for everything you really need humbly and lovingly and you will never miss the essentials in your life.

A) Basic prayer.

1) Preparation.

We have to take some time. At least five minutes.

We must meditate (to gather one's thoughts).

I advise you to pray in a low voice and not in your head. Personally, I realized that my prayers are (more answered) in this way.

2) The fundamental.

Start by asking God for forgiveness. He alone is perfect.

Ask him peace in your head. Without peace, we cannot pray sincerely.

Ask him to help you pray.

Ask him to help you become better.

Tell him that you need him in your life.

Tell him to show you how to love in his own way (God himself and others).

Tell him what is bothering you in your life.

Ask him humbly for help in his own way. Nobody fully understands the Wisdom of God, so let him act in his own way...

Thank him for all the benefits he gives you even if you do not see it at the moment.

Thank him for your human life even if you sometimes suffer.

Note:

In the Gospels, the verses that tell of the Way of Conversion are easy to understand. You do not need to understand the "mysteries of God" to make your conversion of the heart. There is nothing mysterious about becoming a good person, straight and honest. I had my {birth of the Spirit} when I knew no mystery.

B) Advanced prayer.

1) For the step of "to truly believe in God."

Lord, help me in my search for you...

Here are some suggestions:

Get inspiration from chapters | 5 and 6 | . They count several miracles.

Get out of your daily stress and go for a walk in nature. Nature is God's Creation so you see his goodness and greatness inside. Take your time, use your senses to soak up the benevolent presence of nature. Nature is the garden of God. Learn to look at each plant and animal as a little being that God has created for us. Walk in his garden and take the time to enjoy his peace...

Get out in the evening by a beautiful starry sky. Lie down on the ground and take the time to contemplate the sky. You imagine yourself! We are on the only blue planet in the universe...

Look at your children or grandchildren. Contemplate the innocence of their eyes. God has entrusted them to you...

Take a moment to thank the Lord for the food on your table.

(*) The Lord will not do the work for you, you must seek him ardently.

2) To complete the step of "baptism or birth of water."

Lord, help me to complete my Way of conversion to you.

Lord, help me to become a better person.

Lord, I am a sinner and I do not deserve your Life. I only deserve to end my life in the ground and never see your Face!

Lord, I do not trust our world that does evil easily (our evil human world).

Lord, I trust only you.

3) For the preparation of the {birth of the Spirit}:

Lord, I need you in my life.

Lord, I need you always near me.

Lord, I do not want to live without you.

Lord, I am nothing without you.

Lord, my life is yours forever.

Lord, I would like to testify about you around me, but I am not able to do it.

This is the cry of the heart that I made to obtain my {birth of the Spirit}. By cons, these are not magic sentences! **You will only have it through a deep and sincere preparation.**

You cannot lie to God because he reads in your heart! If you do not receive your {birth of the Spirit}, continue working on:

- ° Your step of "truly believing in God";
- ° Your Way of conversion;
- ° Your willingness to take action for God in your life;
- ° To give your life to the Lord.

One day when you are really ready, the Holy Spirit will Manifest to you as he did to me.

There are no magic recipes. There is only you in front of God.

| 26-H | A small list of factors that prevent one from getting one's {birth of the Spirit}

Whether for simple Christians or religious people, here are some reasons that I noticed:

- ° To practice Christianity as a family tradition;
- ° Not to believe enough in the texts of the Gospels;
- ° Not to believe enough in God;
- ° Not to seek God really;
- ° Not to want to recognize that the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is a real Manifestation;
- ° To practice Christianity as a weekly therapy against stress and fear;
- ° To falsely imagine that God is purchasable by praises and great gestures;
- ° To love doing rituals;
- ° Not to apply the Gospels in one's life;
- ° Not to do one's Way of conversion of the heart;
- ° To believe that God will Save everyone;
- ° Not to read the New Testament or to look only at small parts that do not disturb;
- ° Not to worry about the inconsistency between catechesis learned and the New Testament;
- ° To believe that one can enter Heaven by dreaming rather than actually converting;
- ° To direct one's life without God;
- ° To not really belong to God;
- ° To be a Christian only on Sundays. The rest of the week, money is the priority;
- ° To cut oneself off from the world or not want to confront it.

| 27 | Additional topics

Here I discuss small subjects that do not need the complete elaboration of a chapter.

| 27-A | The Blessed Virgin Mary

In 2017, sexism should no longer exist in Christianity. Man and woman were made by God to complement each other. Everyone should be proud of it. Moreover, everyone should recognize the qualities of each other that are so important to life and its maintenance on earth.

For the Blessed Virgin Mary. There is, of course, nothing in the New Testament to ask for her intercession in front of God. On the other hand, there have been many Apparitions of her and there are some still today. So rigidity is fine, but there are undeniable facts and we must remain flexible.

As the New Testament says nothing, I will try to say something...

I unfortunately know that many children on earth did not have a very loving image of their father. So, how can you easily believe in the Heavenly Father's Love? On the other hand, in general, most children had a pretty loving image of their mother. It would make sense to think that in order to circumvent this human problem, God the Father asked the human mother of Jesus to become **a spokeswoman for God's Love**. She would be, in a way, **the feminine face of God** for all humans who need it. Christians had the image of the Father and the Heavenly Son. On the other hand, Christians did not have the image of a Heavenly Mother.

I see a very beautiful message from the Lord in the Apparitions of the Blessed Virgin Mary.

A) Who was she?

She was not of a religious order or even of one of the many current Christian movements.

She did not fight the devil and demons.

She had no power or money.

She was not an apostle (a man).

She was a loving woman.

She was a devoted mother.

She was sensitive and fragile.

She was humble.

She was looking for the truth.

She gave her life to God.

B) She gives us a beautiful lesson of humility.

In the group of the disciples of Jesus, she is present, but silent. The Gospels tell very little about her, so we do not know much about her.

Yet with her many Apparitions, God raised her to the rank of "Ambassador of faith." When she appears, people say that she is so Beautiful! Mary says that she is Beautiful because she Loves!

You see the Love of God and his Reward for those who trust him and follow him...

C) There is a question to ask.

Why some Christian movements did not give women a full place (example for the priesthood) when God raised a woman to the title of "Ambassador of faith?" It is good to remember that the first Apparitions of the Risen Jesus were made to the holy women and not to the holy apostles.

So, let's ask ourselves the question in our lives, is power more important than **truth**?

D) Nowadays, why does Mary appear to us?

Mary is not supposed to give us messages since the Father has given us the Holy Spirit as Intercessor. Mary is supposed to be happy in Heaven without all our human worries. On the other hand, her Presence here on earth is undeniable since there have been miracles of her. Then, why does she Appear? I give you a little summary of his most recent messages. Mary encourages Christians: to trust in God; to give priority to her Son Jesus in our life; to gather one's; to pray and to convert. On second thought, all this is already in the New Testament, so why does she tell us that? The answer is simple: Mary does catechesis to Christians. Why? Christians do not read the Gospels and some Christian movements have even dissociated themselves from the Gospels since a long time. Many Christians do not believe enough in God since they do not receive the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. Unfortunately, many Christians want physical healings in order to return to have fun in our society... deep down they do not want to convert.

| 27-B | What no human being can do...

A) To do miracles.

No, a person is asking for God's intervention and that is it. Its realization belongs only to the Will of God!

The 2nd Covenant of God includes only the {gift of the Holy Spirit} and Eternal Life. Miracles and human healings are primarily proofs of God's Presence to arouse the faith of the followers. For God, what is important is to believe in him. To have an eye or teeth hurt is normal and human! Having a bad weather outside for your personal activities is normal and human! To settle wars which have been created by human wickedness, it is up to the human to get up and put an end to these, God does not finance any war and is not the God of the dead!

So, if you ask for things outside the promise of God (the 2nd Covenant) and you do not receive anything, it is normal! In the past, many Christian movements made foolish promises. Example: if a person adhered to Christianity, well... it was finished the misfortune in his life on earth. Some Christians even put God aside when the misfortune came and they concluded that God does not exist or that he does not love them.

B) To give the {birth of the Spirit}.

No, there is only the Son of God alone (Jesus) who gives of his {Bread of Life} when a person is really ready. No Christian ceremony can do anything about it!

| 27-C | Charismatic movements

Personally, I had my {birth of the Spirit} spontaneously at night when I was ready and God decided it.

On the other hand, I believe that being part of a charismatic movement can help a person to prepare by meditation, prayers and songs. **It is very good...**

You must understand that no human being can give you the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. So, the laying on of hands is only a concrete sign on your part to show that you want to receive it, **it is a preparation.**

I am convinced that if a person is really ready in the eyes of God, he can have the {gift of the Holy Spirit} during the assembly. **If he is not ready, he will have to work harder...**

In the assembly, "those who play the fake pretence" do not receive more than others. In addition, it takes credibility off the movement and harms those who need the strength of the group. **So, stay true!**

For the "speaking in tongues," here is what St-Paul says about it:

NT	1st Epistle of St-Paul to the Corinthians	14,18-19	I thank God, I speak in tongues more than you all; however, in the church I desire to speak five words with my mind so that I may instruct others also, rather than ten thousand words in a tongue.
		14,27-28	If anyone speaks in a tongue, <i>it should be</i> by two or at the most three, and <i>each</i> in turn, and one must interpret; but if there is no interpreter, he must keep silent in the church; and let him speak to himself and to God.

The message I have had from the Lord is that the {birth of the Spirit} is always done in the same way. See article |10-I|. Then, speak with the language you want (in tongues or other), the Lord understands them all! In reality, a language is a code. The Lord does not need a code, he reads the feelings directly into the human brain.

|27-D| Should we do small works?

Here, I am reminding you of article |11-E|, because it is very important...

A) For all Christians.

Basically, in Christianity, each one is only responsible for himself. It is a relationship between you and God. Your Salvation comes first. On the other hand, there is a close relationship between believing and acting. One cannot believe and not act, it is unfortunately the problem of the majority of the Christians. When we believe in God, our life is different, because we know that God is there near us at every moment. Our selfishness is diminished and we want to do small works for our Creator as St-James said. Jesus said that finding God is like finding a precious stone and he was right. We must believe in God to act and we must act to follow the Way of Jesus in order to obtain the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. Here are the 3 major works. For oneself, to make one's conversion of the heart (become a better person). For the others, to be charitable especially towards the poor. For God, to share his faith with people to make them grow.

B) For {God's children}.

You have been doing small works for some time (even without knowing it), since you have received the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. Now for you, it is easier to follow the teachings of Jesus than before. Be small lights for other Christians, but do not try to do sensational things. The best thing to do is to let the Lord give you a little project. He knows you better than you do yourself. So if he wants something specific, you will do it naturally and you will realize it in the long run, because the Lord gives you his support. Basically, do what you think is right, but do not play heroes! See article |15-E|.

|27-E| Becoming a better person/A good help on the Way of conversion of Jesus

It is true that our society operates according on the basis of appearance. It is much easier to "look like" than it is to really be someone. Beautiful clothes, a nice car, a fake smile, beautiful stereotypical phrases and "the trick is done," it is the way of ease...

In reality, Jesus asks to become a good person: true, honest, fair, charitable, caring, kind, etc. So many people wonder how to do the "feat" that Jesus asks...

The answer is simple: wanting it and putting it into practice every day.

Whatever the field (climbing, running, etc.), you have to practice the proverb: "practice makes perfect." It is by striving to become patient that one becomes very patient in the long run. It is by striving to be honest in small things that one becomes honest also for great things. Your body has the ability to train. Your brain also has the same ability to train.

Someone who cultivates selfishness becomes more and more selfish. Someone who cultivates altruism becomes more and more altruistic. **You become what you cultivate in you.**

To go further, see chapter | 16 |.

| 27-F | The difference between forgiveness and reconciliation

1) Forgiving everyone is a **necessary** step for the {birth of the Spirit}.

2) On the other hand, reconciliation with the person who has harmed us **is not** necessary for the {birth of the Spirit}.

A) Why?

This is because it is impossible to be reconciled with:

- ° A person who does not want;
- ° A person who does not believe that he has wronged you;
- ° A person who is dead.

Reconciliation does not depend solely on oneself, but on the other as well. We would then be blocked to have our {birth of the Spirit}.

B) What to do...

Forgiveness is personal.

I can forgive someone in my heart without him knowing it.

- ° To forgive, it is not to keep resentment for this person;
- ° To forgive, it is not to desire revenge;
- ° To forgive, it is to accept the other as he is.

However, accepting the other (as he is) does not mean staying in touch with that person who is hurting you. You are free to be close to a person or not. Jesus does not ask to play martyrdom!

C) I give you a psychology tip for forgiveness.

Do you know that there are people who really like to do evil and they do it consciously? In psychology, a person with this personality disorder is called "a pervert" and it is a real psychic problem.

Contrary to what people believe, perversion and sexuality have absolutely no connection. Perversion is "doing evil and loving to do it," that is all. In reality, we can do evil in every facet of our lives.

There are only 2 major categories of people who do evil:

1) A person who does not realize it. This is the vast majority of cases...

So, you cannot keep resentful to a person who is in ignorance!

2) A person who has a perverse personality disorder. It is rare, but it exists...

So, you cannot keep resentful to a person who is sick! Stay away from this person because he will destroy you...

D) To trust people too easily.

Unfortunately, many people are 2 faces. There is the appearance and there is the inside of the person.

Many people have realized that they can get more than one situation by playing on two boards at the same time. We find the greatest evidence in the field of business.

In psychology, there is even an expert of the double face, it is the manipulator. It is the master of fine words and beautiful clothes. He plays the caring person until you get caught up in his trap. Basically, you are the fly in his spider web.

I give you 2 tips:

1) What is pressing so much?

Before making a commitment, take the time to find out who you are dealing with. It takes at least 3 months to know a person. Moreover, it is only in difficult times that we really discover who the other is. In short, everyone is nice when it is going well. The opposite is not always the case.

2) Jesus said, "We recognize a tree by its fruits."

Let's go back to forgiveness...

I wanted to show you here that sometimes we have trouble forgiving because we have been too fast. We wanted to believe so much that people took advantage of it.

In reality, it is the fault of whom exactly, the other or ourselves?

E) In some cases, to obtain peace in us, it is even necessary to forgive oneself.

Often, the difficulty of people who do not forgive resides in the firm belief that they can predict the future. If I had known! If I could go back!

1) Sometimes they are very responsible people. They are responsible for everything even future events.

2) Sometimes they are very rigid people who do not allow themselves to make a mistake. But it is human to make a mistake and everyone does it!

3) Sometimes they are people who do a lot of guilt. In psychology, guilt is very destructive because the person can get sick.

F) If your parents hurt you...

Tell yourself that their own parents hurt them long before you. So they took this evil and passed it on to you. It is very likely that you may pass this evil on to your own children who will be angry with you one day. At that time, it is obvious that you would like your children to forgive you. So, do it for your own parents too! If your parents are always hurting you, you do not have to stay next to them.

G) In short.

Jesus said to stop doing evil, because evil only causes evil. Understand that the hate you have inside destroys your body much more than the one that hurt you. Many people are sick because they do not forgive others. Sometimes it happens that it is our own guilt that destroys us. So, to find peace, we must forgive everyone without exception and even to ourselves. When you forgive, you can do it alone in your head without telling anyone. In addition, you do not have to stay beside those who hurt you unless you like to suffer!

If you need help, go see a psychologist.

↑ (Essential articles)	They are necessary for understanding the next chapter.
↓ (Optional articles)	They give additional information.

|27-G| What is a mystic?

You have to be careful with the word "**mysticism**."

A) To initiate you...

I will show you my (English translation) of an excerpt from a definition of this French website:

<https://fr.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mystique>

<u>My English translation of the excerpt</u>	<u>The original excerpt in French</u>
"Mysticism" is what relates to mysteries, hidden or secret things. The term is primarily religious, and is used to describe or refer to spiritual experiences of the order of contact or communication with a transcendent reality undetectable by common sense. [...] The notion of mysticism was developed in Christianity in connection with a biblical conception and more particularly (St-Paul's conception) of the mystery according to which (St-Paul) identifies with the revelation of God in Jesus Christ. With the meaning that the mystical adjective receives from this conception of mystery, <u>it is Christianity as a whole that can be considered mystical</u> . Christianity appears in a Greco-Roman context marked by the presence of many mysterious cults whose initiatory dimension finds echoes in Christian initiation through the sacraments (mysterion in Greek) [...].	Le « mysticisme » est ce qui a trait aux mystères, aux choses cachées ou secrètes. Le terme relève principalement du domaine religieux, et sert à qualifier ou à désigner des expériences spirituelles de l'ordre du contact ou de la communication avec une réalité transcendante non discernable par le sens commun. [...] La notion de mystique a été développée dans le christianisme en rapport avec une conception biblique et plus particulièrement paulienne (St-Paul) du mystère selon laquelle ce dernier (St-Paul) s'identifie avec la révélation de Dieu en Jésus Christ. Avec le sens que l'adjectif mystique reçoit de cette conception du mystère, <u>c'est le christianisme dans son ensemble qui peut être considéré comme mystique</u> . Le christianisme apparaît dans un contexte gréco-romain marqué par la présence de nombreux cultes à mystères dont la dimension initiatique trouve des échos dans l'initiation chrétienne par les sacrements (<i>mystérion</i> en grec) [...].

B) My definition in simple.

The word "mysticism" simply means "what is mysterious" or "very difficult to understand" or "**what is above nature**." It was mainly (St-John and St-Paul) who introduced this mysterious way of writing.

C) Why is a good part of the Bible written mystically?

It is because:

- 1) God is "**above nature**."
- 2) God really Presents Himself in a mystical way so that the human being understands that his Creator is there.
- 3) To give a Sacred meaning to the Greatness of God.
- 4) To activate the curiosity of the Christian in order to make him work internally in his way of faith.
- 5) To show that following the Way of Christ is worth its weight in gold. Here, we are talking about something much greater than all that exists on earth, the Life in the Presence (the Glory) of God.

D) Then why is the word mysticism scary?

The problem is not God, it is us (humans) with our stubbornness. If something comes out of our little human control, we become scared, we hide and we say that all this does not exist or that they are stories of illuminated people...

Ask yourself the following 3 questions:

- 1) Can Christians really believe that they can pray to a real and Living God who will never Present Himself sooner or later?
- 2) Can Christians truly think of being God's children without their Father ever having Presented Himself to them for real?
- 3) Can Christians really think of going to the Kingdom of their Heavenly Father without ever meeting or even knowing him before?

Then all who are truly {God's children} by their {birth of the Spirit} **are mystics, like me, by the way.**

E) If you want to go to Heaven, you have to make an effort!

In reality, there is only one God who is our Creator. In addition, the devil does not exist. **So what would you be scared of?** If you do not know what name to give to God, just call him "my Creator." Of course he will recognize himself and listen to you, there is only him!

F) Famous scholars of the Scriptures...

On the Internet, I have unfortunately seen famous "scholars of the Scriptures" do not pretend to be mystics. As if it was shameful! As if the mystics are people who have lost their minds!

Here is what Jesus said:

NT	St-Matthew	11,25	At that time Jesus said, "I praise You, Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that You have hidden these things from <i>the</i> wise and intelligent and have revealed them to infants.
	St-John	14,17	<i>that is</i> the Spirit of truth (1), whom the world cannot receive, because it does not see Him or know Him, <i>but</i> you know Him because He abides with you and will be in you (2).
		14,26	"But the Helper, the Holy Spirit (1), whom the Father will send in My name, He will teach you all things , and bring to your remembrance all that I said to you.

(1) The {gift of the Holy Spirit}.

(2) The apostles will have it at the day of Pentecost.

| 27-H | What is the people of saints?

Here is what St-Peter writes:

NT	1st Epistle of St-Peter	1,14-16	As obedient children, do not be conformed to the former lusts <i>which were yours</i> in your ignorance, but like the Holy One (1) who called you, be holy yourselves also in all <i>your</i> behavior (2); because it is written, "You shall be holy (3), for I (3) Am Holy."

(1) God

(2) Anyone who follows the Way of Christ.

(3) Only the Holy Spirit makes one holy. Our own means and our own sacrifice will never make us holy.

Some Christian movements think there will be small saints and great saints in Heaven. I have bad news for them. A person receives his {birth of the Spirit} or not on earth. 1) We enter or 2) we do not enter and 3) we have our earthly life to decide and do the work requested by the Lord.

| 27-I | Where are the prophets after Jesus?

Many people say, "There are no prophets after Jesus!"

So, read this:

NT	St-Matthew	5,12-16	"Rejoice and be glad, for your reward in heaven is great; for in the same way they persecuted the prophets who were before you (1). "You are the salt of the earth; but if the salt has become tasteless, how can it be made salty <i>again</i> ? It is no longer good for anything, except to be thrown out and trampled under foot by men. " You are the light of the world . A city set on a hill cannot be hidden; nor does <i>anyone</i> light a lamp and put it under a basket, but on the lampstand, and it gives light to all who are in the house. " Let your light shine before men in such a way that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father who is in heaven.

(1) {God's children} are the follow up to the New Testament of the Old Testament prophets.

| 28 | The same message of Jesus since 2,000 years

| 28-A | A religion or a relationship

What Jesus asks is much more than a religion. A religion, it is human... with objects and rituals. Jesus wants a real **relationship** already on earth with you. Following Jesus is a way of living of every day. It is deciding to be part of his big family right now.

The Way of Christ is difficult. Why? It is because the evil that humans do is very present and affects everyone. So, you have a choice to make. Are you going to become a **child of light** or of darkness? For children of darkness, why do you want to go to Heaven? Why go to a place without evil if you do not already want to work in this direction on earth? Without an effort and an ardent desire, no one goes to Heaven!

You tell yourself that the steps of the (birth of water) toward the {birth of the Spirit} are not... nothing. You are right! But Eternal Life is not either... nothing! To have Eternal Life is a choice, it is a Reward.

Unfortunately, many Christians have been put to sleep by some Christian movements as I was myself. Yes, it is very insecure to seek the truth. On the other hand, with God, lies do not bring anyone anywhere!

In this book, I told you the truth. It is up to you to make your decision. The message that the Lord has asked me to do is in your hands...

| 28-B | The thought of Jesus in brief

- 1) There is only God the Father who is Eternal. He is the Source of all life.
- 2) A being cannot live forever without the Father's Source of Life. Jesus (the Son) says that he draws his own Life from the Source of his Father. Then without wishing to fight with the superstitious mentality of his time, Jesus tells us in a subtle way that the devil and demons cannot exist.
- 3) Jesus says that evil comes from the heart of the human being, from its inner bottom. The human is doing evil on his own.
- 4) At the time of Jesus, many translations of Hebrew documents passed through the hands of the Greeks. The Greek words were tainted by their mythology. Although Jesus warned his contemporaries about the use of Greek concepts, some of them are still found in the New Testament. The worst concept is that of the "eternal soul" which floats everywhere like a ghost at the death of the person.
- 5) For Jesus, the human was (of flesh and blood) and he dies. The human had nothing eternal in oneself.
- 6) For Jesus, the "Gehenna of fire" was a real dump outside the city where everything was burned. To make sure that it burns completely, people added sulfur, hence the smell given to the symbolic image of the eternal hell of the 1500s.
- 7) Jesus says that God is a Wind. He is: Mighty, Living, Immaterial, Eternal and Free. In Greek, the word Wind or Breath is translated by Spirit.
- 8) Jesus says that he did not come to earth to Judge the world, but to Save it. Jesus is not the Judge (punisher) of those who do evil. Jesus is the Judge who ordains the Reward of the {gift of the Holy Spirit} to those who will Live.
- 9) Jesus gives the revelation that the Breath (the Spirit) gives Life (Eternal) and that the human body does not serve anything, because it is mortal.

10) Since God is Eternal, the human conception of time and space does not apply to him. On earth, we live in a world that is limited in time, because evil is possible and God does not support the lives of those who do evil for a long time. Human life is given for a maximum of 120 years.

11) God does not think like the human. His wisdom is generally taken as human folly.

12) A human being is born on earth (by the human life of his parents) and he is mortal. A {God's child} is born from the Breath of Life of God (the Spirit) in his nostrils. When the Spirit of God dwells in a temple, this temple cannot be destroyed. Jesus gives the following comparison: as we must be born on earth to live in our world, as we must be born from the Breath of God to live in the World of God.

|28-C| The truth

1) God really Exists and Jesus Christ is his Son.

2) The {gift of the Holy Spirit} is always a real Manifestation and not poetry. If you have not felt anything, it is because you have not received anything.

3) Jesus alone is the Word, the Way and the Truth that leads to Eternal Life.

4) Every Christian whose priority is power and objects has already made his choice! For others, take what is necessary and everything else is so that no one lacks anything on earth.

5) Every Christian whom we talk about God and who does not have time to hear or seek (the truths from above) has already made his choice!

6) Why are there many Christian movements when there is only one Christ and one Truth? Then Jesus asks all Christians, without exception, to return to the Gospels and to join hands.

7) No Christian movement has in its hands any power over God: neither to give the {gift of the Holy Spirit} to anyone; nor even to remove it; nor to perform miracles without the intercession of God; nor to save himself. A human being is a being of flesh and blood, nothing more! It is not our personal sacrifices that Save us, but Christ.

8) Earth is the garden that God has given to the human for his learning. God respects the freedom of life he gives. In this Law of Freedom, the human has the right only on his own life and not on others. Each living being is free and must be respected.

9) The Breath of Life of God (the Holy Spirit) does not want to live in a building, a garment or an object. He wants to Live in the heart of his {children}. Seek God truly and his Spirit will manifest concretely to you.

10) God is only interested in humble hearts. All human error is forgivable. On the other hand, not seeking the Truth is unforgivable, for the {gift of the Holy Spirit} cannot be done.

11) There are 3 levels of consciousness.

First: To listen.	Subsequently: To reflect or to question.	Finally: To make a decision in your life and to act accordingly.

→ To follow the Way of Christ, you must absolutely reach the 3rd level. Following the Way of Christ is a decision and a work of every day. Listening during the Sunday mass and reflecting are not enough. The word **faith** means "commitment" and not "I think."

12) The majority of Christians do not receive the {gift of the Holy Spirit} because they do not have the desire to share their human life with the Life of God (the Holy Spirit). They keep their little life for themselves and follow their own deadly path.

|28-D| What is the work of each one?

I give the example of a farmer and his field.

- 1) The humans are the rocks of the ground.
- 2) The Word of Jesus (the Gospels) serves to turn the rock into fertile soil.
- 3) The {birth of the Spirit} is a work of God which consists in depositing a grain in the fertile soil to make it a {child of God}.
- 4) Christian movements have the task of proclaiming the Gospels. They also have the task of initiating a person to the Christian life by administering a Christian baptism. No Christian movement has any power over the action of God (the Holy Spirit) and the human. Finally, Christian movements only have the role of accompanying their followers in the Way of Christ.

To go to the Kingdom of God, you must take charge of your own life. **It is between you and God alone.**

|28-E| God's plan in a simple and pictorial way

You can compare our Earth to a **garden** from which God comes to gather beautiful flowers for his House. Will you become one of his beautiful flowers to please him? If you decide yes, he will help you grow. You have all your human life at your disposal so that God will come and tell you that He will bring you with Him by the mark of the {gift of the Holy Spirit}.

The {gift of the Holy Spirit} is really a mark that Christ makes in our chest. It does not hurt at all. This mark is an {anointing} that feels inside concretely. St-Paul calls it "the seal of Jesus Christ." By this {anointing}, the person is really born to a new Life as a {God's child}. In a way, he becomes the mature fruit that can be taken out of the garden at the end of his pilgrimage to Earth.

On the other hand, if the maturation is not sufficient during the human life, the {anointing} is not granted. Then the person, or the fruit not mature enough, ends his human life in the **garden** that gave birth to him, Earth.

Some concepts in brief:

- ° The Father is the Sower;
- ° The Son is the Harvester;
- ° The Holy Spirit is the Breath of Eternal Life of God. He is the Unity that connects God with his spiritual beings;
- ° In Heaven, the {God's children} will be like angels.

Have you noticed that physicists have found no life outside our planet Earth? Don't you find that strange? The Sun and the Earth. A lamp and a flowerpot. It looks like gardening, no!

Some would say, "Why is the universe so big?" In science, we know that a "large mass" serves to stabilize a system. It becomes simple to understand that the greatness of the universe serves to stabilize our temporal world so that it functions for billions of years. Yes, while God is doing his gardening! Do you now understand why God is so Patient, despite the fact that we are doing evil on Earth? Earth formed 10 billion years after the Big Bang. Life on Earth is the work of about 4 billion years before humans appear. Can you imagine God's Work, His Patience, and His Love for us? Can you imagine the human folly of destroying this **garden** by our pollution? We have our feet on a "diamond" and we do not even see it due to our egoism...

|28-F| For go further...

You have all the information you need to meet the Creator and become a {God's child}.

It only depends on your sincerity and your work...

For readers who would like to go further and who have no base in science:

I give you a simple model of God's plan in chapter |35|. This model is sufficient if you want to stick to the essentials. It uses the old point of view from the time of St-Paul.

For readers who would like to go further and who have a base in science:

I give you a complete model of God's plan in chapters |29 to 34|. This model was written to unite the Bible and modern science. It shows that if we remove the superstitions of the Bible, we find a logic that is in harmony with the discoveries of the last 100 years.

|28-G| Introduction to finding a model

After my {birth of the Spirit}, as a New World had just opened up to me and the catechesis (that I had received) did not really correspond with this reality, I started a search...

I tried to unite the Bible and the basic knowledge of science. As a good scientist, I had to explain everything in a coherent way. So I had to build **a model**...

Our society constantly uses models:

- ° Banks use financial models in order to grow the assets entrusted;
- ° Schools use teaching models to educate their students;
- ° Firefighters use fire propagation models to extinguish buildings;
- ° Etc.

Suppose you are an employee of an airline. You are responsible for determining the amount of fuel required by an airliner before departure. You know that the more fuel you put in the airplane, the heavier it will be and the more expensive it will be to fly. Therefore, there is no question of filling up the airplane's fuel tank. You must put (only) the right amount of fuel in order for the airplane to reach its destination safely and economically. To do this, you will have to consider the following factors:

- ° The weight of the airplane, fuel, passengers and baggage;
- ° The route and the prevailing winds;
- ° The altitude and cruising speed;
- ° The aerodynamic drag of wings and fuselage;
- ° The thrust and consumption of the engines;
- ° Etc.

The interaction between all these factors is too complex for the human mind. Therefore, you will need to use **a model** uniting all these factors in order to make your decision.

Be careful, a model is not the reality. No, a model tries to give a sufficient picture of a reality for our human understanding. Usually, we use a **chart** to visualize a model.

Now, let us return to our effort to unite science and the Bible by a model.

Scientifically, we already have difficulty understanding the reality of the universe and Earth. So, imagine trying to understand the interaction between our human world and God's world!

On the other hand, we know that God is the Author of the science of our world and that the Bible says that the human is in the image of his Creator. So we have some initial elements to allow us to build a simple model...

The best way to ensure the consistency and reliability of a model is to build it as simple as possible using only the safest information.

The model I discovered explains everything and it is sufficient for our human understanding.

It is obvious that the Lord must find this model very simplistic, but he did not give us any more information. For the Lord, the priority is our conversion of the heart, not that we juggle with his mysteries indefinitely!

The end of time

|29| The Judgments

St-John and St-Paul are the apostles who have most defined the mystery of God.

On the other hand:

If they had not been educated very young in the many superstitions (mainly Greeks) of their time.
If they had known that the supernatural being of evil, the devil, does not exist.
If they had known that all the cases of "possession" they saw were simply diseases.
If they had known that humans themselves were destroying Earth's ecosystem.

Then, the conclusions on the Judgments of God would have been easy to make...

|29-A| Punishment or Judgment of God?

In article |19-F|, we saw an important key of God. From the New Testament, Jesus gives the revelation that God does not punish the wicked one, **he rewards the good one**.

Furthermore, what can we say about "the Judgments of God?"

When looking in the Bible, everything connects around the same basic concept:

The human is doing evil himself. God gives life to the good ones. God is very patient and firstly gives the wicked ones enough time to convert. If the wicked one does not do it, it is death at the end. I am talking about a biological (human) death, nothing more.

A) Let's look at some cases:

1) In the narrative of the Flood (Genesis 6,5 to 9,29), Noah and his family are good. The human beings in the area around them are bad. What happened? Noah took about 100 years to make his ark (his boat). All this time, bad people laughed at him. Bad people have had a fine inheritance of 100 years of human life. We see that God is generous to the ungrateful as Jesus said.

NT	St-Luke	6,35	"But love your enemies, and do good, and lend, expecting nothing in return; and your reward will be great, and you will be sons of the Most High; for He Himself is kind to ungrateful and evil <i>men</i> ."

Although Noah surely tried to warn people that the Flood was coming, nobody listened judging that he was crazy! God rewarded the good one (Noah) by continuing his life. But the bad ones finally died swallowed up in the Flood. Yes, this is a symbolic narrative, but it reveals important things...

2) In the narrative of Sodom (Genesis: 18,16 to 19,29), the people of this city are very bad. The nephew of Abraham (Lot) established his family at the gates of this evil city without really knowing it. Lot's family is trying to do good. They ask people not to do evil. People do not listen to anything! Subsequently, angels appear to Abraham to tell him that they will destroy this city, because complaints have risen to God. Abraham asks God to spare the city. God accepts on condition that Abraham finds at least 10 good people inside the city. Abraham cannot find 10. The angels then ask Lot and his family to go out. The city is finally destroyed by the lava of a volcano.

3) In the book of Exodus (Moses). The Egyptians (the bad ones) enslaved the Hebrews (the good ones) for 400 years. God sent Moses to deliver them. God performs one miracle at a time (a plague of Egypt) to demonstrate to the king of Egypt (Pharaoh) that the God of the Hebrews is the only God who exists (the Creator of nature). The Egyptians have plenty of time to understand, but they do not want to. The strength of the miracles (the plagues of Egypt) increases gradually, but Pharaoh still does not let the slaves go. What is the last plague? Through the mouth of Pharaoh who orders the death of the firstborn of the slaves, God has taken this judgment of Pharaoh against himself. It is the first born of the Egyptians who died. Jesus said:

NT	St-Matthew	7,1-2	"Do not judge so that you will not be judged. "For in the way you judge, you will be judged; and by your standard of measure, it will be measured to you.

Later, Pharaoh let the slaves go. On the way, the slaves were at the edge of the sea. The Egyptian soldiers wanted revenge and to kill the slaves. God, by his Breath, opened the sea as a canal. God let the Hebrews pass by on the other side of the shore. Subsequently, the senseless Egyptian soldiers went after them into the canal. God closed the sea and the soldiers died.

In short, we see that the same basic concept is being repeated throughout the Bible.

|29-B| Why does the Gospel of St-John say that everyone resurrects for a Judgment?

In the Gospel of St-John, 2 verses are revealing:

NT	St-John	3,5-7	Jesus answered, "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born of water and the Spirit he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. "That which is born of the flesh is flesh, and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit. "Do not be amazed that I said to you, 'You must be born again.'
		5,29	and will come forth; those who did the good <i>deeds</i> to a resurrection of life, those who committed the evil <i>deeds</i> to a resurrection of judgment.

How to explain the resurrection of everyone for a judgment when one must be born of the Spirit to see the Kingdom? In this case, the resurrection of judgment would give absolutely nothing since the person cannot see the Kingdom anyway!

I give 4 explanations:

1) It should be known that the Jews were waiting for a "messiah of anger" who would rid them of their invaders, the Romans. This messiah was going to solve all the problems in Israel and restore peace. People had been waiting for him for a long time and they were very firm in their ideas. Out of the question, the expected messiah could not forgive. Look carefully at what the apostles say to Jesus at the end of his mission just before His Ascension.

NT	Acts of the Apostles	1,6-7	So when they had come together, they were asking Him, saying, "Lord, is it at this time You are restoring the kingdom to Israel?" He said to them, "It is not for you to know times or epochs which the Father has fixed by His own authority;

Here the apostles know that Jesus is really the Messiah and cling to their old idea of restoring order. So, one day Jesus will come back with a punishment for the wicked ones. We see this idea in a few places in the Gospels. As for it, the book of Revelation (Apocalypse) imagines the Judgment in a terrible denouement between the Forces of Good and Evil. See article |29-D|.

2) Even after (the 3 years of Jesus' teaching), it is normal that the apostles, who were of Judaism stock, bring some of their influences in the New Testament. Remember that in Judaism, God is punisher and avenger. This is visible throughout the Old Testament.

3) For the early Christians of the time, life was very difficult. They were martyred. The wicked ones could not get away easily like this without punishment! Then they deserved a little eternal damnation! Yet Jesus said that we must forgive everyone and not do evil for evil!

4) For the Jews, after the death of the human body, the soul falls asleep in the abode of the dead (Sheol). See article |3-D|. Now the idea was that at the end of time, all souls will present themselves for the Last Judgment. Jesus will separate souls. The good souls will go for a resurrection of life. The bad souls will go away for a resurrection of judgment, damnation with the devil in eternal hell.

For further explanations, see articles |23-G| and |19-C|.

| 29-C | What is the Last Judgment and the Heavenly Court of Justice?

Here is the modern explanation of the "Last Judgment" and the "Heavenly Court of Justice" that some people who have had a **near-death experience** have glimpsed in talking with Jesus. See article | 6-O |.3

It must be known that the Last Judgment belongs to Jesus alone, for he is the Word who commands it.

NT	St-John	3,16-21	"For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him shall not perish, but have eternal life. "For God did not send the Son into the world to judge the world, but that the world might be saved through Him (1). "He who believes in Him is not judged; he who does not believe has been judged already (2), because he has not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. "This is the judgment, that the Light has come into the world, and men loved the darkness rather than the Light, for their deeds were evil. "For everyone who does evil hates the Light, and does not come to the Light for fear that his deeds will be exposed. "But he who practices the truth comes to the Light, so that his deeds may be manifested as having been wrought in God."

(1) The Savior is Jesus Christ.

(2) In the Old Testament, in the narrative of the Garden of Eden. God had already judged humanity (by the symbol of: Adam and Eve) to a mortal life, deprived of the Eternal Life (by the symbol of: the tree of life in the middle of the garden). God deprived the human of eternal life due to disobedience to his law by committing evil (by the symbol of: eating the apple, the fruit of evil).

A) The Last Judgment is simply performed in the image of the symbolic text of the Flood, see article | 21-F |.

The symbol of "the ark" is Jesus Christ (the Savior).

The symbol of "Noah and his family" is the whole of {God's children} for the Kingdom of God.

The symbol of "ascending into the ark" is the {birth of the Spirit}.

The symbol of the "Flood" is the biological death on Earth quite normal like everything that lives on our planet.

This Last Judgment is not in the future, but well now and for 2,000 years already without the people being aware of it by the {gift of the Holy Spirit} spilled at the day of Pentecost.

B) The Heavenly Court of Justice.

At the moment, we are all (under study) before the "Heavenly Court of Justice" without knowing it. When It gives its Judgment for Life, the person on earth obtains his {birth of the Spirit}, because he receives the Breath of God's Life in his nostrils which gives his birth from above.

NT	St-John	3,3	Jesus answered and said to him, "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born again (1) he cannot see the kingdom of God."

(1) This is the {birth of the Spirit}. In other Bibles, it is also named: the {birth from above}, because this means to be born from the Breath of Life of God (from above).

In Christianity, you have surely heard the sentence: "At the end of time, he (Jesus) will return in his Glory to judge the living and the dead."

Here is what you need to know:

At the time of Jesus, the expression "the end of time" meant "in his time, when God will decide it" and not the end of anything.

The expression "in the Glory of God" simply means "in the Presence of God" as in the Great Joy of the Presence of the Breath of God at the {birth of the Spirit}. See article | 13-D |.

| 29-D | The Last Judgment in the book of Revelation (Apocalypse)

A) Let's take a quick look at the Revelation (Apocalypse).

It is obvious that this book would not be complete without a little trip to hell...

NT	Revelation of John of Patmos (1)	1,3	Blessed is he who reads and those who hear the words of the prophecy, and heed the things which are written in it; for the time (2) is near (3).

(1) John of Patmos and not St-John. See article | 20-B |.

(2) It is the return of Christ for the Last Judgment.

(3) We have not yet seen his return with the "fire from heaven" after 2,000 years. So where is the near?

NT	Revelation of John of Patmos	1,16	In His right (1) hand He held seven stars (2), and out of His mouth (3) came a sharp two-edged sword (4); and His face was like the sun shining in its strength.

(1) Here, it is the hand of Jesus.

(2) Each star is an angel associated with the 7 nascent Churches that the apostles have just founded.

(3) Jesus is the Word of God.

(4) **Insurmountable problem.** Jesus revealed that God is Holy (without any evil) and he proved it by his death on the cross while his Father did not intervene to punish the chief priests.

NT	Revelation of John of Patmos	20,14-15	Then death (1) and Hades (2) were thrown into the lake of fire. This is the second death, the lake of fire (3). And if anyone's name was not found written in the book (4) of life, he was thrown into the lake of fire.

(1) The character of death is the devil and his demons.

(2) Hades, this is "under the ground" since Lucifer has been precipitated there. See article | 18-A |.

(3) It is the (Gehenna of fire) that Jesus talks about. In reality, the Gehenna is simply a real dump that burned at the exit of the city. Sulfur was added to it in order to help the fire, hence the smell. **On the other hand, the author talks about the Gehenna in a way that is out of context with the reality of the time of Jesus.** Here, the author talks about eternal hell.

(4) These are the people who are marked by the {anointing} of Christ (the Savior). See article | 15-G |.

NT	Revelation of John of Patmos	2,10-11	'Do not fear what you are about to suffer. Behold, the devil is about to cast some of you into prison, so that you will be tested, and you will have tribulation for ten days. Be faithful until death (1), and I (2) will give you the crown of life (3). 'He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. He who overcomes will not be hurt by the second death (4).'

(1) Human death on earth.

(2) Jesus.

(3) Eternal Life.

(4) To be sent into eternal hell with the devil.

B1) Why is it spoken of 2 deaths?

After the death of the human body, the soul of the deceased falls asleep in the abode of the dead (Sheol) while waiting for the end of time. For the Last Judgment, God resurrects (comes alive again or awakens) all souls to bring them before him at the Heavenly Court. The Son is the Judge who separates the Living from the dead by his mark, the {anointing}. See article | 15-G |. Only those who are marked with the {anointing} are inscribed in the book of life for the Kingdom of God.

The 2 deaths are:

1) The death of the human body in the ground.

2) The death of the soul which is not marked by the {anointing}.

Now, let's get out of John of Patmos's hell!

B2) On the contrary, Jesus says that God is Life.

NT	St-Matthew	22,32	"I Am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob?" He is not the God of the dead but the living."

For the Jews at the time of Jesus, there were 2 important words: (**nephesh** and **pneuma**).

NT	1st Epistle of St-Paul to the Corinthians	15,44-47	it is sown a natural (5) body (1), it is raised a spiritual body (2). If there is a natural body, there is also a spiritual <i>body</i> . So also it is written, "The first man (3), Adam, became a living soul." The last Adam (4) <i>became</i> a life-giving spirit. However, the spiritual is not first, but the natural; then the spiritual. The first man is from the earth, earthy; the second man is from heaven (4).

Here, in this English Bible (New American Standard), the word (**natural**) (5) is used instead of the word (**psyche**) in the French Bible (Jerusalem).

(3) Adam and Eve are the symbol of humanity (man).

(4) The last Adam is Jesus, the Son of God. It is through Jesus that the {God's children} are born, the new creation.

(*) Here is an excerpt from the footnote of the Jerusalem Bible, 1977 Editions du Cerf:

My English translation of the excerpt	The original excerpt in French
For St-Paul, as for the biblical tradition, the psyche (in Hebrew: nephesh) is the vital, natural (5) principle. But who must fade (erase) before the (in Hebrew: pneuma) so that the man (or the woman) finds the divine life again. This <u>substitution</u> , which is already taking shape during mortal life by the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, will obtain its full effect after death.	Pour St-Paul comme pour la tradition biblique, la psyché (en hébreux : néphesh) est le principe vital, naturel (5). Mais qui doit s'effacer devant le (en hébreux : pneuma) pour que l'homme (ou la femme) retrouve la vie divine. Cette <u>substitution</u> qui s'ébauche déjà durant la vie mortelle par le {don de l'Esprit-Saint}, obtiendra son plein effet après la mort.

For a chart of the terms "**nephesh** and **pneuma**," see chapter |35|. We can also see the substitution that St-Paul is talking about.

Let's look at the indications (1) and (2):

The terms "**nephesh** and **pneuma**" both mean "the principle of life or the breath of life."

The term "**nephesh**" is most often translated into English as "soul." St-Paul having done missions at the Greeks, he also gives it the name of "psyche." It is simply the breath of mortal human life (**natural**).

The term "**pneuma**" is most often translated into English as "spirit." It is the Breath of the Life of God or the Holy Spirit.

Chart for (1) and (2):

The form of life	The vital principle	The envelope
The human being on earth	The soul or psyche (or natural) or "nephesh"	The human body or psychic (or natural) body (1)
The {God's child} in Heaven	The spirit or "pneuma"	The spiritual body (2)

(*) The {gift of the Holy Spirit} is "pneuma."

(1) Because of his trips at the Greeks, St-Paul uses the term "psychic (or **naturel**)" to talk about the human body.

(2) St-Paul says that the spiritual body is to be received at the end of time.

To go further, see article |30-D|.

Conclusion: **there are 2 lives** and not 2 deaths.

1) A mortal human life. It is the equivalent of the word "**nephesh**" in Hebrew.

2) An Eternal Life given and fed by God to his {children}. This is the equivalent of the word "**pneuma**" in Hebrew.

C) Why did not Christians see that the Last Judgment is on earth since 2,000 years already?

Mainly:

1) The lack of science to shed light on superstitions and the devil as a real supernatural being.

2) The vanity of science to want to make God disappear and present itself as the solution to everything.

3) The precious human power to the detriment of Truth.

4) Humanly, not to want to question oneself.

5) To take those who have received the {gift of the Holy Spirit} as enlightened ones.

NT	1st Epistle of St-Paul to the Corinthians	2,14	But a natural (1) man does not accept the things (2) of the Spirit of God, for they are foolishness (3) to him; and he cannot understand them, because they are spiritually appraised.

(1) An ordinary human being (without his birth of the Spirit).

(2) Of {God's children}.

(3) This book will surely be a good example. It will surely be contested, because it shows that one must make efforts to go to the Kingdom of God. What very few Christians want to do.

| 29-E | The Judgment in Brief

Every human being has the ability to do evil by himself. Jesus says that evil is in the heart or inside of the human. As the human is God's adversary, it is the human (the little Satan) whom Jesus sees everywhere even through St-Peter. In reality, Satan is a symbol and the human is the only one responsible for evil here on earth.

Jesus came to earth to teach humans (the Way of conversion towards goodness), **these are the Gospels**. On earth, Jesus demonstrates the Goodness of God. On the other hand, the full human freedom to do evil is demonstrated by the fact that the Son of God died on the cross while the Father did not punish anyone by the "fire from heaven."

God being perfectly Good, since no human being is without sin, no human being can go to his Kingdom. His Son Jesus being the only one without any evil, his death on earth is an injustice in the eyes of the Father. The Father Resurrects Jesus with his body on the third day. Jesus makes Apparitions to his apostles and more than 500 people. Jesus finishes the teaching of his apostles. Jesus Ascends on the 40th day toward his Father and is Glorified. Then, he becomes the Son or the Word of God again. The injustice of his death on the cross is counterbalanced by a Gift from the Father. The Son receives from the Father: Forgiveness and the Source of Eternal Life (the Holy Spirit) for those who will follow His Way. The apostles after 3 years of conversion are ready to receive the promise of God. This promise is the {gift of the Holy Spirit} at the day of Pentecost (the 50th day). The word Pentecost means: "the time of the harvest." On that day, the Son brings the {gift of the Holy Spirit} to his apostles and gives them the "Strength from above" to begin their mission.

If we compare with the narrative of the Flood, in a simple way, this Breath of Life (the Holy Spirit) is equivalent to embarking on Noah's ark. The judgment is not forthcoming, it has been present for 2,000 years.

The Judgment is simple:

We receive the {birth of the Spirit} or not. For those who will not have it, there is nothing after biological death, quite simply.

Some Christians will say, "Why did no one tell us that we need our {birth of the Spirit} to go to Heaven?" In fact, I would not even need to say it or confirm it, it is already written in the New Testament! But who really wants to see it?

Why do we absolutely need the {birth of the Spirit} to go to the Kingdom of God? This will be answered in chapter |30|.

You have the chance to know it now, so you still have time! It is only a matter of sincerity and effort...

A modern model

|30| The Resurrection

|30-A| A quick look in the Bible about the Resurrection of Jesus

If we look at the end of the 4 Gospels for details of the Resurrection of Jesus, we quickly realize that the narratives are divergent. This is normal, because at that time the information was transmitted orally (through tradition) and in addition the first Gospel (St-Mark) was written about 30 years later.

It is obvious that we will never understand everything about the event of the Resurrection of Jesus. On the other hand, let's try to build something simple and coherent from the few pieces of information we have in our hands.

As the 4 narratives of the Resurrection of Jesus are very short (often less than half a page), I let you look at them and compare them...

A) Since they diverge all 4, I give you a short summary that tries to unify them.

- 1) Jesus died on the cross around 3 pm on the Friday before Jewish Passover.
- 2) At the foot of the cross, there were some holy women and at least one apostle, St-John. There were also 2 followers of Jesus who were religious people and who have opposed to the execution of Jesus. They are Joseph of Arimathea and Nicodemus.
- 3) After the death of Jesus, they took the body, coated it with spices, wrapped it in a shroud and put it in a new tomb carved into the rock that belonged to Joseph of Arimathea. As usual, they rolled a big stone in front of it. It should be known that this stone was placed for a period of 1 year during the decomposition of the soft parts of the body. Then, people would remove the stone to pick up the bones of the deceased and deposit another body there. **So no one was going to remove the stone before 1 year...**
- 4) To be sure that the disciples of Jesus do not come to steal the body and lie, the religious people and the Romans have permanently put guards before the big stone.
- 5) On the 3rd day at dawn (Sunday), in front of the guards (who was waiting), the stone miraculously withdrew by the Action of an angel. What is important is that no human touched the stone. It is reported that the guards were frozen as dead. Did they see Jesus come out of the tomb? I think they saw something, but did not say it! Since there was nothing left in the tomb, they left quickly to see their superiors, because they were scared of being punished severely. Their incredulous superiors, being scared of the Jews, invented a story to blame the disciples of Jesus.
- 6) Always that same Sunday, after the guards left leaving the tomb empty without anyone, the holy women arrived at the tomb. They arrived on the scene and finding the empty tomb and the stone rolled aside. They looked in the tomb. The body of Jesus was not there. They wondered what had happened. They wanted to go and tell it to the disciples. Either, one angel (or two) appeared to them inside the empty tomb, or they had an Apparition of Jesus on the way. What is certain is that they saw an Apparition and they had a message to convey to the apostles: Jesus was Risen!
- 7) The holy women transmitted the message to the apostles, but they did not believe them. This is the typical human behavior, we only believe what we see or almost...
- 8) Thereafter, for 40 days, there were many Apparitions of the Risen Jesus. It is clearly stated that Jesus had a Special Body. People could touch Jesus. Jesus could eat. Jesus could Appear and disappear from a room while the doors were locked. Jesus could show himself with his face (which everyone knew before his death) or with another face to test their faith.
- 9) For 40 days, Jesus finished his teaching to his apostles. Then, there was the Ascension where Jesus went to his Father, we have no specific details.

10) Afterwards, Jesus was Glorified by his Father and returned (the Son of God, the Word), that he was before his Incarnation on earth. Jesus presents himself as the Only Truth and the Only Judge of the Living. The Father being the Sower and the Son being the Harvester of the Living.

11) Jesus says that the Father will send a Helper (Intercessor), the Spirit of truth (the Holy Spirit) and that he will remind them of his teachings.

12) On the 50th day, that of the harvest of the fields, the Bright Cloud came from heaven (sky), and the Holy Spirit Manifested Himself by "tongues as of fire" on the heads of the apostles. This is the narrative of the day of Pentecost. Subsequently, many people had the {gift of the Holy Spirit} like me on March 14, 2016.

B) Let's look at some difficult details.

1) In the narrative of the day of Pentecost (Acts of the Apostles in chapter 2). "**Speaking in tongues**" is problematic.

a) Did the apostles speak foreign languages?

Or...

b) Did God make the translation into the head of the people who were listening?

We can solve this question by mathematics. On this day of Pentecost, only the apostles received the Holy Spirit, because Jesus had chosen and prepared them for 3 years to be the leaders of the early Christian community. There were 12 apostles and the narrative gives a number of languages heard of more than 16. As it is obvious that a person cannot speak 2 languages at the same time.

Answer: God was translating into people's heads.

2) For the **Apparitions of Jesus**, are they:

a) Physically?

Or...

b) In the heads of people?

When we examine the Gospels, we feel that they are of all types at the same time. By the way, if we examine the most recent Apparitions of history. In the case of the Apparition of the Virgin to Juan Diego in article |6-F|, we know that this Apparition was done physically since there were 2 tangible marks: the flowers and the image of the Virgin printed in the mantle. We also know that the Apparition can be done in the head and physically together. In the case of the Apparition of Jesus to St-Paul, he even lost his sight! In the case of the Apparitions of the Virgin in Medjugorje in article |6-H|, the children reported being able to touch the veil and the hand of the Apparition (the Virgin).

Answer: all styles at the same time.

3) In the 4 Gospels, why are **the narratives of the Resurrection** of Jesus **so short**?

Logically for an event of this magnitude, the narratives should be long and very detailed. I had a dozen Manifestations of the Spirit and I wrote this complete book and not just a paragraph! In article |13-D|, you even have the details of my {birth of the Spirit} written 4 days later. So what was the problem? Yes, the way Jesus Presented Himself after His Resurrection! As we have just seen, the Apparition can be done either: physically; in the person's head; physically and in the person's head at the same time. Now, one must understand that the Jews of the time were convinced to resurrect with their human body on earth. In article |22-D|, it is easy to see that the Jews kept the bones of their deceased for God to put flesh back on these bones at the end of time. So, reliving in another World than earth was not one of the possible options!

Answer: the apostles understood that the Jews were unable to take the reality of events, so they had the wisdom to write little in order to keep the mystery.

For God, nothing is impossible, so he will always remain a little mysterious!

[30-B] What does St-Paul say about our resurrection?

Here is an important excerpt:

NT	1st Epistle of St-Paul to the Corinthians	15,44-51	it is sown a natural (13) body (1) , it is raised a spiritual body (2) . If there is a natural body, there is also a spiritual <i>body</i> . So also it is written, "The first man (3) , Adam, became a living soul (4) ." The last Adam (5) <i>became</i> a life-giving spirit (6) . However, the spiritual is not first, but the natural; then the spiritual. The first man is from the earth, earthy (7) ; the second man is from heaven (8) . As is the earthy, so also are those who are earthy; and as is the heavenly, so also are those who are heavenly. Just as we have borne the image of the earthy (9) , we will also bear the image of the heavenly (10) . Now I say this, brethren, that flesh and blood (11) cannot inherit the kingdom of God; nor does the perishable inherit the imperishable. Behold, I tell you a mystery; we will not all sleep, but we will all be changed (12) ,
Here, in this English Bible (New American Standard), the word (natural) (13) is used instead of the word (psyche) in the French Bible (Jerusalem).			

(*) Here is an excerpt from the footnote of the Jerusalem Bible, 1977 Editions du Cerf:

<u>My English translation of the excerpt</u>	<u>The original excerpt in French</u>
For St-Paul, as for the biblical tradition, the psyche (in Hebrew: nephesh) is the vital, natural (13) principle. But who must fade (erase) before the (in Hebrew: pneuma) so that the man (or the woman) finds the divine life again. This <u>substitution</u> , which is already taking shape during mortal life by the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, will obtain its full effect after death.	Pour St-Paul comme pour la tradition biblique, la psyché (en hébreux : néphesh) est le principe vital, naturel (13). Mais qui doit s'effacer devant le (en hébreux : pneuma) pour que l'homme (ou la femme) retrouve la vie divine. Cette <u>substitution</u> qui s'ébauche déjà durant la vie mortelle par le {don de l'Esprit-Saint}, obtiendra son plein effet après la mort.

For more details about the terms "**nephesh** and **pneuma**," see chapter |35|.

Let's go back to article |29-D| for this Epistle of St-Paul.

Chart for **(1)** and **(2)**:

The form of life	The vital principle	The envelope
The human being on earth	The soul or psyche (or natural) or "nephesh"	The human body or psychic (or natural) body (1)
The {God's child} in Heaven	The spirit or "pneuma"	The spiritual body (2)

(*) the human breath is "nephesh." The {gift of the Holy Spirit} is "pneuma" or the Breath of God.

(1) Because of his trips at the Greeks, St-Paul uses the term "psychic (or **naturel**)" to talk about the human body.

(2) St-Paul says that the spiritual body is to be received at the end of time.

(3) Adam and Eve are the symbol of humanity (man).

(4) The living soul means the breath of human life. It is our mortal life on earth.

(5) The last Adam is Jesus, the Son of God

(6) This means that it is the Son of God who gives the Eternal Life (the Holy Spirit).

(7) One must first be born with a human body on earth.

(8) Then by the grace of the second (Jesus, the Son of God), we will have a spiritual body to enter the Kingdom.

(9) Here, it is our human body.

(10) Here, it is the spiritual body that we will have at the resurrection.

(11) St-Paul tries to make people of his day understand that we are not resurrecting with our human body.

(12) St-Paul talks about a Change (Transformation) from the (form of **life** we have on earth) to the (form of **Life** in the Kingdom). See chapter |10|. The Holy Spirit is the Person of God who is the "Living Bridge" connecting the 2 world/World and who executes this Change (Transformation) or Passage between the 2 forms of (life/Life).

|30-C| How to define the resurrection?

The best way to define this topic is to review basic knowledge of Christianity.

By making a simple Internet search on the word "resurrection," what do we find?

In box, here are **4 small excerpts** of the following French site:

[https://fr.wikipedia.org/wiki/R%C3%A9surrection_\(christianisme\)](https://fr.wikipedia.org/wiki/R%C3%A9surrection_(christianisme))

<u>My English translation of the excerpt</u>	<u>The original excerpt in French</u>
A) Wikipedia <u>Resurrection (Christianity)</u> (1) The word resurrection comes from the Latin "resurgere" which means to get up again, to rise again. (2) With a capital letter, the Resurrection refers to the physical passage of Jesus Christ from death, following his crucifixion, to the life manifested on the morning of Easter, the third day.	A) Wikipédia <u>Résurrection (christianisme)</u> (1) Le mot résurrection vient du latin " <i>resurgere</i> " qui signifie <i>se relever, se lever une nouvelle fois</i> . (2) Avec une majuscule, la Résurrection désigne le passage physique de Jésus-Christ de la mort, à la suite de sa crucifixion, à la vie manifestée le matin de Pâques, <i>le troisième jour</i> .

My comments:

(1) Generally, it is the passage from death to life.

(2) For Jesus, it was the passage from his human body that had died to "the form of Life that the apostles saw and recorded in the Gospels."

2nd excerpt from: [https://fr.wikipedia.org/wiki/R%C3%A9surrection_\(christianisme\)](https://fr.wikipedia.org/wiki/R%C3%A9surrection_(christianisme))

<u>My English translation of the excerpt</u>	<u>The original excerpt in French</u>
B) Wikipedia <u>Biblical meaning of the term</u> It (the resurrection) is generally designated, in the manuscripts and in the archetype in the original language, by the Greek word <i>ανάστασις</i> (<i>anastasis</i>), literally meaning "uplift (again)" or action to lift or to be lifted again, that is to say a lying position, evoking sleep, latency or abandonment,	B) Wikipédia <u>Signification biblique du terme</u> Elle (la résurrection) est généralement désignée, dans les manuscrits et dans l'archétype en langue d'origine, par le terme grec <i>ανάστασις</i> (<i>anastasis</i>), signifiant littéralement « (re)lèvement » ou action de lever ou d'être levé une nouvelle fois, c'est-à-dire à partir d'une position couchée, évoquant le sommeil, la latence ou l'abandon,

My comments:

In the box above, it is proposed different words that I will assemble:

Action of to be lifted from a lying position, evoking sleep, for once again (or for a new life).

Now, look at my testimony of my {birth of the Spirit} in article |13-D|. I was in my sleep representing the mortal state of the human being. The Breath of Life of God came into my nostrils and filled my whole body so that I may be born to a new life as a {God's child}. I can see the connection with the very definition of the resurrection! Subsequently, there were 3 days of intensive prayers connecting with the Resurrection of Christ. Then my feeling of the time was like resurrecting with Christ here on earth. For several weeks, I had the very present mark of the "seal of Jesus" in the chest that St-Paul tells. Currently, even after a year, I only have to pray more than 20 minutes for the mark to come back weakly.

<u>My English translation of the excerpt</u>	<u>The original excerpt in French</u>
C) Wikipedia <u>In nascent Christianity</u> The resurrection is therefore this object of the belief in the uplifting (raising) of the dead which was not shared by all the believers of Judaism at the time of Jesus, as the passage of (St-Matthew 22:23) shows us, for example: "That same day, some Sadducees came to find him. They claim that the dead do not resurrect. (...)" <u>Doctrinal implications</u> 1) The possibility of a miraculous return to physical life by the action of God (it is in fact the resuscitation of a terrestrial body rather than the resurrection in the proper sense of the term, see "resurrection" of Lazarus in (St-John 11,1-44). 2) The state of spiritual death of man, arising from the sin of Adam. With the example of Christ, the Resurrection represents the final victory of Life over Death as a redemptive work of Jesus for mankind. It also echoes the statements of Jesus according to which he came so that humanity may have life "in abundance" (St-John 10,10). 3) The future resurrection, properly speaking, in the last days, of the humans who will be destined either to Salvation or to Damnation.	C) Wikipédia <u>Dans le christianisme naissant</u> La résurrection est donc cet objet de la croyance au relèvement des morts qui n'était pas partagée par tous les croyants du judaïsme à l'époque de Jésus, comme nous le laisse par exemple comprendre le passage de (St-Matthieu 22,23) : « Ce même jour, des sadducéens vinrent le trouver. Ils prétendent que les morts ne ressuscitent pas. (...) » <u>Implications doctrinales</u> 1) La possibilité d'un retour miraculeux à la vie physique par l'action de Dieu (il s'agit en fait d'une réanimation d'un corps terrestre plutôt que d'une résurrection au sens propre du terme, cf. la "résurrection" de Lazare en (St-Jean 11,1-44). 2) L'état de mort spirituelle de l'homme, découlant du péché d'Adam. Avec l'exemple du Christ, la Résurrection représente la victoire finale de la Vie sur la Mort en tant qu'œuvre rédemptrice effectuée par Jésus pour le genre humain. Elle fait aussi écho aux déclarations de Jésus selon lesquelles il est venu pour que l'humanité ait la vie « en abondance » (St-Jean 10,10). 3) La future résurrection, proprement dite, lors des temps derniers, des humains qui seront destinés soit au Salut, soit à la Damnation.

My comments:

For Jews who believed in the resurrection, they imagined coming back to life again with their human body. They wanted God to remove all evil on earth. They wanted God to destroy their enemies and all demons. Then, they wanted to be resurrected from their tomb with a human body (bones, flesh and blood) so that they could finally live happily on earth as in the narrative of the Garden of Eden from which God had expelled them in the beginning. The Jews were very superstitious, some believed in reincarnation, others believed in ghosts floating everywhere. So, the Jews absolutely wanted to see the resurrection in a human way (bones, flesh and blood) otherwise he would not have wanted to follow Jesus at all.

Then God had to demonstrate to the Jews that he is the Master of all life/Life!

At the end of the 4 Gospels:

- ° Jesus Resurrects with a Special Body;
- ° Jesus can pass through the walls;
- ° Jesus can eat fish
- ° People can touch the Body of Jesus;
- ° Jesus changes his appearance to test the faith of his disciples.

4th excerpt from: [https://fr.wikipedia.org/wiki/R%C3%A9surrection_\(christianisme\)](https://fr.wikipedia.org/wiki/R%C3%A9surrection_(christianisme))

<u>My English translation of the excerpt</u>	<u>The original excerpt in French</u>
D) Wikipedia <u>Episodes reporting resurrections in the Bible</u> The Resurrection of Jesus, however, differs from these other instances of "resurrection" because for Christians, that of Christ is not a simple return to life on earth (resuscitation to a mortal life), but the transition to new life in God. According to the apostle Paul, those who will be resurrected as a result of Jesus Christ (or "in Jesus Christ") will be reborn to eternal life with a "spiritual body" different from the mortal body.	D) Wikipédia <u>Les épisodes relatant des résurrections dans la Bible</u> La Résurrection de Jésus diffère toutefois de ces autres instances de "résurrection" puisque pour les chrétiens, celle du Christ n'est pas un simple retour à la vie terrestre (réanimation à une vie mortelle), mais le passage à la vie nouvelle en Dieu. Selon l'apôtre Paul, ceux qui ressusciteront à la suite de Jésus Christ (ou « en Jésus Christ ») renaîtront à la vie éternelle avec un « corps spirituel » différent du corps mortel.

My comments:

I am asking you a question. Who comes to make Apparitions on earth for a long time? Yes, the Blessed Virgin Mary! So, since a human being from 2,000 years ago appears to us, we have proof that the process of the Last Judgment and the resurrection has been on earth for a long time!

NT	St-Luke	1,34-38	Mary said to the angel, "How can this be, since I am a virgin (1)?" The angel answered and said to her, "The Holy Spirit will come upon you, and the power of the Most High will overshadow (2) you; and for that reason the holy (3) Child (4) shall be called the Son of God. "And behold, even your relative Elizabeth has also conceived a son in her old age; and she who was called barren is now in her sixth month. "For nothing will be impossible with God." And Mary said, "Behold, the bondservant of the Lord; may it be done to me according to your word (5)." And the angel departed from her.

Some will say to explain the Apparitions of the Virgin, "It is that the human body of Mary was brought to Heaven just like that of Jesus." Impossible! Why? Only the body of Jesus was conceived (2) by the Holy Spirit with the Manifestation of the Bright Cloud. Mary has a normal human body. Some others will say, "In her Apparitions, the Virgin called herself the Immaculate Conception." See article |6-K|. Yes, that is right! She was a virgin (1). The child in her womb comes from the Will (2) of God and not from the human. She gave birth (4) to a holy child (3) who is Jesus, the Son of God. Some others will say again, "To carry Jesus, she should not have original sin." Yes, that is still true! But what is original sin? It is human disobedience, symbolized by the narrative of Adam and Eve. At the moment when a person gives his life to God to help him lead it (5), his original sin is forgiven. See article |18-C|.

Note:

For those who want to go further, I finalize the explanation for the title of the Immaculate Conception of the Blessed Virgin Mary in article 34-B .

|30-D| For us, what is our mode of resurrection?

A) Now, I who had my {birth of the Spirit}, what can I say about it?

In order to find a modern unified explanation, I will:

- ° Use the Scriptures;
- ° Add what God made me feel during my Manifestations;
- ° Assemble everything using a little science and logic.

In a modern way, what is a body? It is a support of life.

In science, although our brain has been studied in depth, none of its parts have been identified as being the consciousness. The neuropsychologists have concluded that our consciousness is not tangible, it is the result of the functioning of the nervous system of our entire body. We can then define 2 things:

- ° Our support of life (our body);
- ° Our consciousness (our thoughts) which is the fruit of the activity of our support of life (our body).

I give you the modern point of view on the human being (since the 1900s) from article | 3-D |, at point F).

Consciousness (1)	The human body (including the brain)	At the death...
The mind	The support of biological life	The consciousness is extinguished with the death of the body.

(1) Consciousness is the fruit of the activity of the body including the brain.

It is important to understand that without our body, we do not have consciousness:

Contrary to Greek mythology, we do not have a dual nature that is separable as a body and a soul. **In reality, we have a simple nature.** Our body is the real and our consciousness (our thought) is only the activity of our body. Our thought cannot exist alone, we are biological organisms. I give you an example. You are in front of a television set, the image you see on the screen depends on the activity of the television set. If you electrically disconnect the television set, the image on the screen turns off. It is the same thing here. The human body is the equivalent of a television set. The consciousness is the equivalent of the image on the television set. As, it is impossible to have an image without the television set exists and is connected, as it is also impossible to have a consciousness without the body exists and is alive.

B) During the {birth of the Spirit}, something important happens, see article | 13-D |.

When the Holy Spirit (Breath of Life and Light) enters the body through the nostrils, he fills the whole body even to the tip of the feet. Some people will say, "It is the human body that is immersed itself in the Eternal Life." Yes, I agree ... Except that there is a problem, all the human bodies of the apostles died on earth. So the answer is not enough and we must go further...

I give you my conclusion immediately before listing my 7 arguments.

The {birth of the Spirit} is a **Process**. The Breath of Life of God completely impregnates our support of life (the human body) in order to make (by an exact copy) the second support of Life, (the spiritual body).

In article | 30-B |, St-Paul says that the spiritual body is to be received. We will see that in reality, he has already received it without knowing it! St-Paul could not notice it, because the old concept of the principle of human life, which we saw in article | 3-D |, did not allow him to discover it. See also chapter | 35 |. He believed that his human body was an envelope which the Holy Spirit had Filled. St-Paul did not know that the human body is not an envelope, but that is the human body, the principle of life or the support of life!

Let's keep the logic of St-Paul:

- | |
|--|
| 1) The principle of life is "the soul." |
| 2) The Holy Spirit, by filling the interior of the human being, adds another principle of Life which is the " spirit ." |
| From a modern point of view, we know that it is the (human body) the principle of life or the support, so let's take again: |
| 1) The support of life is the "human body." |
| 2) The Holy Spirit, by filling the interior of the human being, adds another support of Life which is the " spiritual body ." |

Here are my 7 arguments:

- | |
|---|
| I give you the way I felt during the different Manifestations I had. See chapter 13 . |
| 1) During my {birth of the Spirit}, it was a different feeling from other Manifestations. Joy and Happiness were present, God showed me his Glory. Subsequently, all the other Manifestations did not have Glory (Joy, Happiness), but they were messages for this book. Before my {birth of the Spirit}, I played a bit of my electric guitar with distortion effect, which gives a hard sound. Afterwards, I became more sensitive internally (in my body) and I could not endure this effect. Then, I continued to practice without the distortion effect. I was able to put it back a little, about 6 months later, but I find it an emotionally exhausting effect. |

2) At my {birth of the Spirit}, the Light came into me and the Breath filled me completely all my body to the tiptoes. It gave me the impression of having passed in the "God's Photocopier ."
3) At my {birth of the Spirit}, I felt reborn for a new life. I felt resurrected with Christ.
4) After my {birth of the Spirit}, it is as if I discover a New World.
5) After my {birth of the Spirit}, I had the "seal of Jesus" in my chest well present about 6 weeks. Subsequently, it disappeared gradually. By cons, currently, even after a year, I can make it reappear gently and temporarily if I pray more than 20 minutes.
6) During a period of about six weeks after my {birth of the Spirit}, I felt that the people around me were mortal, but that I had eternity before me. Subsequently, this feeling is gone.
7) During a period of about four months after my {birth of the Spirit}, I really had an angel's patience, as if impatience no longer existed in me. Subsequently, I started to get a little impatient again.

An undeniable fact:

What I want to show you here is that there is a decrease in the effect of the {birth of the Spirit}, as if the human body gradually resuming what it was before. It is as if the body had been " impregnated with the Fire of the Holy Spirit" and afterwards, it was returning quietly to its previous state...
1) A bit like the "flash" of a camera that we would accidentally have in our eyes and then we see "stars" for a while.
2) A bit like a sunburn. The skin is burned and then it comes back as before.
3) A bit like if the human body was a " negative " when the Breath and the Light of the Holy Spirit pass through it in order to make the {spiritual body}.

(*) Myself being a scientist, I cannot believe it! It is a Mystery of God's Science that goes beyond anything imaginable...

NT	St-John	3,6	"That which is born of the flesh is flesh (1), and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit (2).

(1) It is our human body.

(2) It is our {spiritual body}.

The explanation is that the human body and the Breath of Life impregnate each other to make a copy: **(human body/spiritual body)**. This is why God gives the {birth of the Spirit} only **when the conversion of the person is fully completed**.

Thereafter, no one can see this {spiritual body}, because it is not in our human world, but parallel to us in the World of God. From there, the consciousness has 2 supports of life/Life.

In this way, the character of the person (which makes it is me and not another person) remains intact. Whether here on earth or later in Heaven. This explains why a {God's child} thinks differently with one eye on earth and the other in Heaven. His consciousness is now fed by 2 supports. A mortal support and an eternal support. I have also noticed on several occasions that the "seal of Jesus" in my chest reappears gently and subtly when I write this book. It would be help or inspiration.

Finally...

At the end of life on earth, the first support of life (our human body) disappears into the ground, but our consciousness continues on the second support, our {spiritual body}, which is already united to God.

The Holy Spirit is the divine Person who is the "Living Bridge between the 2 worlds/World." He has the ability to do all the Manifestations adapted to the human body that he wants: Visions, Messages, Inspiration, etc. He also has the capacity to give birth to our {spiritual body} from the impregnation of our human body. This explains the feeling of resurrection (relive) during the {birth of the Spirit}.

For an overview, see the summary chart in article | 30-E | . For the confirmation that the {spiritual body} is really there, see article | 30-F | .

| 30-E | Summary chart of our resurrection

Here are the general explanations of the chart.			
a) The 2 world/World are hermetically sealed from each other, hence the large central line of the chart below.			
b) The Holy Spirit is the Person of God who is the Living Bridge connecting the 2 world/World.			
c) The Holy Spirit Acts in both worlds, hence the absence of the central line at this place.			
d) For simplicity, the Holy Spirit is named: the Spirit .			
e) The arrows → ↑ ← ↓ represent the Action of the Spirit.			
f) The + indicate the addition of the {spiritual body} which gives to a {God's child} a partial consciousness of the reality of the New World.			
Here are the steps in the process.			
	<u>Human's world</u> form of life biological The Holy Spirit He is the (Living	<u>God's World</u> Form of Life Spiritual is everywhere Bridge)	
1) A human being (earth)	consciousness biological body		
2) God's help	consciousness biological body	← Action of the Spirit ← Action of the Spirit	Psychological help, inspiration. Miracles, healings.
3) {To be born again}	consciousness Breath and Light ← ↓ biological body →	← Action of the Spirit ↑ → {spiritual body}	<u>The {birth of the Spirit}</u> A) Beginning of the resurrection. "God's Photocopier" "Impregnation of 2 life/Life"
4) {God's child}	consciousness + biological body +	+ + {spiritual body}	It is not visible. On the other hand... the Spirit allows his Manifestation.
5) At death on earth	cons→ biological body	→ciousness {spiritual body}	Transfer of consciousness
6) In the God's Kingdom		consciousness {spiritual body}	B) Resurrection completed.

| 30-F | Confirmation that the spiritual body is actually there

Finally, I thought it would be nice to prove that my {spiritual body} is there really. But how to feel something that is not biological? So, I could not go further. The night after writing the article | 30-E |, February 5, 2017, I had a little Manifestation that I considered unimportant, but which turned out to be the key...

Here is my little Manifestation of February 5, 2017.

My testimony of article | 13-P |.

I was sleeping in the dark and I was not thinking of anything. Suddenly, I felt a weak vibration in my body, but a strong enough vibration in my face that woke me up. I recognized one of the signs of my Manifestations of the Holy Spirit as in many others. However, there was no Wind or even a message. I said to myself, "There is no message in there, what is this vibration for?" Anyway ... and I went back to sleep.

I found the answer on February 6. The Holy Spirit is a Person of God, so he is external to us. He always begins by introducing himself: "I Am the Breath (Wind, Light, etc.)." However, this Manifestation of February 5, 2017, was only in me! So what woke me up? This made me think about details in my Manifestations that I did not understand...

I am not putting any more mystery here and I am giving you the solution right now:

I begin by saying that in coming to the world on earth, no human being has any {spiritual body} in him. On the other hand, after his {birth of the Spirit}, yes, he has one! It is the Holy Spirit who makes it to be born in us by the impregnation or mixing of its Breath with our human body. This spiritual body is indeed "us" as much as our human body is. On the other hand, we cannot feel it because we are biological. It takes a special permission for (the Holy Spirit who is the Living Bridge or the Communication between the 2 world/World) to reveal it to us for a moment. This is exactly what happened, the Holy Spirit made me feel it for a moment so that I could write it for you.

It is by the comparison of all my Manifestations that I understood.

After my {birth of the Spirit}, I identified 3 main types of Manifestations:

- 1) An external Presence as the Breath only. There was no Glory (Joy, Happiness).
 - 2) Vibrations through my human body only.
 - 3) The presence of the "seal of Jesus" in my chest during the first 6 weeks. Subsequently, even after one year, I can make it reappear slowly and temporarily if I pray more than 20 minutes.
- 123) A combination of all 3 types at the same time.

In the list of 3 types. There is only in case 1) where there is an external Presence, then it is the Holy Spirit.

In cases 2) and 3), the Manifestations are only in me, then it is my {spiritual body} which is revealed to me. The Holy Spirit being the Living Bridge between the 2 world/World, it is he who allows the unveiling, but he is not introduced himself to leave all the space to my {spiritual body} so that I discover it consciously.

By cons, there was a detail that I did not understand...

Why make me strongly vibrate the face and weakly vibrate the body? I understood it only on February 8th. The Lord wanted me to make the connection with the narrative of the Transfiguration in the Gospel of St-Matthew.

NT	St-Matthew	17,1-8	Six days later Jesus took with Him Peter and James and John his brother, and led them up on a high mountain by themselves. And He was transfigured (1) before them; and His face (2) shone like the sun, and His garments became as white as light. And behold, Moses and Elijah appeared to them, talking with Him. Peter said to Jesus, "Lord, it is good for us to be here; if You wish, I will make three tabernacles here, one for You, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah." While he was still speaking, a bright cloud overshadowed (3) them, and behold, a voice (4) out of the cloud said, "This is My beloved Son, with whom I am well-pleased; listen to Him!" When the disciples heard <i>this</i> , they fell face down to the ground and were terrified (5). And Jesus came to <i>them</i> and touched them and said, "Get up, and do not be afraid (6)." And lifting up their eyes, they saw no one except Jesus Himself alone (7).

- (1) In this narrative, Jesus reveals to his 3 apostles his **Spiritual Body** in him.
- (2) Here, it is to make the link with the vibration strong enough in my face during my Manifestation of February 5, 2017.
- (3) In the Old Testament, God had not yet revealed Himself in 3 Persons. Here, the Bright Cloud is the tangible sign of God's Presence for the Jews.
- (4) It is the message of God.
- (5) In the Old Testament, the Jews feared God because they thought him a punisher.
- (6) In the New Testament, Jesus reveals a God of Love and Forgiveness.
- (7) The Holy Spirit has now **veiled** the **Spiritual Body** of Jesus. So, his disciples only see his human body.

A) The spiritual body.

In the verse (St-John: 3,6), Jesus says, "Which is born of the **Spirit** is **spirit**."

If we replace the word "**spirit**" with "**spiritual body**," it gives:

What is born of the " Spiritual Body of the Son" is the " spiritual body of the {God's child}."

It is for this reason that at the {birth of the Spirit}, there is the Manifestation of the "seal of Jesus" in the chest.

Notes:

In his Epistles, St-Paul thought that the {spiritual body} was to be received at the end of time while without knowing it, he had already received it. At the time, the point of view on the human being (with a body and a soul) did not allow for St-Paul to make this discovery. Moreover, the certainty of the existence of the devil was an obstacle to him. It is for this reason that at the very beginning of the writing of this book, I had to take stock of the subject of the devil. See chapter 18 .

The existence of the devil and eternal hell is the first "weed" inserted into Christianity. This "weed" is the bad gift of the Greeks. With the idea of the devil, the Bible is incomprehensible. Without the idea of the devil, everything becomes clear! During the history of Christianity, the second "weed" is the forgetfulness that the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is a real Manifestation. This time, it is a major problem! The gift of the Holy Spirit is the heart of Christianity. This is it that allows the unity of Christianity around the Gospels. The {gift of the Holy Spirit} is described as a tangible reality several times in the New Testament. This time, Christians still have no excuses not to see it. The greatest factor of forgetfulness is obviously the human power of royalty from the years 0300.

The first "weed" of the devil was the major cause of the witch-hunt of the 1500s.

The second "weed" of forgetting the (Spirit of Unity) has scattered Christianity. See article 2-B .

B) For the Son of God, he is begotten.

In our human body, we know that there is a progression: will (1) → breath (2) → word (3).

The comparison is the same: the Father is the Will (1) → the Holy Spirit is the Breath (2) → the Son is the Word (3).

The Eternal Source (God the Father) begets His Word (God the Son) by giving him its Breath (the Holy Spirit).

Why do we use the verb "to beget" for the Son of God? This is because the Son has always existed. God has always had a Word.

C) For a {God's child}, he is born.

See article | 30-G |. For his mission on earth, God the Father gives a **Spiritual Body** to his Son. This is from it that the **spiritual body** of a {God's child} is born. The Son shares with a {God's child} the same Breath that he receives from his Father (the Holy Spirit). The human being begins by (being born on earth) and then he has the possibility of being born as a {God's child} by uniting with God.

D) Back on my 12 Manifestations of chapter | 13 |.

1) As seen earlier, I identified 3 main types of Manifestations **after** my {birth of the Spirit}.

2) On the other hand, have you noticed that Glory (Joy, Happiness) is only present at the {birth of the Spirit}? Subsequently in all the others, there is none. In article | 30-G |, we will see the reason. But for now, I give you an overview:

There are 3 Persons in God. The Son is the one who has been **Glorified**. The Holy Spirit is the **Breath**. The Father is the **Eternal**.

During the {birth of the Spirit}, the 3 are Present. It is the "Glorious Breath of the Eternal." See article | 13-D |.

This Manifestation gives the {spiritual body} of the {God's child}.

3) After the gift of the {spiritual body}, for the other Manifestations, only the Holy Spirit is present. He is the Breath.

Then, the Holy Spirit **Breathes** into the {spiritual body} of the person **to make his messages**. It is for this reason that there is no Glory (Joy, Happiness) in all my other Manifestations of chapter | 13 |.

4) Finally, we will see in article | 32-J | that all {spiritual body} is bound and fed by the Breath of God for eternity.

If I make a comparison with our technology. It is as if during the {birth of the Spirit}, the Lord came to deposit in us a "telephone apparatus" which is our {spiritual body}. At this moment, we feel his Presence (his Glory), because the Lord is there. Afterwards, the Lord does not need to Present Himself again, he only has to make a "phone call" by the Holy Spirit (Unity) to send us a message. Then the other Manifestations are done by the Breath in our {spiritual body}. See chapter | 13 |.

Only one possibility:

With the modern science that we have, that is the only explanation. Why? Only our human body is real. Our consciousness (our thought) is not a reality, but an activity. Then the Lord has no choice but to give us another {body} fit for His Kingdom already on earth to bring us with Him.

(*) Without the detective's method presented in article | 5-F |, it would have been impossible to reach this conclusion.

E) It was so simple...

It is like the opposite of the Greek thought of the time. A person does not have an eternal soul by being born humanly on earth. No, it is through the {birth of the Spirit} that God merges with the human body, an identical {spiritual body}, but fit for his World. In the Greek thought of the time, the soul was eternal by itself and could float everywhere (a ghost) at the death of the person. In the case the eternal soul would be evil, God would have to lock it up at the end of time with his evil friend the devil in hell forever! By cons, the {spiritual body} is different. Its life is communicated to it by the Holy Spirit (the Breath of Life). See the step 6 of the chart of article | 30-E | representing the final state of a {God's child} in the Kingdom. His human body remained in the ground.

F) The community of God, a Tree of Life.

If we compare with a tree. 1) The Father is the nourishing soil. 2) The Son is the root and the trunk of the tree. 3) The children of God are the branches of the tree. 4) The Holy Spirit is the water that is taken from the soil, which changes into sap as it passes through the root and trunk to feed the branches. See article | 30-G |.

| 30-G | A human being on earth/the Holy Trinity/the mission of Jesus/a {God's child}

Now, let's take another step to understand as much as possible these mysteries.

A) For a human being on earth.

In Genesis, God says that the human is created in his Image.

So, we can compare God to a human being...

We know that a human being has:

1) An **exterior** and an **interior**.

2) A thought and a living body that is real.

I will call the thought → **the mind**.

I will call the body or the support → **the real**.

3) A communication or a **union** between his interior and his exterior. Examples: his blood, his nerve impulses, his hormones, his breath.

4) Our **will** uses our **breath** to **speak** (word).

5) Our body is **real** and has a **power** that allows it **to act**.

Here is the chart for a human being:

exterior	union	interior	
word	← breath ←	will	the mind
to act	← power ←	living body	the real

B) Now, let's make the link between the human being and the 3 Persons of God.

If we transpose the chart above with the revelations of Jesus for the Holy Trinity.

Here is the chart for God:

Exterior (The communicable, the Word)	Union (The communicable, the Breath)	Interior (The Existence)	
The Son (1) To Create (2), To Save (3)	← The Holy Spirit who transmits ← ← Strength and Life ←	The father The Eternal Source	the Mind
			the Real

They form only one individual, one God. They live here in Perfect Communion.

This chart will progress slightly in article |32-K|.

NT	St-John	1,1-4	In the beginning was the Word (1), and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was in the beginning with God. All things came into being through Him, and apart from Him nothing came into being that has come into being (2). In Him was life, and the life was the Light (3) of men.

(1) The Son, the Word. (2) To Create. (3) To Save.

C) The Son of God (Jesus) begins his mission on earth.

In order for the Son to come to teach on earth, he must become **an entire individual in himself**, it is Jesus. To do this, the Father dissociates the Son by giving him a special body. Yes, Jesus has a human body. On the other hand, Jesus shows to his Transfiguration and Resurrection that he has another "body hidden in him," his **Spiritual Body**. Jesus had 2 fused natures (**Spiritual Body/Human Body**). We also know that the Holy Spirit is the Living Bridge between the 2 world/World.

Here is the chart of the Incarnation of the Son:

	Exterior	Union	Interior	
World of God	→	↓ Holy Spirit	The Father	the Mind
In Heaven			The Eternal Source	the Real
On earth	Je-	↓	-sus	the mind
World of humans	Spiritual Body	← →	human body	the real
	His hidden nature	Union	His nature seen	

This chart will progress slightly in article |32-K|.

D) At the Resurrection of Jesus.

At the Resurrection, the human body of Jesus Resurrects. His double nature goes from:

1) (Spiritual Body/dead human body) to 2) (Spiritual Body/Resurrected human body).

During his Apparitions, Jesus completely reveals his dual nature to his disciples:

(Spiritual Body/Resurrected human body).

E) The Ascension of Jesus and his Glorification.

At the end of his mission, the Son returns to his place with the Father.

I remember to you the meaning of the word "Glorify," which means "to render God."

St-Paul gives the term "Glorious Body" for the Apparition that he saw long after the Son returned to his place with the Father. Here, I will keep his term. It must be understood that in this term, there is the following addition:

- ° The Resurrected human body;
- ° The Spiritual Body;
- ° Glorification of the Father in order to become One again in God.

In simple terms, the "Glorious Body" also has all the characteristics of the (Resurrected human body) and the (Spiritual Body) of Jesus during his mission.

Here is the new chart of the Holy Trinity After the mission of Jesus:

Exterior	Union	Interior	
The Son (the Word) Glorious Body (*)	← The Holy Spirit who transmits ← ← Strength and Life ←	The Father (the Will) The Eternal Source	the Mind the Real

(*) The Glorious Body is the "divine Reward" that the Father gave to his Son in exchange for his mission on earth, which ended in the injustice of his death on the cross while he did not commit any evil.

F1) The Holy Trinity, a great mystery that will always remain so...

But to try to understand a little more, I juxtapose the 3 charts.

1) Here is the chart we have for a human being:

exterior	union	interior	
word to act	← breath ← ← power ←	will living body (1)	the mind the real

(1) It is the living body of the human being.

2) Here is the chart of the (Holy Trinity) that we had **Before** the mission of Jesus:

Exterior (The communicable, the Word)	Union (The communicable, the Breath)	Interior (The Existence)	
The Son To Create, To Save	← The Holy Spirit who transmits ← ← Strength and Life ←	The Father The Eternal Source (1)	the Mind the Real

(1) For God, the equivalent of our human body is the (Eternal Source).

3) Here is the new chart of the (Holy Trinity) that we have **After** the mission of Jesus:

Exterior	Union	Interior	
The Son (the Word) Glorious Body (2)	← The Holy Spirit who transmits ← ← Strength and Life ←	The Father (the Will) The Eternal Source (1)	the Mind the Real

(2) The Glorious Body is the "divine Reward" that the Father has given to his Son.

From the last two charts of the (Holy Trinity), **do you see anything special?**

The Holy Trinity now has **2 Bodies**:

- (1) The Eternal Source of the Father.
- (2) The Glorious Body of the Son. The Son draws his Life from the Eternal Source of the Father.

We see here that God is much more than an individual as we can imagine him. He is a Complete Whole. Both the Self and the Other forming the We.

If we make a concordance with the first 4 personal pronouns:

1st person singular	I	The Father	The Self	The internal
2nd person singular	You	The Son	The Other	The external
3rd person singular	He	The Holy Spirit	The One who Unites	The cohesion
1st person plural	We	God	The Unity of the Self and the Other forming one God	The whole

God (We)			
External (You)	Union (He)		Internal (I)
The Son (the Word) Glorious Body (2)	← The Holy Spirit who transmits ← ← Strength and Life ←		The Father (the Will) The Eternal Source (1)
			the Mind the Real

F2) For the birth of the human being on earth.

Here is the chart:

1 individual

consciousness
human body

G) For the event of the {birth of the Spirit} on earth.

1) Here is the chart:

1 individual who is a {God's child}

GOD, an Individual in 3 Persons

{spiritual body} ←	consciousness	←	Son (Word)	Holy Spirit who transmits	Father (Will)
	human body		Glorious Body	← The Breath	the Eternal Source
His hidden nature	His nature seen				

Glorious Body = (Spiritual Body/Resurrected human body) Glorified by the Father.

This explains why human conversion must be fully completed before the {birth of the Spirit}.
This explains why the Christian must give his life to God. This is to establish unity.
This explains the intense sensation of the Glorious Breath of the Eternal during the {birth of the Spirit}.
This explains the feeling of having already resurrected with Jesus Christ on earth.
This explains the Manifestation of the seal of Jesus in the chest. It is the presence of the {spiritual body}.

NT	St-John	5,26-27	"For just as the Father has life in Himself, even so He gave to the Son also to have life in Himself; and He gave Him authority to execute judgment, because He is <i>the</i> Son of Man.

(1) Here, it is the Son who **gives** the Breath of Eternal Life **or not** for the Last Judgment.

NT	St-John	14,22-23	Judas (not Iscariot) said to Him, "Lord, what then has happened that You are going to disclose Yourself to us and not to the world?" Jesus answered and said to him, "If anyone loves Me, he will keep My word; and My Father will love him, and We (1) will come to him and make Our abode with him (2).

(1) The Father (the Eternal), the Holy Spirit (the Breath), the Son (the Glorious). It is for this reason (the Glorious Breath of the Eternal) during the {birth of the Spirit}, because the 3 Persons of God are Present. There is not only the Holy Spirit (the Breath). Here, the Holy Spirit (the Breath, the Carrier) brings to a human being, the Presence of the Father (the Eternal) and the Son (the Glorified).

(2) This can be seen, among other things, by the "seal of Jesus" in the chest.

2) We also see the link with the miracle of the multiplication of the loaves of Jesus.

NT	St-John	16,14	"He (1) will glorify Me, for He will take of Mine (2) and will disclose <i>it</i> to you (3).

(1) The Holy Spirit. (2) The Body of the Son is multiplied. (3) For give the {spiritual body} of a {God's child}.

This explains my 2 Eucharistic Manifestations at the Sunday mass. They were for the "memorial of the communion" to 1) the Body and to 2) the Blood of Jesus Christ. See article | 13-G |.

NT	St-Luke	22,19-20	And when He had taken <i>some</i> bread <i>and</i> given thanks, He broke it and gave it to them, saying, "This is My body which is given for you; do this in remembrance of Me." And in the same way <i>He took</i> the cup after they had eaten, saying, "This cup which is poured out for you is the new covenant in My blood.
	St-John	6,52-57	Then the Jews <i>began</i> to argue with one another, saying, "How can this man give us <i>His</i> flesh to eat?" So Jesus said to them, "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless you eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink His blood, you have no life in yourselves. "He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood has eternal life, and I will raise him up on the last day. "For My flesh is true food, and My blood is true drink. "He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood abides in Me, and I in him. "As the living Father sent Me, and I live because of the Father, so he who eats Me, he also will live because of Me.

3) For readers who want to go further, I give you an excerpt from St-Paul already reported in article | 20-E | and I add some details related to the chart above.

NT	Epistle of St-Paul to the Colossians	3,1-4	Therefore if you have been raised up with Christ (1), keep seeking the things above, where Christ is, seated at the right hand of God. Set your mind on the things above, not on the things that are on earth. For you have died (2) and your life is hidden (3) with Christ in God. When Christ, who is our life, is revealed, then you also will be revealed with Him in glory.

(1) St-Paul tells his followers that their resurrection is already done through Christ's Resurrection (by the birth of the Spirit).

(2) See article | 20-E | for this detail.

(3) Here, St-Paul was looking for the {spiritual body}, yet he had already received it! Unfortunately, the way of thinking of the time did not allow him to discover it.

In chapter | 13 |, the feeling of having resurrected with Christ 3 days after our {birth of the Spirit} is not our own feeling, but that of the Resurrected One (Christ), there are 2,000 years ago. This is why we become the witness of the Resurrection of Jesus on earth.

There are 3 states:

- ° Without human life (dead);
- ° Human life;
- ° Eternal Life.

If we define the resurrection as the direct passage from 1) human death to 3) Eternal Life, then there is only Christ who Resurrects and not us.

For us, we are {born again} on earth through the Resurrection of Christ. This is the reception of the {spiritual body}.

After the death of our human body, the Holy Spirit activates or "Blows" into our {spiritual body} for eternity. On earth, the {spiritual body} of a {God's child} can be Manifested by the Action of the "Breath" of the Holy Spirit. In chapter | 13 |, my {spiritual body} had already Manifested itself several times without my knowing it. The Lord only wanted to make it known to me at my 12th Manifestation of article | 13-P |.

On the other hand, if we define the resurrection as the passage from 2) human life to the 3) purely spiritual Life in the Kingdom of God. So this is a process that begins with the {birth of the Spirit} on earth and ends after the death of the human body.

So, take the definition of resurrection you want, but the reality remains the same. We need a human body to live on earth (our world). We also need a {spiritual body} to live in the Spiritual World of God. This is the reason for (St-John: 3,5) states that we must {be born of the Spirit} to see the Kingdom of God.

H) In abbreviated form.

At the {birth of the Spirit}, by the Breath of Life (the Holy Spirit), the Glorious Body of the Son gives birth to the human body of the person, his {spiritual body}.

This explains why the Son holds the Last Judgment. He gives birth to the spiritual body of the person by the Breath that passes through his Glorious Body. He gives his Bread of Life for those saved.

I) At the death of a {God's child}

The human body dies in the ground, but the {spiritual body} is always united by the Holy Spirit through the Body of the Son.

J) Union in the World of God.

1) Here is the chart:

1 individual, a {God's child}			GOD, an Individual in 3 Persons	
consciousness {spiritual body}		union	The Son (the Word) Glorious Body	Father (the Will) the Eternal Source
NT	St-John	17,21	that they may all be one; even as You, Father, <i>are</i> in Me and I in You, that they also may be in Us,	
	1st Epistle of St-Paul to the Corinthians	12,12	For even as the body is one and <i>yet</i> has many members, and all the members of the body, though they are many, are one body, so also is Christ.	

In short, the {God's children} are so united that they are like the many members of the Glorious Body of the Son.

In the Kingdom of God, it must be understood that for a {God's child} to have his own personality, he must have his own {spiritual body} which is the spiritual copy of his human body. The Son being the only one to have a **Body Merged with God** by His Glorification, the Breath of Life that He gives us passes through His Glorious Body. It is for this reason that St-Paul makes a comparison with the human body and its many limbs (arms, legs, etc.).

2) Here is the chart of several individuals in the Kingdom of God. They all share the same Breath of Life drawn from the Eternal Source of the Father.

In the Kingdom

The individuals:

Consciousness (John) {spiritual body} (3)	↑ Breath of Life ↓	GOD, an Individual in 3 People		
Consciousness (Paul) {spiritual body} (3)		Son (Word) Glorious Body (2)	Holy Spirit (Breath) who transmits Strength and Life (4)	Father (Will) Eternal Source (1)
Consciousness (Mark) {spiritual body} (3)				

Recall of article |30-F|:

D) The Tree of Life.

If we compare with a tree. (1) The Father is the nourishing soil. (2) The Son is the root and the trunk of the tree. (3) The children of God are the branches of the tree. (4) The Holy Spirit is the water that is taken from the soil, which changes into sap as it passes through the root and trunk to feed the branches.

The chart above gives the union and harmony of God with his spiritual beings. Each of the spiritual beings is unique and has his own personality. On the other hand, his life is fed by the Breath of Life of God. They all live in perfect relationship with God and others.

In other words, God and his spiritual beings form a Living Community. See also article |32-K|.

3) Each of the spiritual beings in the Kingdom has its own identity and is autonomous even though it is united with God.

NT	St-Luke	1,18-20	Zacharias said to the angel, "How will I know this <i>for certain</i> ? For I am an old man and my wife is advanced in years." The angel answered and said to him, " I am Gabriel, who stands in the presence of God , and I have been sent to speak to you and to bring you this good news. "And behold, you shall be silent and unable to speak until the day when these things take place, because you did not believe my words , which will be fulfilled in their proper time."

(*) Here we see that the angel Gabriel is autonomous. God gave him all the powers necessary to carry out his mission.

K) Some comparatives with our world.

If we observe the universe and nature on Earth, we discover that this union and this harmony are present everywhere:

- 1) We see it through our solar system that works without the planets colliding.
- 2) We also see it in the equilibrium of each atom (proton, neutron, electron).
- 3) We see it in the ecosystem that has been functioning for 4 billion years. All the lives of beings on Earth (plants, animals, etc.) are united and harmonized (photosynthesis, water cycle, etc.).
- 4) We see it through the human body. Although it is made up of billions of individual cells, it is their unity and harmony that allows them to maintain overall health. It is the **blood** that allows each **living** cell to be supplied with **food** and **oxygen**.

NT	St-John	6,53	So Jesus said to them, "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless you eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink His blood , you have no life in yourselves.

(*) Would Jesus be the first biologist on Earth?

By thinking about it...

2,000 years before the observations of our modern science, a man was walking in sandals in the desert teaching us the basics of harmony and life. Who could he be but the Son of God?

L) Without union and harmony, what happens?

1) Let's look in our society:

War kills humans and pollution kills nature.

2) Let's look at biology:

A cancer is defined as a group of living cells that disunites from the whole (the body). Harmony is broken and the body self-destructs. This disease is most often associated with stress and pollution.

We see that without union and harmony, life does not last long. So for Life to be Eternal in the Kingdom of God, it is logical that union and harmony must be **Perfect**.

|30-H| What is the mode of Resurrection of Jesus?

Jesus being the Incarnation of the Son of God on earth, we will not be able to go far in understanding the mystery. He took the "Carrier" of the Holy Spirit to come to earth. Later, he took up the "Carrier" of the Holy Spirit to return to his Father. Jesus is one of the 3 Persons of God. Scientists already have great difficulty understanding the reality of our biological human life, so imagine trying to understand the Reality of the Spiritual Life of God!

We must understand that our resurrection to us is very little compared to the "fireworks" of the Resurrection of Jesus. God wanted to prove to the incredulous humans that it is he who has all the powers over all life/Life.

However, I will write the information I have. The model will be simple, but it will give a satisfactory idea of the Power of God.

Let's go!

A) There are 2 types of body: 1) the human body of Jesus and 2) the Spiritual Body of Jesus.

From article |10-E|. The Living Bridge, the Holy Spirit has all the Power.

As the Holy Spirit can veil (**in our eyes**) or not the Spiritual Body of Jesus, he can veil or not his human body just as easily.

I give you the proof...

NT	Acts of the Apostles	8,38-40	And he ordered the chariot to stop; and they both went down into the water, Philip as well as the eunuch, and he baptized him. When they came up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord snatched Philip away; and the eunuch no longer saw him , but went on his way rejoicing. But Philip found himself at Azotus , and as he passed through he kept preaching the gospel to all the cities until he came to Caesarea.

(*) The Holy Spirit made the apostle Philip disappear in one place and made him reappear in another place.

I use the following 2 words:

To unveil	In the sense of making visible or appearing to our 5 senses.
To veil	In the sense of making non-visible or disappearing to our 5 senses.

(*) It is a bit like a veil on an object. We can put a veil on an object or remove it, but the reality of the object is still there underneath.

B) Now, I make a comparison between a {God's child} and the Son of God.

1) A {God's child}.

I was born with my human body in the year 1970. I am {born of the Spirit} in the year 2016. My {spiritual body} is **veiled**, it does not manifest itself. On the other hand, my {spiritual body} can be **unveiled** during some of my Manifestations by the Power of the Holy Spirit. See chapter |13|.

2) Jesus on earth

On earth, Jesus has 2 natures: a Spiritual Body and a human body.

His human body was born in the year 0000 and his Spiritual Body is not visible, it is **veiled**. On the other hand, his Spiritual Body can be **unveiled** as in the narrative of the Transfiguration by the Power of the Holy Spirit.

After his Resurrection, the human body of Jesus can be **veiled** since he passes through the walls and then **unveiled**, because he can eat fish (St-Luke: 24,36-43).

C) Here is a small summary chart:

The chart below gives a simple, visual and modern explanation of God's Power.

The 2 Body/body are in coexistence from the human conception of the Son (Jesus).

Mission of the Son (Jesus) on earth			
Actions of the Holy Spirit: To veil or to unveil. Other Manifestations (↓, →, ↑).			
#	Spiritual Body of the Son	human body of the Son	Description of the mission
1)	unveiled ↓ (the Bright Cloud)	none	The Spirit comes to put the Son on earth.
2)	veiled	unveiled → conception	The Incarnation of the Son, the birth.
3)	veiled	unveiled	Jesus who teaches the crowds.
4)	unveiled	unveiled	The Transfiguration of Jesus on the mountain.
5)	veiled	unveiled	Jesus at the last meal with his apostles.
6)	veiled	unveiled, the body dies	Human death of Jesus on the cross.
7)	unveiled, see the note (a)	unveiled → to relive	Resurrection of Jesus on the third day.
8)	veiled	veiled	(St-John: 20,26) Jesus who passes through the walls.
9)	veiled	unveiled	(St-John: 20,27) Thomas touches the body of Jesus.
10)	unveiled	unveiled	The Apparitions of Jesus with a special Body.
11)	unveiled	unveiled ↑	The Ascension of Jesus in the heavens (sky).

(a) The Light of the Resurrection left an imprint in the "Shroud of Turin." See article |30-I|.

|30-I| Conclusion on the resurrection

A) The human body of Jesus is the only one to have been deposited on earth by the Holy Spirit.

The direct Resurrection with the body is only for Jesus. The imprint as a "negative" of the "Shroud of Turin" is explained by the Great Light of the Resurrection of Jesus.

Internet Keywords	1) Turin Shroud may have been created by earthquake from time of Jesus.
	2) 2014, the new dating (average of 0033) of the Shroud of Turin revives the debate.
	2) 2014, la nouvelle datation (moyenne de 0033) du Linceul de Turin relance le débat.

Jesus Appeared for 40 days. Afterwards, Jesus had his Ascension and Glorification with his Father to become again one of the 3 Persons of God, the Son.

B) But for our resurrection, it is different.

We have not been deposited here on earth from the World of God like Jesus. We must {be born with a spiritual body} that is "modeled or fused" on our human body. Subsequently, our human body that comes from here dies here. Finally, when we die, our consciousness moves on our {spiritual body}.

See the summary chart in article | 30-E |.

C) Finally.

Moreover, human death, like the death of animals and plants, is part of nature on earth and everyone simply passes through it. **There is nothing wrong with that.** So for a human being, not having the Reward of Eternal Life does not take anything away from him, because God has already given him a human life. **It is a free inheritance that every human being spends as he pleases...**

Now to have more, Jesus asks us to make an effort and follow his Way...

| 30-J | What is the Kingdom of God?

A) Jesus does not use the term "paradise" which means "garden."

He uses the term Kingdom of God. It simply means the Eternal Life in the World of God who is Perfect (without any evil). Jesus talks about a banquet, so a place where God gives generously. At my birth of the Spirit, I felt for a moment that I was living in the Presence of God, it is a feeling of Happiness and Peace unimaginable humanly. Only 20 minutes of his Presence in me and I stopped being constantly bored of his Presence only 6 weeks later!

B) What do we know about the Kingdom of God?

The Kingdom of God is, of course, in his Image...

- 1) God is without any evil (Holy).
- 2) Beings are free to do all good they want (like their Creator).
- 3) God is a loving parent.
- 4) God is Humble and Sweet of Heart.
- 5) God wants to be in a relationship with his children and is generous with his Life.

C) What is not the Kingdom of God...

The image of some (Christian movements) that see God sitting on a Throne of Glory with his chosen people in "perpetual admiration" in front of him **is not realistic at all!** Where does this idea come from? Surely when the emperor Constantine legalized Christianity. We know that emperors always need faithful subjects who admire them and sing praises to them all day long!

Some people have even falsely thought that we will no longer have a personality of our own, because we will only do the "Will of the Father." **It is still unrealistic!** The "Will of the Father" is to do good and not evil. It is not at all about being puppets, because we would already be puppets on earth whereas many human beings are doing their little lives and not caring for God at all. This idea of the king and puppets obviously still come from the emperors who have always lived on earth.

You see how difficult it is to take away our preconceived ideas. When Jesus spoke of doing the "Will of the Father," the message was twofold:

- 1) Jesus was on a mission on earth and had to follow exactly the instructions of the Father to succeed, because humanly he would not have succeeded alone.

2) Now we can see the "Will of the Father" in a very broad sense as being "Absolute Knowledge."

In concrete terms, to do "the Will of the Father" is simply that a person does not do evil, but all good **that he wants to do**.

D) Why is there no evil in the Kingdom of God?

Here is a small simple chart:

(1)	(2)	(3)		(4)
Kingdom of God	Choice of God	God	Absolute Knowledge of God	Domain
Angels and {God's children}	Good ← Union →	The Father	(Filtration of God) Extraction of possibilities ← of good only	All possibilities
		The Holy Spirit		
		The Son		

In this chart, it is important to understand that the Kingdom of God is only the column (1).

The Kingdom of God is a **world chosen** by God where evil does not exist.

It must be understood that God is external to every world he creates. I give you an example:

A cabinetmaker works in a workshop. There is (the cabinetmaker), and there is (his workshop). I am comparing here:

There is **God** (the cabinetmaker) and the **Domain** (his workshop).

Now, let's look at the columns from right (4) to left (1):

In column (4), it is the Domain (the Workshop of God). In the Domain, all possibilities coexist.

In Column (3), God has the Absolute Knowledge in order to filter the Domain and extract the possibilities of good only.

In Column (2), God is united to his spiritual beings by his Breath (the Holy Spirit).

In column (1), there are only the possibilities of good which exist in the Kingdom of God.

In the Kingdom of God, there is no possibility of evil. Why? This is because the beings who dwell there live in the Presence of God having the Absolute Knowledge in order to do only good. It is for this reason that God asks us on earth to choose good and to give him our life so that he helps us to lead it.

E) Do those who do not choose God have punishment?

No, it must be understood that the Kingdom of God is a Reward of God and not an obligation. On earth, God asks us to make a choice. He does not punish us because we do not make the same choice as he does, otherwise it would be a dictatorship that is contrary to His Holiness.

F) What will we do in the Kingdom of God?

To be finally happy!

So do not miss it for all the gold in the world!

| 31 | To unite science and the Bible

After my {birth of the Spirit}, as a New World had just opened up to me and the catechesis that (I had received) did not really agree with this reality, I started a search...

I tried to unite the basic knowledge in science and the Bible.

As a good scientist, I had to explain everything in a coherent way.

Let's go!

| 31-A | Here is the information I used:

- ° The experience of my Manifestations of the Spirit of chapter | 13 |;
- ° The modern sciences (physics, biology, psychology);
- ° The Symbolic texts of Genesis outlining God's Plan for humanity;
- ° The main texts of the prophets;
- ° The Gospels;
- ° The Acts of the Apostles;
- ° The Epistles.

| 31-B | Man needs to know...

A) Here is a list of some questions we all ask ourselves:

- ° What are we doing on Earth?
- ° Who is God the Creator?
- ° Who are Satan and the devil?
- ° What is hell?
- ° Who are angels?
- ° Why Creation?
- ° What is the universe?
- ° Why plants and animals on earth?
- ° Why is man so different from animals?
- ° Why is the human being material while God is immaterial?
- ° Why God is Eternal and the human being is mortal?

B) I had to start my research somewhere...

So, I started by taking a look at the catechisms of some Christian movements that are more than 500 years old.

I can tell you that their explanations are a **little terrifying!** I do not ask readers to check their websites. For those who are curious, I give here some useful Internet keywords.

Internet Keywords	The soul. The flesh. I believe in Eternal Life. The particular judgment. The Heaven. The final purification. The Purgatory. The hell. The Last Judgment. The hope of the new heavens and the new earth.

Looking at these basics, I quickly encountered 2 insurmountable problems:

- 1) Jesus Christ does not talk about any final purification or even of a "purgatory."
- 2) The eternal soul that a human being (would have) when he comes into the world on earth is contrary to the revelations of Jesus Christ. This idea did not come from the Jews, but from the Greeks.

So I couldn't go any further in that direction...

C) A little bit of modernism please!

I told myself that during my {birth of the Spirit}, I was so well! God is so Good and Perfect! I can tell you that when we experience the Presence of God, we can only love Him, see article |13-D|.

So, I had to discover a model in the image of God and not of humans...

The Lord deserves a model according to his Qualities!

|31-C| The little story of the model

A) A model so complex ... that we do not understand anything.

Contrary to what people think, making a complex model is very easy. A complex model is only a patching up of (ready-made sentences) with a bunch of exceptions. ***So that's not what I did...***

B) A simple model.

On the other hand, to make a simple, complete and logical model requires a colossal work, here nearly 3,000 hours.

Since my basic training is in science (physics, biology, psychology), I also had to study the Bible in detail. Throughout the discovery of the model that I will soon present, I used the detective's method described at the beginning of the book in article |5-F| to ensure a consistent result.

I asked the Lord to give me signs if the model has problems. The Lord began by sending me a message in the middle of the night, see article |13-I|. Subsequently, I had several additional Manifestations to carry out this book, see chapter |13|.

I can assure you that this book was actually written under the Lord's supervision, for I even had some help on parts of the book when I did not ask for anything! **Yes, it is his book and he is participating in it.** See article |13-Q|. Look closely at the way this book is written and you will see that it is not really human. The Manifestations that I had, arrived at the right moment in the writing to give what is missing. This book proves itself, because it is in direct concordance with the Bible and the discoveries of science.

| 32 | The modern model

| 32-A | Before to begin

See article | 28-G |.

The model is very simple, but it took a long time to find. Why? It was necessary to clean up old Christian concepts. Before discovering the "little flower," it was necessary to remove the "weeds" first. The greatest "weed" was the idea of the existence of the devil as a real and supernatural being. See chapter | 18 |. With the devil, we are on earth in the middle of a war between the Forces of Good and Evil, a real horror movie! ***Without the devil, a simple and coherent model takes shape...***

| 32-B | Basics of the model

The simple and logical model that I present here is made from:

Article	Description
32-C	Basic notions of physics.
32-D	Basic notions of biology.
32-E	Basic notions of psychology.
32-F	Essential notions of the Wisdom of God.
32-G	Extraction of superstitions from the Bible which come mainly from Greek myths.
32-H	Basics of the Bible.
32-I	The revelations of St-Paul and the experience of my (Manifestations of the Spirit) of chapter 13 .

| 32-C | Basic notions of physics

Before the Big Bang, there was nothing, neither matter (material), nor time. It was nothingness.

We see the immaterial and timeless nature of God.

The Big Bang was not a common explosion without control. Physicists say that this event was of unimaginable surgical precision.

We see the Power of God and his Perfection.

After the Big Bang, the energy was so dense (immense heat) that the matter (material) took 10 thousand years to form.

We still see the Power of God and his immaterial side.

Between the Big Bang and the formation of Earth, there was a lapse of about 10 billion years.

We see the Patience of God for things to happen in his time.

| 32-D | Basic notions of biology

By the "fire of the Big Bang," the universe and Earth are totally sterile (lifeless). The miracle of life appeared on Earth and the Creation took 4 billion years.

We see that God is the Source of life. He is the Creator of everything. He has unimaginable Patience, Intelligence, and Knowledge.

(*) We can make the connection with the first narrative of Creation in Genesis (Bible).

For 4 billion years, nature worked well alone (without mankind). Earth and nature form the garden of God. Plants and animals ensure the harmonious functioning of nature. Nature has its own life that reproduces, spreads and regulates itself, it is the ecosystem. Biological life on Earth is autonomous without God.

God intervenes very rarely and very singularly in nature through little miracles here and there. God created the biological life from the inert matter (sterile) of the soil.

(*) We can make the connection with Adam's breath of life in the second narrative of Creation in Genesis (Bible).

The human is the last living being created on Earth, only 35 thousand years ago. The human is a host (a beneficiary) who does not participate in the functioning of nature (animals, trees, plants, insects, etc.).

God is life and let his creation have a free life without him.

(*) We can see the link with the Garden of Eden in the second narrative of Creation in Genesis (Bible).

The human being has a sealed genetic code of about 25 thousand genes. The human being has been created as he is today. His body does not have the capacity to evolve biologically alone without his Creator. He was born innocent and has increased his knowledge and skills (his education) until now.

The human has a higher intelligence than animals and does not see himself as an animal.

(*) We see the link with God who creates the human in his image in the first narrative of Creation in Genesis (Bible).

| 32-E | Basic notions of psychology

All living beings are created or born free in their world.

This is the basic law of God's freedom for his living beings.

1) First, a being is created or born in his world.

2) Subsequently, it (or he) lives there, freely in the realities of his world.

(*) It is important to understand that before the creation or birth of a living being, the concept of freedom does not apply to it (or him). Obviously, we cannot ask the opinion of a being that does not exist yet to create it.

The human is the only living being on earth with self-awareness.

Therefore, the human is the only one capable of making a choice of life (good or evil).

The human brain is very complex. The human is aware of 20% of what is happening in his head. The remaining 80% is simply its internal functioning to ensure its biological life.

The human is fundamentally a being of relationship and happiness. The human brain is fundamentally psychosexual.

For the human being, the notion of (good and evil) comes mainly from what the baby has felt during the construction of his brain. See chapter | 16 |. Good is associated with pleasure, evil is associated with suffering. On the other hand, in the Bible, the Son of God has stated very different criteria on this subject.

The notion of (good and evil) is different for humans and for God.

The human being is born innocent and he needs parents to meet his needs and for his education. The human being without education is not able to be in a harmonious relationship with others. We see the connection with the narrative of Moses where God gives His Laws to the people over (good and evil) in the book of Exodus.

God is a Parent who educates humans.
The human has the freedom to do (good or evil).
God invites the human to make the same choice as Him, so to do only good.

|32-F| Essential notions of the Wisdom of God

We know that for God, the following link is direct:

To do good that God asks means: living eternally with him.

(*) Then God, who is Perfectly Good, does not finance for long the life of the beings who do evil (his adversaries).

We also know that God is a Good Parent. I give you an example:

You have 2 children, a girl and a boy of 6 years old. The girl has a \$10 doll. The boy breaks his sister's doll. What are you doing?

A) You punish the boy and repair the broken doll of the girl.

B) You give a gift to each child. The boy receives the broken doll and the girl receives a nice new doll of \$20.

→ The solution B) is wiser, because it teaches a lesson to the one who does evil and rewards the one who does good.

God is a Good Parent. It is wiser to reward the child who does good than to punish the one who does evil.

|32-G| Extraction of superstitions from the Bible which come mainly from Greek myths

We know that:

1) Satan. He is not a real being, but the great symbol of every adversary of God.

2) The devil. He is the great symbol of the Tempter. This actor as a "supernatural being of Evil" does not exist in a tangible or concrete way. In reality, he is an (imaginary being) that man used to put his own faults on him. He is a "personification" associated with our fears (in our head). On the other hand, **he really exists** as a "**psychic and natural actor**" who leads us to (biological) human death.

3) The Garden of Eden. This garden is actually, Earth. The human was born on Earth and God created him with the same body that he has right now. The human body is good. The human is not a fallen being and driven out of a "Paradise" in times past, due to the original sin. The original sin is not a condition of the human body. The original sin is simply the "human desire to lead one's life alone" without the help of God who holds the Absolute Knowledge in order to do only good. The original sin is not associated with sexuality because it is a natural human need to transmit life. Like any reality on Earth, sexuality can be expressed in (good) like in (evil). On Earth, every human being always makes his choice of action in (good or evil).

4) The soul. Falsely interpreted by the Greeks as the eternal human consciousness. In reality, for the Jews of the time of Jesus, the soul was only the (biological and mortal) breath of life of the human. The eternal soul does not exist. On the other hand, the human consciousness is the result (or the fruit) of the activity of the body and is extinguished with it (mortal).

5) The eternal hell. This is the place to put the devil and the (evil eternal souls). As the devil and the eternal soul do not exist, the eternal hell is useless and does not exist either. Some theologians say that the idea of the eternal hell would not come out of a Greek myth, but of a Germanic myth.

6) Judgment (of the Father). Humans are condemned to die on earth for evil they do. In reality, there is only God who is Perfectly Good. The human is created with an autonomous human life without God. Genetically, the human has

been created like this since the beginning, 35,000 years ago. Deprived of the Presence of God, he does not have the capacity to do only good. Judaism of the Old Testament loved the idea of a punishing and vengeful God who delivered Judgments. Jesus revealed instead that God does not punish anyone. We know that biological death is the natural condition of all beings who live on earth.

7) The Last Judgment (of the Son). Jesus will return to Judge the Living and the dead at the end of time. The expression "at the end of time" actually means "in his time, when God will decide it" and not at the end of anything. Jesus said his role was not to judge the human being, but to save him. Jesus said that God is not the God of the dead, but of the Living. Jesus talks about the necessity of a {new birth} on earth. St-Paul says that the person who has received the Breath of Life from God is already resurrected with Christ. I confirm that I had this Breath of Life on (March 14, 2016), and I felt {to be born again}, even resurrected with Christ. The Last Judgment is always in the present, now.

8) Jesus did not come to earth to forgive everyone's sins. No, only those who have recognized Jesus as their Master and Savior will be forgiven.

9) God is so Good that he will save everyone. No, there are 2 legacies.

A) That of a beautiful life without worrying about the Truth and evil that we do on earth.

B) That of following the Way of Jesus seeking the Truth and doing good. A life that begins with the {birth of the Spirit} and continues in the Kingdom of God.

10) Eternal Life is for everyone. No, Jesus talks about the worker in the vineyard of his Father. Eternal Life is not due for all human beings, but it is a great reward given to the {God's children}.

| 32-H | Basics of the Bible

There is only one Divinity (God).

God is the Creator and gives life. His name is **the Eternal**.

God is Eternal, Timeless, Immaterial. He is qualified as → Spiritual (Spirit).

God is Holy (without any evil). It is his choice since eternity.

God alone holds the Absolute Knowledge of good and evil.

The human being who does good draws his actions from his good inner self. The human being who does evil draws his actions from his bad inner self. It is up to us human beings to make our choice of action. To do the least evil possible, we must make the prescriptions of Jesus in the Gospels and put our life in the hand of God.

God is Eternally Autonomous. God is external to the worlds he creates.

God created 2 worlds: 1) the Heaven and 2) the earth.

The world of Heaven is described as spiritual, like angels. See article | 34-C |.

The world of earth is described as biological, like humans.

The human was created on earth in the image of God.

At his human death, a {God's child} will have a body shape similar to an angel.

An angel is not a {God's child} and conversely, a {God's child} is not an angel.

God is Trinitarian. He presents himself as One Immaterial Individual composed of 3 Persons. There is the Will (the Father), the Breath (the Holy Spirit) and the Word (the Son).

The Word of God has been humanly Incarnated on earth (Jesus Christ).

Jesus says that he is only making the Will of his Father (to do only good).

On earth, Jesus is called the "Son of man."

On earth, Jesus has a human body. He is dead and then Resurrected. He had his Ascension and then his Glorification.

After his mission on earth, Jesus is revealed as the "Son of God."

The Son of God is the only Way in order to make from a (human being), a {God's child}.

At the Transfiguration of Jesus and then at his Resurrection, the Spiritual Body of Jesus is unveiled.

In Heaven, the {God's children} are revealed to Live in Union with the Son who himself is in Union with the Father.

The Father has the power to give Life. The Father also gave the Son the power to give Life in his turn.

God gives his graces on earth to both good and bad people.

God Forgive a person if he forgives others as well.

| 32-I | The revelations of St-Paul and the experience of my Manifestations of the Spirit

A) The revelations of St-Paul.

St-Paul makes the revelation that the (biological) human body does not resurrect. A {God's child} will live eternally United to the Life of God. St-Paul talks about a {spiritual body} to be received and that is fit for the World of God. I confirm that the {spiritual body} actually exists from the {birth of the Spirit}. See chapter | 30 |. St-Paul writes that the Life of a {God's child} is linked to the Body of Christ (the Son).

B) From my Manifestations of the Spirit of chapter | 13 |.

My Manifestations of the Spirit bring confirmation in 2017 that the Bible is truthful.

It is obvious that my testimonies contain more details than the Scriptures, because I lived them personally.

My Manifestations of the Spirit and their concordances with the Scriptures are the proofs of:

- 1) The reception of the {spiritual body} for the Kingdom of God is done on earth during the {birth of the Spirit}.
- 2) The Last Judgment is on earth now and since the day of Pentecost of the apostles.

| 32-J | The "pivot point" of the model

I used the detective's method of article | 5-F | to find a simple model linking all the information. I spare you all the synthesis work....

The bases of the articles | 32-C to 32-I | are too numerous to process them in a linear way (one after the other).

To get the solution, I had to find what I call in science: the "pivot point." When we found the "pivot point," the whole solution assembly hinges around it.

I give you an example for solving a puzzle:

- ° The "pivot point" is: the 4 corner pieces;
- ° Subsequently, we must assemble the pieces forming the outer borders;
- ° Subsequently, we must assemble individual motifs: the sky, the lake, the trees, the animals, etc.;
- ° Finally, we finish the general assembly with the remaining parts.

Before starting...

1) To make the model as tangible as possible, I must first tell you a useful little story.

A very experienced cabinetmaker works in his workshop. In his workshop, there are: planks, nails, glue, paint, stripper, hammer, knife, saw, emery paper. All these objects are necessary for the cabinetmaker to make his creations. These objects could be used to build as to destroy. Only the cabinetmaker has the knowledge to use these objects properly. The cabinetmaker has 2 projects. The first project is carried out the day the cabinetmaker decides to make a beautiful wooden horse for a 4-year-old girl. The second project is carried out the day the cabinetmaker decides to initiate (a young boy of 8 years old) to small works of cabinetmaking.

2) Here, I make the link between this little story and the modern model.

Steps	A useful little story	Link	The modern model
1	A cabinetmaker	→	God
2	very experienced works	→	The Absolute Knowledge
3	In his workshop	→	The Domain *
4	In his workshop, there are: planks, nails, glue, paint, stripper, hammer, knife, saw, emery paper. All these objects are necessary for the cabinetmaker to make his creations.	→	The Domain is filled with possibilities
5	These objects could be used to build as to destroy.	→	To do good or evil
6	Only the cabinetmaker has the knowledge to use these objects properly.	→	Only the Absolute Knowledge gives the ability to make the difference between good and evil
7	The cabinetmaker has 2 projects.	→	God created 2 worlds
8	The first project is carried out the day the cabinetmaker decides to make a beautiful wooden horse for a 4-year-old girl.	→	The Heaven with angels
9	The second project is carried out the day the cabinetmaker decides to initiate (a young boy of 8 years old) to small works of cabinetmaking.	→	A human being who can become a {God's child}

(*) The Domain is the **Workshop** of God. As the existence of the cabinetmaker is external to the workshop, as the existence of God is external to the Domain (his Workshop).

Here are the parts of the "pivot point" of the model:

A) Existence.

1) God is the **Absolute Source of Existence**, his Name is: "**I Am**." He is the **Creator**, external and independent of all worlds. He has the **Absolute Knowledge**. He is the only **Eternal Autonomous Individual**.

2) To create worlds, God uses his Absolute Knowledge and the Domain (his workshop).

3) In the Domain, there are all possibilities.

4) God created 2 worlds:

An autonomous world from God, it is the universe and Earth → see further in B).

A World United to God, it is the Heaven → see further in C).

B) An autonomous world from God.

It is an **autonomous** world, it is not united to God. It is the universe and Earth.

Without the unity of God, **the actions of good** as well as **the actions of evil** are available to the beings who live there.

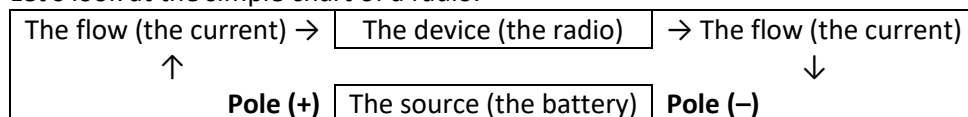
This world being autonomous, to function, it must have its own source.

This source is like a battery that is running out.

I give you below, the simple chart of a battery feeding a device (a radio).

A battery always has 2 poles, one **(+)** and one **(-)**. What passes between the 2 poles is **the flow**, also called the current.

Let's look at the simple chart of a radio.



Like a radio powered by a battery, the flow (electrical current) leaves the pole (+), passes through the device and returns to the pole (-) of the battery. The device (radio) operates as long as the flow (electrical current) passes through it.

If we focus on the radio.

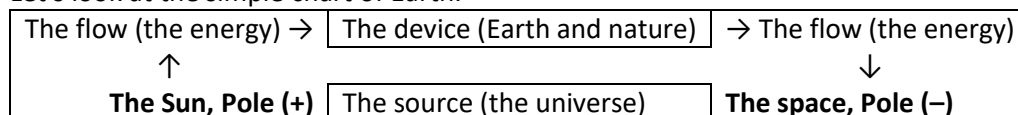
	For a radio
1) The source	The electric battery
2) The flow	The electric current
3) The body	The electric appliance

Now, let's make the comparison with our human world (the universe and Earth):

1) Let's look at the source.

Our universe is like a huge battery. The space is the pole (-) and the Big Bang is the pole (+).

Let's look at the simple chart of Earth.



2) Let's look at the device.

We can see the device as a whole → Earth and nature (plants, animals, humans, etc.).

Here, every being who lives there has a **biological body**.

3) Let's look at the flow.

All life on Earth is powered by the flow (the energy current) flowing between these 2 poles.

In the daytime, our Sun (**the pole +**) provides the flow (of light and heat) to warm up Earth and feed the photosynthesis of plants. In the night, the heat accumulated by Earth escapes into the space (**the pole -**). This lowers the temperature of the atmosphere.

4) Let's look at the notion of time.

This world which is ours is in the image of its source, a battery that is running out. It is then temporal and mortal.

5) If we focus on the human being.

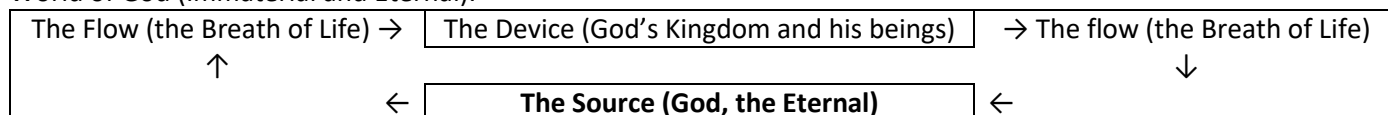
The comparative		
	For a radio	For a human being
1) The source	The electric battery	The nature on Earth is biological
2) The flow	The electric current	The food we eat is biological
3) The body	The electric appliance	The human body we have is biological

C) A World United to God.

It is the Kingdom of God.

Due to the Unity of God (without any evil), there are only **the possibilities of good** that are available to the beings who live there.

World of God (Immaterial and Eternal).



1) Let's look at the source.

To function, this World uses the Eternal Source of God.

This Source has no poles since it does not run out.

2) Let's look at the device.

We can see the device as a whole → the Kingdom of God and his beings.

We know that the Kingdom of God is Immaterial.

Here, every being who lives there has a **spiritual body** like the angels or the {God's children}. See article |30-F|.

3) Let's look at the flow.

The Appliance (the Kingdom of God and its beings) functions, for it is traversed by the Flow (the Breath of Life of God).

I am reminding you of the "Vision of the chariot of Yahweh" of article |22-B|.

OT	Ezekiel	1,12	And each (1) went straight forward; wherever the spirit (2) was about to go, they would go, without (3) turning as they went.

(1) These are the spiritual beings that the prophet Ezekiel saw in his Vision.

(2) Here, the word spirit means: breath or wind. The spiritual beings were **propelled** by the power of God's Breath.

(3) Here, it is the perfect (community) harmony of the spiritual beings, they are assiduous.

4) Let's look at the notion of time.

This World is in the image of its Source. God is Timeless and Eternal.

5) Since there are no poles, we can simplify the chart like this.

World of God (Immaterial and Eternal)

The Kingdom of God and his spiritual beings
Union (Breath of Life)
Source (God, the Eternal)

6) If we focus on the spiritual beings in the Kingdom of God.

The comparative			
	For a radio	For a human being	For angels and {God's children}
1) The source	The electric battery	The nature on Earth is biological	God (the spiritual Source)
2) The flow	The electric current	The food is biological	The Holy Spirit (the spiritual Breath)
3) The body	The electric appliance	They each have a biological body	They each have a spiritual body

D) In a Creation.

The steps are:

1) To define the purpose of the Creation.
2) To create a world using the Domain.
3) To create living beings in this world.
4) In their world, all living beings are free to act. Here, it is the law of the freedom of living beings that begins.

(*) The Law of the freedom of living beings does not apply before step 4). First, a being **must exist** before he can make his choices.

God created 2 worlds for beings to live in: the **Heaven** and the **earth**.

The title (or name) of the (being) who lives there depends on the process that God uses to create him. There is the (angel) in Heaven. There is the (human being) on earth who can become {God's child}. We know that a painting and a sculpture are not made in the same way.

On earth, God created the human in his image.

E) God has all Power.

God is external to his worlds. For him, time does not exist. He can move from the (timeless) to the (temporal) in both directions. He can transform a temporal event (from a fixed date of history) into a timeless reality available forever (past, present, future). See article |34-A|.

|32-K| A simple and modern model

It is from the parts of the "pivot point" of article |32-J| that all the assembly of the bases of article |32-B| is done.

Let's go...

A) In the beginning (I Am).

God is the Existence, the Creator, the Absolute Knowledge, the Eternal, the Source.

God is the only Eternal Autonomous Individual. He defines himself with a Will, a Breath and a Word.

The Will is his interior. The Word is his exterior. The Breath is the link between his interior and his exterior.

God is (the I). He is called, "**I Am**."

In this sense, we can define:

- 1) The Real or the Body of God → **the Eternal Source**.
- 2) The Mind of God begins with his **Will** and is expressed externally by his **Word**.
- 3) By his Will, God brings out from his Eternal Source the Power of → his **Breath**.

Here is the chart:

GOD			
The Word Action	The Breath that transmits Strength and Life of	The Will the Eternal Source	the Mind the Real

Update of the chart of God of article |30-G|.

B) A 1st project of God, the other (the beings).

God (the I) is the Creator.

He plans to create the **other** to maintain a relationship.

To create his beings (angels), the Creator makes a 1st world (external to him).

Note:

Here, the word "**being**" has the meaning of a creature of God. It is important to understand that God is not a "being." God is the Creator of "beings." God is the Source, the Absolute, the Existence.

C) A 1st world (the Heaven).

This place is the world of Heaven (**or the Kingdom of God**). It is fed by God (the Eternal Source).

GOD			
The Word Action	The Breath that transmits Strength and Life of	The Will the Eternal Source	the Mind The Real
	↓ union ↓	Kingdom of God (or the Heaven)	

Subsequently, God gives birth to each of the angels in his Kingdom, by his Breath of Life.

Creation and union of angels in their world (the Heaven). Here, I give the simple representation for an individual (an angel).

GOD			
The Word Action	The Breath that transmits Strength and Life of	The Will the Eternal Source	the Mind The Real
	↓ union ↓	Kingdom of God (or the Heaven)	
1 individual (an angel)	consciousness or thought spiritual body		

In this world, the life of beings (having a spiritual body) is fed by the Breath of the Life of God (the Holy Spirit).

Each of the angels has an individual spiritual body with his own personality (his consciousness or his thought).

The angels are born in their world (the Heaven). Thereafter, they are all free to do whatever actions they want in their world. On the other hand, this world does not allow them to have the knowledge of evil.

Each of the individuals in the Heaven lives in perfect union with God.

D) A 2nd project of God, the other (the beings).

God (the I) is the Creator.

The objective of the 2nd project is very different. **God wants → (God's children).**

For that: it is necessary to create a 2nd world. Thereafter, it is necessary to give birth to beings (humans).

E) This 2nd project is more complex:

Who says child, also says parent.

A {God's child} is in the image → of God his Father.

This involves a lot:

1) God is an Autonomous Individual.

The human being must be an autonomous individual. To do this, the human being needs an autonomous world (not linked to God). The human being also needs an autonomous body (not linked to God). This world and this human body are then temporal and mortal.

2) God is a Parent.

The human being is educable and can also be a parent.

3) God has the Knowledge of the Domain.

The human being must also be aware of it. In order to learn, the human being receives from God a "domain" or a world (the universe and Earth) having all the possibilities.

Note on good and evil:

Good or evil **depends on what you do with the domain**. Example: the nuclear energy is very useful inside the Sun to warm Earth from its rays and to maintain the life. Here, God uses it to do good. On the other hand, the use of nuclear energy by humans on Earth causes cancer. Here, the human does not have the necessary knowledge then evil appears (it is inevitable). There are things necessary for the functioning of the universe which it would be good to leave them to the Creator.

4) Since eternity, God himself makes the choice of Good.

The human being who wants to become a {God's child} must make the same choice as his Father. For this, he must realize that he cannot direct his life alone on earth and that he needs God's help.

5) God is the only One Eternal.

Since the human being is now created in his world, he is subject to the law of the freedom of living beings. In order to become a {God's child}, a human being must choose to place his human life in the hand of his Father so that he gives him his Breath of Eternal Life (the Holy Spirit). Without this choice, God cannot make a (human being) his {child} to bring him into his Kingdom.

Note:

From these 5 points, we see that the human is in the image of God as written in article |32-H|. God, being Autonomous by his **Eternal Source**, he is the Eternal Divinity. Man, being autonomous by its **temporal source** (his biological body), he is a "small mortal divinity." Here, God gives the human being, the capacity to temporarily know good and evil.

OT	Genesis	3,3-5	but from the fruit of the tree which is in the middle of the garden, God has said, 'You shall not eat from it or touch it, or you will die.' "The serpent said to the woman, "You surely will not die! "For God knows that in the day you eat from it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil. "

Take a good look at what Jesus says:

NT	St-John	10,33-35	The Jews answered Him, "For a good work we do not stone You, but for blasphemy; and because You, being a man, make Yourself out <i>to be</i> God." Jesus answered them, "Has it not been written in your Law, 'I SAID (1), YOU ARE GODS '? "If he called them gods, to whom the word (2) of God came (and the Scripture cannot be broken), (3)

(1) Here, it is the Lord (God) speaking.

(2) Here, Jesus makes the hint that he is the Word of God addressed to "small mortal divinities," the humans.

(3) The footer of the Bible says that Jesus is playing a wordplay with the Scriptures of the law of the Pharisees. Except that the sentences of Jesus are also in perfect agreement with the model presented here.

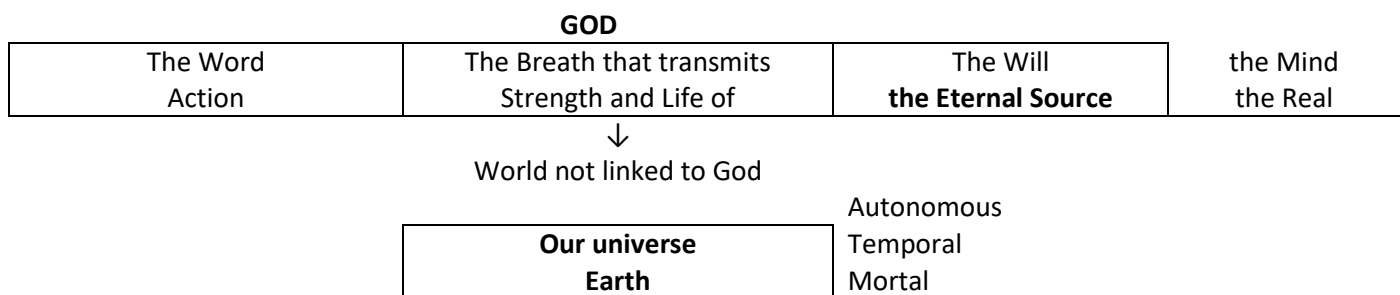
Note:

Man is a "small mortal divinity." This explains: his desire to know (science and technology), his achievements (machines and cities), and his idea of greatness (power and his empires).

F) A 2nd project, to create a world (the earth).

In order to accomplish all that this 2nd project entails, God makes our world.

Our world (the universe and Earth) is not fed by God (the Eternal). He is then autonomous, temporal and mortal.



Notes:

It is for this reason that one needs God's permission to "truly believe in him," see article 6-Q .
Our world contains 2 poles. That is why our world is temporal and mortal, it works like a battery. This is also why in physics, we discovered the Big Bang and entropy, see chapter 5 . It is for this reason that in psychology, we have discovered the (life drive) and the (death drive), see chapter 16 .
I wondered for a long time, why our universe is so big? We have seen in chapter 5 that if the universe still exists after 14 billion years, it is because its expansion was made with a very high precision (no faster, no less quickly). So, the immensity of the universe has a link with its duration. In physics, we know that the more mass a system has, the more stable it is. On Earth, it is the large mass of oceans that stabilizes the temperature of the atmosphere. It is the large mass of vegetation that stabilizes the balance of oxygen and humidity in the atmosphere. By comparison, it is the great mass of the universe which makes it possible to stabilize its duration or to stabilize time.
I asked myself the following question for a long time. Since the universe is so big, why life was only found on our planet Earth? In reality, there is no connection between the two. The universe is so big to ensure the duration and stability of our world. Life has only been found on Earth, because God has only one project of autonomous life, our own. God's plan is not to create autonomous worlds for a very long time, because evil is inevitable and God is Holy (without any evil). No, the idea is to have a small " garden " to pick his {children} for his House. His efforts to cultivate do not go further. God is ready to suffer from all the evil that humans do in order to obtain his {children}. The other human beings who do not choose God have as their reward, only the mortal garden of Earth, and they remain there.

Moreover, the functioning of the universe and nature on Earth is like a gigantic clock. We know very well that there is no harm (evil) in a clock! The only harm we can get is if we stick our fingers in the gears of the clock, but it is up to us not to do it! For example, a crocodile is handy for cleaning a pond, but do not go near it, because it always takes its work seriously and can even "clean" you too!

Thereafter, God creates an autonomous (mortal) being able to become a {God's child}, it is the human being.

The human being

word to act	breathing strength (power)	will biological body	the mind the real

The human is in the image of God. Update of the chart (human being) of article |30-G|.

The human being is a "small mortal divinity" able to make the choice to become → a {God's child} or not.

The human being is born in his world (the earth). The human being is free to do whatever actions he wants. This world allows the human being to have the knowledge of good or evil in the Image of God.

G) God educates the human.

The human being learns from his own experiences to obtain knowledge. God forgives human ignorance.

God educates the human being through his Word → the patriarchs, the Law of Moses and the prophets.

God warns the human being of the consequences of not choosing **the actions of good**, but those of evil in life. Choosing **the actions of evil** will lead the human being to death. A simple example is our pollution that is killing life on Earth.

God (a Father) also educates in a natural way, because the human being can have children. The human being is in the image of the creative will of life and relationship of his Creator (God). Being a child is a good way to learn. Becoming a parent is also another good way to learn.

Now, the educated human being can make a choice of life (**between good and evil**).

H) The Incarnation of the Word of God (Jesus) on earth.

So far, we have talked about God as:

GOD

The Word Action	The Breath that transmits Strength and Life of	The Will the Eternal Source

Now, God sends his Word to earth to announce his Plan of Eternal Life for every person who wants to become a {God's child}.

Note:

No one is obliged to become a {God's child}. It is through personal choice and effort that one obtains this great reward from God, the Eternal Life. **This person must seek truth and good. He must realize that without the presence of God at his side to guide him, his life does not make sense.**

To send His Word to earth, God must detach his Word from him. The Word is then "**UNGlorified**." This brings the Word of the timeless (Eternal) condition to the temporal condition, Jesus.

For his mission, the Word needs 2 bodies:

1) A human body to communicate with humans.

2) A Spiritual Body to communicate with the Will (of the Father) through the Union of the Breath (the Holy Spirit).

Jesus does his mission on earth.

Here is the updated chart of the Incarnation of the Son of article |30-G|.

	Exterior	Union	Interior	
World of God	→	↓ Holy Spirit	Father	the Mind
In Heaven			the Eternal Source	The Real
On earth	The Son of-	↓	-man	the mind
World of humans	Spiritual Body	← →	human body	the real
	His hidden nature	Union	His nature seen	

Note:

In the mission of Jesus, since time appears, the chronology also appears hence the Father and the Son. The **Will** bears the name of → Father. The **Word** bears the name of → Son.

During his mission on earth, the Word is called the **Son of man** (Jesus Christ).

Son of man → to indicate that he is associated with God the **Father**.

Son of man → to indicate that he is associated with the **human being**, because he has a human body.

Jesus is the **firstborn** of the children of God.

NT	Epistle of St-Paul to the Colossians	1,15	He (Jesus Christ) is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of all creation.

I) The end of the mission of Jesus.

Jesus gave his teachings to his apostles for 3 years. Jesus was put to death, then he Resurrected on the third day. Afterwards, on the 40th day, he experienced his Ascension and Glorification.

The **Glorification** makes the Son of man (temporal) pass on to the **Son of God** (the Eternal, the Timeless). See article |34-A|.

He is called the Only Son of God. This time, because he is the **First** child of God.

He is called the Only Son of God. This is because the Holy Trinity of God has only one **Word**.

Here is the new chart of the Holy Trinity (God) of article |30-G|.

GOD, an Individual in 3 Persons			
External	Union	Internal	
The Son (the Word) Glorious Body (1)	The Holy Spirit who transmits Strength and Life of	The Father (the Will) The Eternal Source	the Mind the Real

(1) The Glorious Body is the "divine Reward" that the Father gave to his Son in exchange for his mission on earth, which ended in the injustice of his death on the cross whereas he did not commit any evil. God does not punish the wicked ones (the executioners of Jesus), but he rewards the good one (Jesus).

J) The day of Pentecost of the apostles.

The 50th day after Christ's Resurrection, this is the coming of the day of Pentecost. It is the {gift of the Holy Spirit} or the {birth of the Spirit}.

Here is the chart of article |30-G|.

GOD, an Individual in 3 Persons				
1 individual who is a {God's child}				
{spiritual body} ←	consciousness human body	←	Son (the Word) Glorious Body	Holy Spirit who transmits ← The Breath
				Father (the Will) The Eternal Source

Glorious Body = (Spiritual Body/Resurrected human body) Glorified by the Father.

During the {birth of the Spirit}, we have the intense sensation of the **Glorious Breath** of the **Eternal**.

K) The Last Judgment.

NT	St-John	5,26-27	"For just as the Father has life in Himself, even so He gave to the Son also to have life in Himself; and He gave Him authority to execute judgment (1), because He is <i>the</i> Son of Man.

(1) Here, it is the Son who disposes of the Breath of Eternal Life for the Last Judgment of the human being.

The free choice to unite with God on earth allows the {birth of the Spirit}. A {God's child} then receives his {spiritual body} fit for the Kingdom of God. It is in this way that the Last Judgment takes place, which belongs only to the Son. The Last Judgment has always been on earth now or (at the present time).

A {God's child} is a collaborator in the Plan of Life of God on earth, **that is why this book...**

For the righteous man (patriarchs and prophets) who died before the day of Pentecost, see article |34-A|.

L) At death.

The human body of the {God's child} dies in the ground, but his {spiritual body} is always united by the Holy Spirit through the Glorious Body of the Son (for eternity). His {spiritual body} is the new support of his consciousness.

On the other hand, for humans who do not have their {spiritual body}, they cannot go to the Kingdom of God. They simply die in the ground like everything that dies here: trees, plants, animals, and so on. There is no suffering after human death, because the consciousness of the human being is extinguished with his biological body.

Here, the righteousness of God is fulfilled for those who have chosen good, because they obtain a gift (the Eternal Life) in the Kingdom of the Father. For the others, they have already had their inheritance on earth.

In the case of near-death experiences (NDE).

Now, for the person who had a **near-death experience without first having had his {birth of the Spirit}** and who spoke with Jesus. I am 100% convinced that the experience is true and I do not doubt it for a second. On the other hand, it was Jesus who made this message directly into the brain of the person on earth during this tragic event to give him an ultimate gift in order to discover him and take his Way to the {birth of the Spirit}. This message may even have seemed to last for days, because God is Timeless. Listening carefully to many testimonies, I noticed that most people who saw Jesus unfortunately could not see much more. Why? In the same way that it is not possible to walk on earth without having a human body, in the same way it is not possible to go into a spiritual World without having a {spiritual body}. Even the Son of God had to incarnate himself humanly (Jesus) to come to walk on earth with us. So, there are no special privileges for anyone.

M) Union of the {God's children} in the Kingdom.

1) Here is the chart of article |30-G|.

1 individual, a {God's child}		GOD, an Individual in 3 Persons		
consciousness {spiritual body}	union	Son (the Word) Glorious Body	Holy Spirit who transmits Strength and Life	Father (the Will) the Eternal Source

Each of the individuals in the Kingdom of God lives in **union** with God who is the Eternal Source.

N) Jesus says that in the Kingdom of the Father, we will be like angels.

1 individual, a {God's child}		GOD, an Individual in 3 Persons		
consciousness {spiritual body}	union (2)	Son (the Word) Glorious Body	Holy Spirit who transmits Strength and Life	Father (the Will) the Eternal Source
The Kingdom of God (Heaven)			union (1)	1 individual (angel)
			consciousness spiritual body	

The angel is the spiritual being of the 1st Creation. The {God's child} is the spiritual being of the 2nd Creation of which the Son is the Firstborn.

The angels are united by the Holy Spirit directly (1) to the Father.

The {God's children} are united by the Holy Spirit to the Father through (2) his Son.

NT	St-John	5,26	As the Father indeed disposes of life (1), so did he give the Son to dispose of life (2). (*)

(*) It is the English translation, word for word, from the Jerusalem Bible (1956, Editions du Cerf).

(1) Here we can see, among other things, the union of Life for angels.

(2) Here, it is the union of Life for the {God's children}.

O) The end of the world.

Our universe Earth	Autonomous
	Temporal
	Mortal

Scientifically, we now know that humans will be responsible (the author) for their own extinction due to pollution.

So, God will not have to come on earth and finish anything, we take care of it ourselves...

Finally, God does not need to lock up the devil, because he does not exist.

↑ (Essential articles)	They are necessary for understanding the next chapter.
↓ (Optional articles)	They give additional information.

| 32-L | An easy end to predict...

A) How will humanity end?

We know that humans quickly break nature. Ecologists talk about human extinction around the year 2100. What is most likely is that it will be done by (the too great) reduction of the capacity of the human to reproduce due to the absorption of pollutants in his organism. From the year 1900 to the year 2000 (in only 100 years), biologists estimate that the human remains to him only 10% of his capacity to reproduce that he had at the origin. Biologists estimate that at 1% of this original reproductive capacity, humans will be at the critical point of infertility expected around the year 2100.

Psychologists say that the problem of current pollution is primarily a problem of human thought. Human thought is made to react to a (serious problem) that he sees immediately there and not to (a serious problem) that will be there in 100 years! So, we sink little by little, we get used as we say...

B) What will happen to Earth when the human is gone?

The life that will remain on Earth (plants, animals, etc.) will continue to work without humans until our Sun extinguishes in about 5 billion years.

C) What will happen to the universe?

Because of the losses (the 2nd law of thermodynamics), our universe is mortal. Scientifically, we know with confidence that it will end one day in billions of years in a cold mass at absolute zero.

| 32-M | End of book # 11

In this book # 11, you have covered the first 32 chapters of the work, which contains 35 chapters.

In closing, I give you an important excerpt from chapter | 28 | below...

Excerpt (a religion or a relationship)

What Jesus asks is much more than a religion. A religion, it is human... with objects and rituals. Jesus wants a real **relationship** already on earth with you. Following Jesus is a way of living of every day. It is deciding to be part of his big family right now.

The Way of Christ is difficult. Why? It is because the evil that humans do is very present and affects everyone. So, you have a choice to make. Are you going to become a **child of light** or of darkness? For children of darkness, why do you want to go to Heaven? Why go to a place without evil if you do not already want to work in this direction on earth? Without an effort and an ardent desire, no one goes to Heaven!

You tell yourself that the steps of the (birth of water) toward the {birth of the Spirit} are not... nothing. You are right! But Eternal Life is not either... nothing! To have Eternal Life is a choice, it is a Reward.

Unfortunately, many Christians have been put to sleep by some Christian movements as I was myself. Yes, it is very insecure to seek the truth. On the other hand, with God, lies do not bring anyone anywhere!

In this book, I told you the truth. It is up to you to make your decision. The message that the Lord has asked me to do is in your hands...

|32-N| Thanks to everyone!

It is a real privilege to have participated in this book. With the Lord, a little always does a lot!

I hope this book inspired you in order to go further in looking for our Creator!

He really exists and he is waiting for you!

You can continue to read this free work on the author's website:

<https://www.dominicpsimon.com>

(English) other books by the same author

Digital repository: Bibliothèque et Archives nationales du Québec
Title of the work:
The Holy Spirit is a real manifestation in you; without it, no Heaven!
Title of the book:
Earth is God's garden of culture in order to get his children
Format: Printable PDF
ISBN : 978-2-924881-48-4
Format : EPUB
ISBN : 978-2-924881-49-1
Availability: consultation of these books is free

(Français) autres livres du même auteur

Dépôt numérique : Bibliothèque et Archives nationales du Québec
Titre de l'œuvre :
L'Esprit-Saint est une manifestation réelle en toi, sans elle pas de Ciel !
Titre du livre :
La terre est le jardin de culture de Dieu afin d'obtenir ses enfants
Format : PDF imprimable
ISBN : 978-2-924881-22-4
Format : EPUB
ISBN : 978-2-924881-23-1
Disponibilité: la consultation de ces livres est libre